



AMERICAN LIBRARY
USIS
NEW DELHI.



America's Historylands

AMERICAN LIBRARY
24, Curzon Road
NEW DELHI.

America's

PREPARED BY THE
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC BOOK SERVICE
MERLE SEVERY, CHIEF

FOREWORD BY
MELVILLE BELL GROSVENOR
President and Editor, National Geographic Society

INTRODUCTION BY
CONRAD L. WIRTH
Director, National Park Service

KEYNOTE CHAPTER BY
CARL SANDBURG
Pulitzer Prize-winning poet and historian,
and world-renowned biographer of Abraham Lincoln

SECTIONS INTRODUCED BY

JOHN BAKELESS
Author of *The Eyes of Discovery*;
Background to Glory; *Lewis and Clark*;
Partners in Discovery

LOUIS B. WRIGHT
Director, Folger Shakespeare Library;
author of *The Atlantic Frontier*;
The Cultural Life of the American Colonies

DONALD BARR CHIDSEY
Author of *July 4, 1776*; *Valley Forge*;
The Battle of New Orleans;
The Gentleman from New York

JOHN ANTHONY CARUSO
Assoc. Professor of History, West Virginia
University; author of *The Appalachian
Frontier*, *The Great Lakes Frontier*

DAVID LAVENDER
Author of *Land of Giants*; *Trail to
Santa Fe*; *The Big Divide*;
Bent's Fort; *One Man's West*

EARL SCHENCK MIERS
Author of *The American Civil War*;
The Great Rebellion; *The Web of Victory*;
The General Who Marched to Hell

WILLIAM C. EVERHART
Chief Park Historian
Jefferson National Expansion Memorial
St. Louis, Missouri

STEWART H. HOLBROOK
Author of *The Age of the Moguls*; *Dreamers
of the American Dream*; *Holy Old Mackinaw*;
The Story of American Railroads

FRANK FREIDEL
Professor of History, Harvard University;
author of *The Splendid Little War*; *Franklin D.
Roosevelt*; *America in the Twentieth Century*

Introduction

A VIGOROUS AND GROWING NATION such as ours must preserve its historic heritage and pass it on to succeeding generations. This heritage tells the story of America's growth, trials, accomplishments, and goals. It provides the key to understanding the present and planning wisely for the future. How well we safeguard and interpret this priceless legacy will determine the kind of nation we shall be tomorrow.

Interest in the American story is surging—we see this in the millions of our citizens who visit historic places all over the land. Beginning with passage of the Antiquities Act in 1906, the federal government has become the custodian of many of these sites. Now the National Park System includes not only Jamestown and Independence Hall but a host of places as varied as the White House in Washington; Hopewell Village, an early ironmaking center in Pennsylvania; and Fort Union, a cavalry post on the Santa Fe Trail.

Today the National Park Service continues to survey historic areas and buildings to select those that best represent the many-sided story of our nation. We register these as National Historic Landmarks to encourage their preservation and bring them to the attention of the American people. Many landmarks will remain in private hands—and appropriately so. Individuals and associations were preserving historic sites long before the federal government entered the field. They continue to administer many of the places you will visit in this book.

Mount Vernon, the home of George Washington, was purchased years ago by the Mount Vernon Ladies Association, which still maintains it. The Thomas Jefferson Memorial Foundation is guardian of Monticello. Colonial Williamsburg has been restored in all its glory through an organization founded and financed by John D. Rockefeller, Jr.

Utah, the Southern Pacific Railroad, and the Golden Spike Association have held in safekeeping the spot where transcontinental rails met in the desert west of Salt Lake City. The Edison Laboratory in West Orange, New Jersey, was preserved by the Edison family until they transferred it to the National Park Service. Texas joins with the Roman Catholic Church in supporting San José Mission in San Antonio. And the National Trust for Historic Preservation, composed of historical groups throughout the country, uses private funds to secure for the American people many of our treasured sites and keepsakes.

The representative landmarks covered in this book tell the story not just of statesmen and military heroes. Here you will find the blacksmith, farmer, merchant, frontier woman. *America's Historylands* has been organized to show how our people lived and struggled, and to make clear the meaning of what they did.

Independence Hall, home of the Liberty Bell and birthplace of the United States, has witnessed more than 225 Philadelphia winters. The National Park Service, the State of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, and private organizations joined hands to create Independence National Historical Park and restore its historic buildings.

To follow a strictly chronological approach—lumping together unrelated events just because they happened at the same time—would have broken the thread of our story. Let me illustrate the problem: The Spanish were founding Santa Fe in New Mexico at the same time that Jamestown's settlers were starving in Virginia. And Russians were operating a trading post near San Francisco while Baltimore gunners in Fort McHenry were holding off a British fleet in the War of 1812.

A strictly regional approach would place in the same section events far removed in time. Sir Walter Raleigh's "Lost Colony" on Roanoke and the Wright brothers' flight at Kitty Hawk are six miles—and 316 years—apart.

America's Historylands is organized, instead, around major themes. We follow explorers and colonists as they secure footholds on a virgin continent. We trace the westering surge of our people as they pierce the Appalachian barrier, cross the Mississippi, span the continent from sea to sea, and always we picture the land

America's story begins with lonely ships, freighted with dreams, sailing an empty sea.

MAYFLOWER II BY BILL HADDON, PIX



177 *The Revolution*

Ride with Boston's Paul Revere. Fight at Lexington, Concord, Bunker Hill, through New York and New Jersey. Hear the Liberty Bell ring in Philadelphia. Win freedom at Valley Forge, Saratoga, and Yorktown. Visit Washington at Mount Vernon, Jefferson at Monticello.

265 *The Surge of Freedom*

Head west over Dan Boone's Wilderness Road, the Erie and C & O canals to the Northwest Territory. Sample homespun Sturbridge and Cooperstown, salty Nantucket and Mystic. Defend Old Glory at Fort McHenry and New Orleans. Ride a paddle-wheeler to Tom Sawyer's town.

341 *Manifest Destiny*

Follow Lewis and Clark up the Missouri. Blaze fur trails with the mountain men. Board a wagon train bound for Oregon or Salt Lake's Promised Land. Behold our Spanish heritage in Santa Fe, the California missions, and the Alamo as we expand from "sea to shining sea."

392 *The House Divided*

Slave or free? This issue splits the nation. In the North hear factories hum, school children chant, abolitionists thunder. In the South see elegant Natchez, symbol of King Cotton. Hark to John Brown at Harpers Ferry, shellfire at Fort Sumter, the sound of marching feet.

425 *The Great American War*

Bull Run turns glory to gore. Campaign with Lee to Antietam, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg. Sweep the rivers with Grant past Shiloh to Vicksburg. Battle at Chickamauga, Chattanooga, march on Atlanta, sail with Farragut. After Appomattox, review the life of Lincoln.

481 *The Lusty West*

Discover gold at Sutter's Mill, rush to pulsing 'Frisco, Tombstone, Deadwood, to Comstock riches and Colorado boom towns. Ride with Wells Fargo, the Pony Express. Trail bawling longhorns to Dodge City, where six-guns roar. Sweat with the sodbusters. Fight Indians with Custer.

517 *The Growing Giant*

Flex steel muscles and fell forests from Maine to California. Strike oil at Titusville, span the nation with rails, drive a golden spike at Promontory. At the Statue of Liberty welcome immigrants streaming in to man our industries. Visit millionaires at Newport and San Simeon.

543 *New Frontiers*

Trek to the Klondike and Sitka, sail to the Hawaii of Captain Cook, King Kamehameha, and Pearl Harbor. Invent with Edison and Bell, tour Ford's Greenfield Village. Fly with the Wright brothers at Kitty Hawk, unlock the atom at Oak Ridge. Blast off into the future at Cape Canaveral.

569 INDEX OF PLACES, PEOPLE, AND EVENTS



FREEDOM'S CAPITAL

*Pilgrims to Washington
learn anew the
meaning of America*

SIXTY-FOUR YEARS AGO I rode into Washington, D. C. There were 1,200 other men on the train, the Sixth Illinois Volunteers, a militia regiment. We slept on the ground that night in nearby Falls Church, Virginia, and the next day were drilling in military formations. The U. S. battleship *Maine* had blown up in Cuba. The Spanish-American War had begun. We didn't know then we would be the first troops to land on Puerto Rico.

In the same blue uniform that the Union armies wore in the 1860's I went to Washington and saw that city with the zest, the wonder, the reverence of the boy who for years had read about the Capitol, about the White House, about the Washington Monument and the Potomac River.

I had no slightest expectation that a time would come when I would be the first private citizen requested to deliver an address to a joint session of Congress. The occasion was the 150th anniversary of the birth of Abraham Lincoln.

Two days later, on the invitation of the Lincoln Group of the District of Columbia, I went to the Gettysburg Battlefield, and from a wooden platform located where Lincoln had stood made an address that ended with Lincoln's words: . . . we can not dedicate, we can not consecrate, we can

"It was a great day in American history . . . sunset and dawn, moonrise and noon sun, dry leaves in an autumn wind and springtime blossoms, dying time and birthing hour—and birthing hour." With these words Carl Sandburg, the most eloquent spokesman for democracy in America today, commemorated the 100th anniversary of the inauguration of Abraham Lincoln.

The Lincoln Memorial and other landmarks of liberty in Washington, D. C., portrayed on the following pages symbolize the nation's march toward freedom.

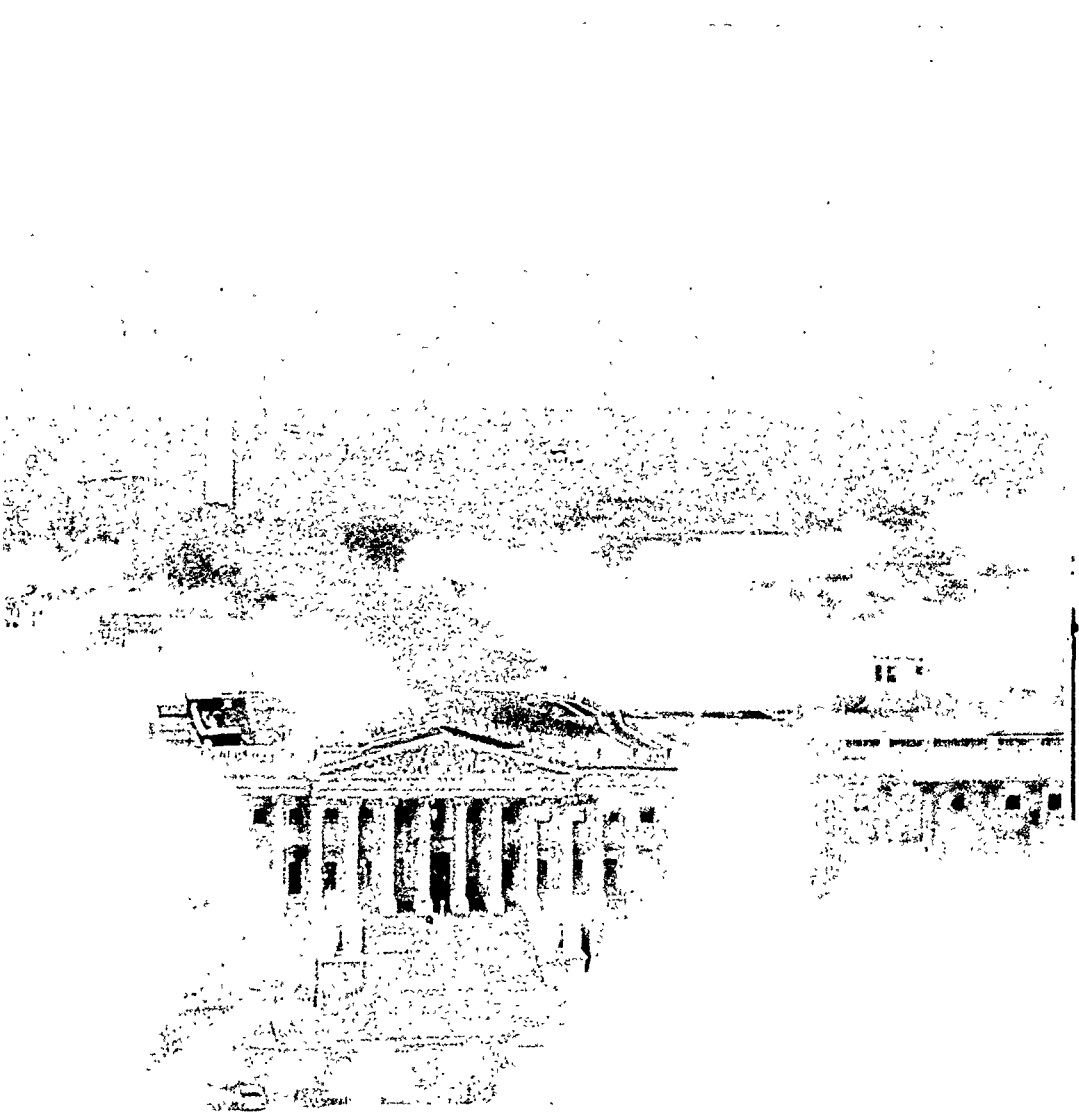
FREEDOM'S CAPITAL

not hallow this ground. The brave men living and dead who struggled here have consecrated it far above our poor power to add or detract. . . .

Again I never expected until it came to happen that on March 4, 1961, I would speak to a crowd of some 20,000 from the east front of the United States Capitol. Speaking from the wooden platform in replica where Lincoln had stood for his inaugural exactly 100 years before, I looked into the faces of America—men, women, and children—and told them that tomorrow belongs to the children.

There are careless generations who drift, dawdle, decay. Still others leave tall landmarks of liberty, of discovery, invention, and culture. Youth now living and youth as yet unborn hold the seeds and secrets of the folds to be unfolded in the shapes to come. The mystery of justice between man and man, nation and nation,

Beacon of liberty, the United States Capitol dominates the Washington skyline. Freedom sculptured in bronze crowns the great dome, 287 feet above the plaza. Twenty-three Presi-





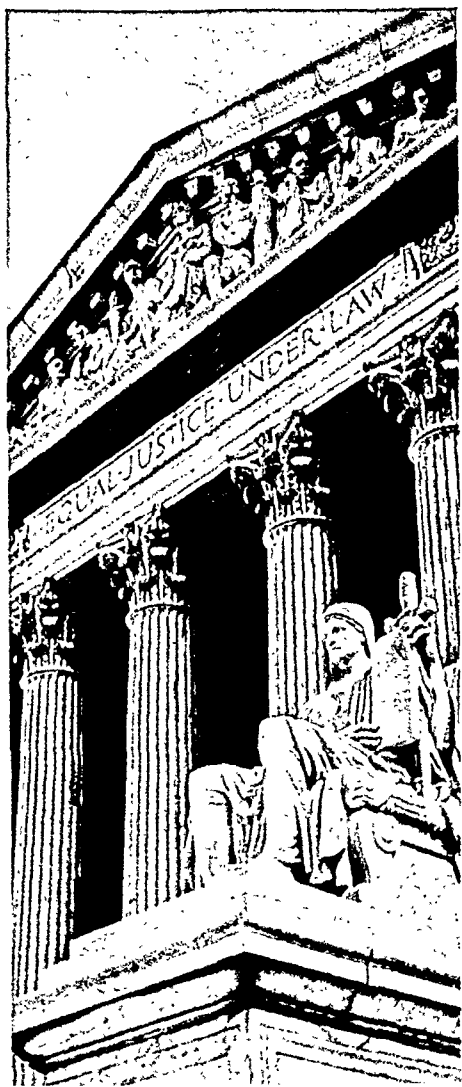
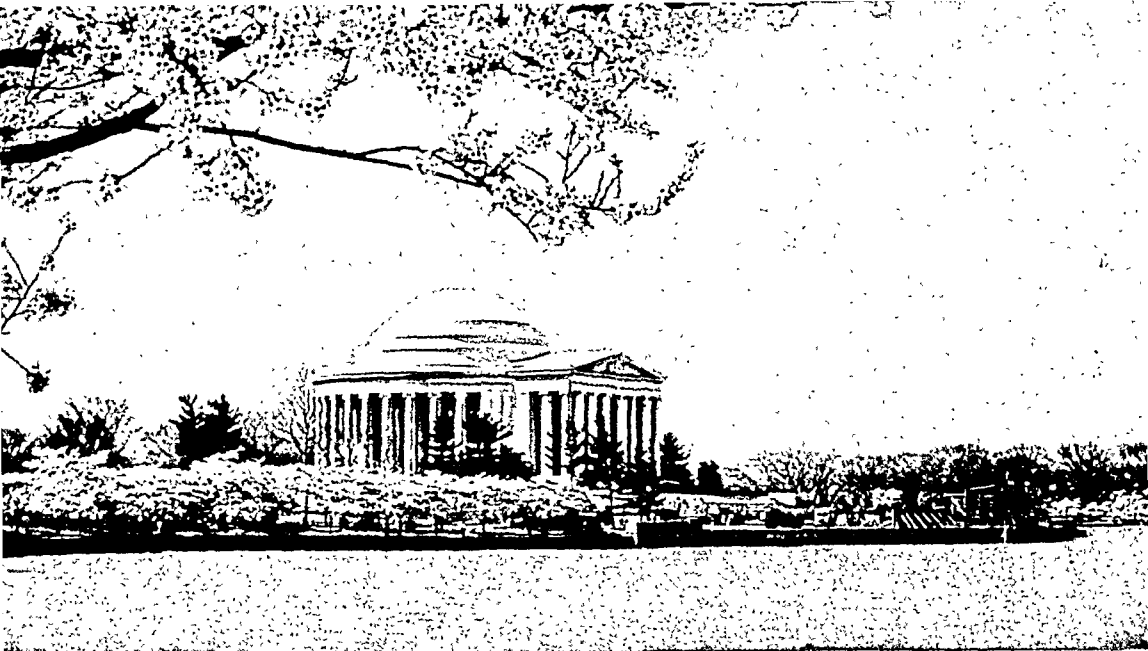
JOHN E. FLETCHER NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

in 1952. The House Chamber was jammed again when Carl Sandburg became the first private citizen to address a joint session. Passes enable visitors to watch Congress in action.

Gods nostrils." Freedom of the mind, the right to think and to speak your thoughts so long as it does no harm to the rights and privileges of fellow citizens—this freedom, this liberty, is a theme weaving through the chapters of this book. Here are scenes which hold something of the aura of that mystic, hazardous, and almost indefinable thing called the American Dream. The ghosts of Roger Williams and Ben Franklin, of Thomas Jefferson and Abraham Lincoln, of Emerson, Thoreau, Walt Whitman, and Elijah Lovejoy—they are here in many pages.

There has been in the past and there can be seen in our present time a thing not easy to look at, termed "slavery of the mind." Abraham Lincoln referred to it in a





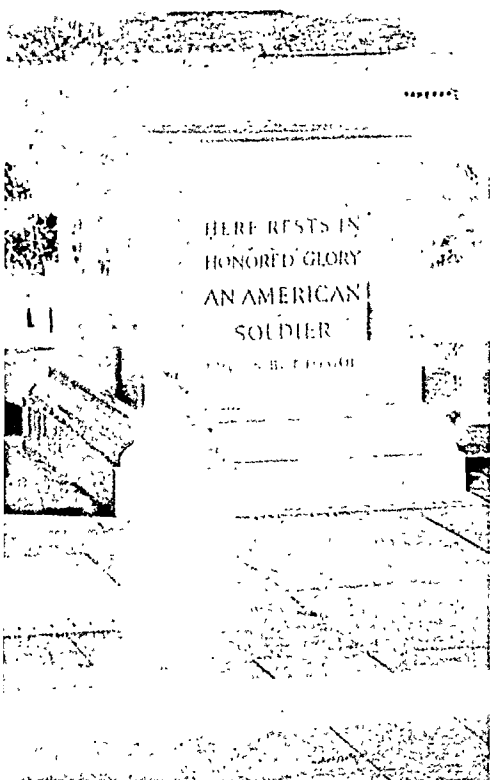
Springtime in Washington:

A haze of cherry blossoms. Giggling school children hushed by the simple dignity of the Jefferson Memorial.

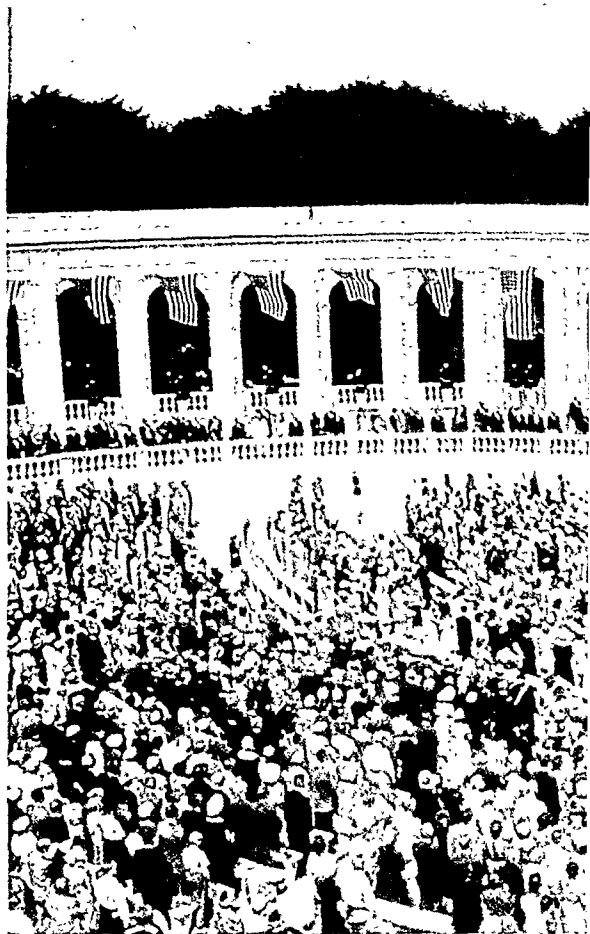
An elderly couple strolling marble halls of the Supreme Court building where even whispers echo. The Smithsonian Institution, beloved by generations, where boys by the busload crane at "The Spirit of St. Louis," and girls cluster around costumed First Ladies.

Families posing in front of the White House; and inside a long, shuffling file awed by glittering rooms of state where Lincoln paced, perhaps, in carpet slippers. A retired rancher, straightening as the Marine Band passes with a tingling Sousa march. Monuments, museums, vistas of green, memories of how the nation began, reminders of what it means today. All this is Washington.

VERLE SEVERY AND (ABOVE) B. ANTHONY STEWART,
BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF
CENTER: WILLIAM W. CAMPBELL III



Fallen heroes receive a nation's reverent tribute in the Amphitheater of Arlington National Cemetery. A sentry keeps vigil over the Unknowns of three wars, who rest here across the serene Potomac from Washington.



Or again, with an authentic coloration that marks a distinctive period piece, we have the hymn verse:

*We are living, we are dwelling,
In a grand and awful time,
In an age on ages telling,
To be living is sublime.*

Always in the American story has been the movement out of the familiar and known into the Unknown. With each new test and each new time, it cost, and there were those prepared to pay the cost. To the west of the gaunt tragedies of Plymouth and Jamestown there was the Unknown of a vast continent of unmapped wilderness. At Philadelphia in the writing of the Declaration and later in the cold and filth of Valley Forge, there was to the west beyond the Alleghenies the Unknown again, no precedents or forerunners to guide. Later in the trials of crossing the Great Plains and pioneering the West Coast and in the bloody sectional struggle that hammered national union into a finality, there was ever the Unknown.

In a certain letter of Lincoln may be seen a sentence strange with a bittersweet

The New Land

THREE ANCHORS SPLASHED, the cables of three ships tightened. Christopher Columbus had arrived.

His sailors sniffed appreciatively. A land breeze after a long voyage is always welcome; but these winds of the New World bore the fragrance of tropical flowers—much the same fragrance that to this day rolls out to sea in the lee of San Salvador and other West Indies isles.

In the first 300 years after the discovery of America, one traveler after another commented on the fragrance that greeted sailors as they approached the coast. "The land is smelt before it is seen," wrote an early Dutch voyager. In a poem "To the Virginia Voyage," Shakespeare's contemporary Michael Drayton mentions "the luscious smell of that delicious land." Probably Drayton was remembering what Capt. John Smith had said of the sweet odors drifting out to sea at Dominica in the West Indies.

A Quaker sea captain scented pines while still 80 leagues offshore. And on Manhattan Island a Flemish missionary "sometimes encountered such a sweet smell that we stood still, because we did not know what we were meeting."

Columbus always gets (and probably deserves) credit for discovering America.

But of course the Indians or their Mongoloid ancestors arrived thousands of years before him. They crossed Bering Strait, moved down the Alaskan coast, then spread, over the centuries, southward to Patagonia and eastward to the Atlantic. Legends hint at Chinese junks being blown across the Pacific in the third century B.C. and the fifth century A.D. Their sailors may have touched the coast and returned with news of their discovery, but nothing came of it. Norsemen reached the Atlantic coast of America in the 11th century, made a settlement, fought the "skraelings" (probably Indians, but possibly Eskimos), and sailed away.

NONE OF THESE early voyagers ever learned much about the strange new land to which he had come. Columbus himself was convinced he had found a new sea route to Asia, a continent white men had known for centuries. In 1492 Columbus and his sailors had not yet seen either the North or South American mainlands. And in all four of his voyages Columbus glimpsed only a little of continental North America. But the few islands the discoverers did visit on their first voyage were marvelous enough—extraordinary places filled with lush tropical trees and plants, strange animal life, and stranger



ENGRAVING BY THEODORE DE BRY, 1594, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

Columbus, bearing royal letters to the Grand Khan of Cathay, lands on Hispaniola in 1492.


people of a queer copper color. No European had ever beheld Asiatics quite like these. Yet no one at first thought them anything but "Indians"—one or another of the innumerable races of India or the East Indies.

Columbus's discoveries inspired a generation of explorers who crossed the Atlantic and learned that he was wrong: This was not Asia, but a wild and impenetrable barrier to it. John Cabot, a Venetian backed by English merchants, scouted Nova Scotia and Newfoundland in 1497. A Portuguese, Gaspar Corte Real, followed in his wake in 1501, and Cabot's son Sebastian coasted all the way from Hudson Strait to Delaware. Yet it awaited Amerigo Vespucci, the Florentine who traced South America's shoreline, to theorize that this was a major land mass. A New World he called it, and by a cartographer's error, his name was attached to it—an honor that perhaps he merited, after all.

In 1524 another Florentine, Giovanni da Verrazano, probed most of the east coast of what is now the United States, sailing right into New York Harbor. Yet Verrazano learned little about the shore he cruised past. It would take a hundred years after Columbus before white men gained any clear idea of what North America's east coast was really like.

Many of these explorers, sons of the Renaissance yet haunted by ghosts of the Middle Ages, expected an Eden gleaming with treasure and peopled by plumed knights, beautiful Amazons, mermaids, and half-human beasts like Shakespeare's Caliban. Dragons would surely roam the forests, and sea monsters thrash offshore. It took a while for eyes so dazzled by dreams to see the richness of reality.

As passing centuries proved, the forests, plains, and abundant fertility of the land meant enormous wealth to America. But it was not at all the kind of wealth the first explorers sought. They came for spices and gold. Modern America produces no spices worth mentioning, and though great gold deposits cropped up in the 19th century, they eluded those early seekers. Gold-hungry Spaniards occupied California for generations without realizing that nuggets lay right under their noses in the sands of streams.

 LITTERING HOPES of gold mines and jeweled cities spurred two remarkable Spanish expeditions into the interior (see historical map in back of book). Cortés had found a great city and abundant riches in Mexico, so it seemed obvious to his men that there must be more of the same.

Rumor magnified the Southwest's Indian pueblos into the fabled "Seven Cities of Cíbola." In 1540 Coronado and his gaudy party trudged across miles of desert and plain, moving north and east of Sonora in Mexico, exploring as far as central Kansas, but they searched in vain.

Hernando de Soto had served with Pizarro in Peru and seen the wealth of the Incas. He led a strong force, decked in bright armor, north and west from Florida to find gold. His men became mired in swamps, stifled in the heat, but stumbled on into the Carolinas, then across the Appalachians to Tennessee and south again into Alabama and Georgia. They butchered Indians who stood in their way; they starved and sickened; their armor rusted and their clothes turned to rags. They crossed the Mississippi, reaching Arkansas and Texas on their profitless quest.

Once De Soto's men gaped excitedly at some glistening green objects in an Indian's tomb. Emeralds? No, just fragments of glass left by other Spaniards a few years earlier. They collected fresh-water mussel pearls from Indians. Perhaps De Soto was fortunate to die without learning that these, too, were worthless.

Such mistakes continued. Early Virginians sent back to England two shiploads of what seemed gold ore. It turned out to be only "gilded dirt"—probably quartz, mica, or iron pyrites.

The Spaniards had tried their fortunes in this very same region. Jesuits were certainly in Virginia long before Jamestown's settlers. Relics on the Susquehanna near Athens, Pennsylvania—at a point called Spanish Hill—and stonework at Pemaquid, Maine, suggest that Spaniards also pioneered there and vanished.

The French came to Canada for other reasons than acquiring mineral wealth, though one unfortunate mistake about quartz crystals made "un diamant de Canada" proverbial for anything worthless. Fishing vessels had doubtless been making transatlantic voyages as early as Columbus and probably long before. As fishermen do, the crews kept secret their knowledge of good fishing grounds. When Jacques Cartier arrived off Canada in 1534 he met a vessel from La Rochelle that was fishing in waters well known to its crew. And when Cartier nosed up the St. Lawrence, he was following the route of a Norman captain who had sailed 200 miles up the river and brought Indians back to France as early as 1508.

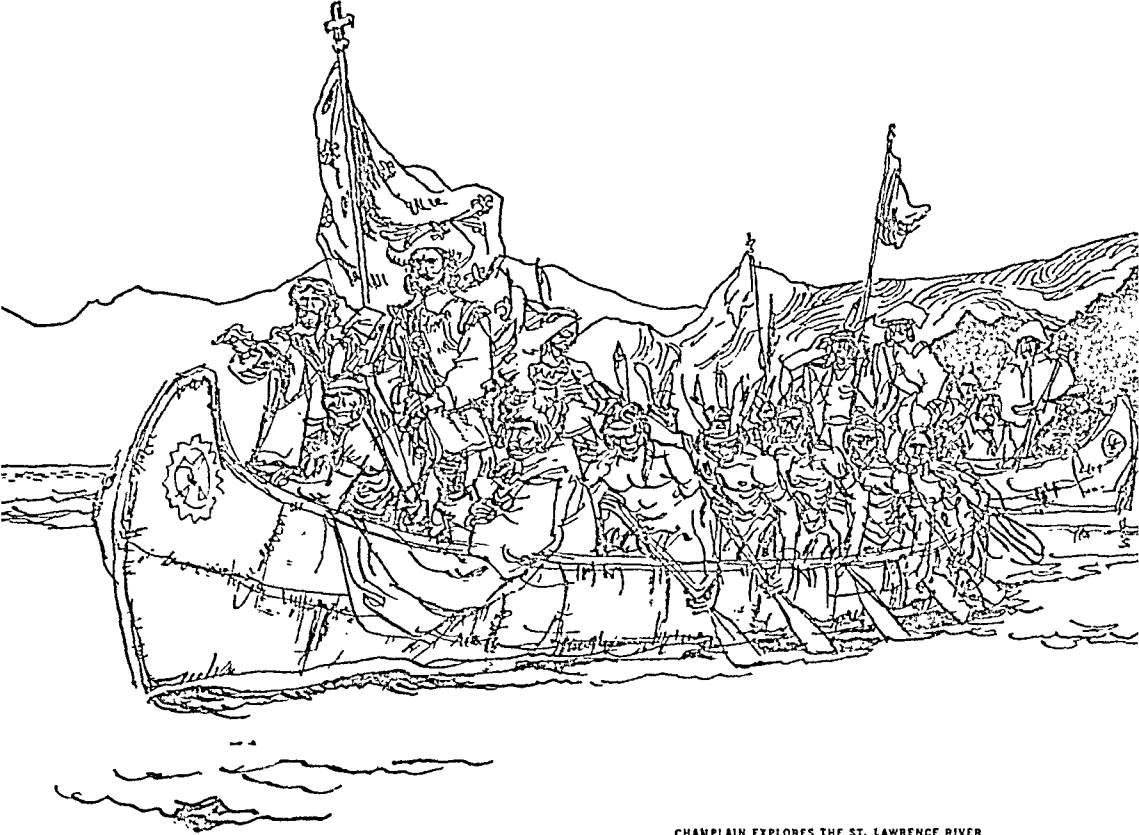
Cartier reached the Indian village that stood on the site of Montreal. There he learned of western waters where one could navigate "for more than three moons." These were the Great Lakes, and Cartier imagined them a mighty waterway leading west to Cathay. Years later the rapids above Montreal were named *La Chine* (China), deriding the old dream.

Samuel de Champlain came to Canada in 1603 convinced that the St. Lawrence offered a route to the "South Sea." He founded Quebec and blazed the way to the Great Lakes. Generations of *coureurs de bois*, slipping through forests in moccasins and riding foaming rivers in canoes, followed his trails.

Champlain befriended the Indians—with one fateful exception. Rashly, he helped a band of Hurons, Algonquins, and Montagnais battle the Iroquois at Lake Champlain. With arquebuses, Champlain and his men routed the Iroquois war party. So doing he set the powerful Five Nations against the French, a hostility that, in large part, was eventually to cost France its hold on North America.



Dreams of gold lured conquistadores through southland swamp and burning desert. Seeking a route to China and souls to save, French explorers and black-robed missionaries (right) ascended rivers of the north, discarding their heavy pinnacles for the canoes of the Indians.



CHAMPLAIN EXPLORES THE ST. LAWRENCE RIVER
AND (OPPOSITE) CORONADO BRAVES THE SOUTHWESTERN DESERTS;
SKETCHES BY PAUL R. HOFFMASTER

Other French explorers followed Champlain. Radisson and Groseilliers probed the Great Lakes, probably entering Minnesota. "The further we sejournd the delightfuller the land was to us," wrote Radisson. "We weare Cesars, being nobody to contradict us."

The Vérendrye family reached Lake Winnipeg and pushed south and west, perhaps as far as Wyoming, searching for a western sea. Like others afoot in the new land, the Vérendryes were convinced that just beyond the next range of hills would lie the great ocean. Englishmen, pushing up the James River to the falls at Richmond, thought that from there it would be about 10 days' march to the "topps" of hills from which "the people saie they see another sea."

French missionaries, plunging into primitive America "to convert some of those foreigners of the remotest country," were first to see many of its wonders—including "a waterfall of dreadful height," Niagara. Jolliet and Fathers Allouez and Marquette explored the Mississippi, following the path of Father Nicolet from Green Bay up the Fox River, down the Wisconsin, and into the Father of Waters itself. Characteristic of French hopes, Nicolet stepped ashore at Green Bay expecting to greet the Emperor of China.

The French were more interested in furs than in settlement, and their few small communities posed no threat to Indian hunting grounds. Besides, French habitants intermarried freely with the Indians. Blessed, then, with the friendship of most

tribes, French explorers penetrated the interior of North America before English men did—all but one Englishman. That was David Ingram.

A sailor with Hawkins and Drake, Ingram was beached after a fight with the Spaniards in 1568. With a few companions, he *walked* “about eleaven monethes” across much of North America, from near Tampico on the Gulf of Mexico to a spot on the Atlantic coast thought to be Cape Breton Island where a passing French ship picked him up. At the time no one in England paid any attention to Ingram’s story, and his two surviving companions died unknown.

Years later, when Elizabethans were gathering every scrap of information they could about the New World, Ingram was called on for his report. He spun a wondrous tale of buffalo, plains, forests, flamingos, auks, bears, and deer. Richard Hakluyt, chronicler of Elizabethan explorations, published it, then doubting it, omitted it from subsequent editions of *Principall Navigations, Voiages, and Discoveries of the English Nation*. Ingram described “white” bears with “sylvre heare” and also “Eliphants.” He certainly saw neither polar bears nor elephants—but there could be an explanation.

Lewis and Clark in 1805, like later explorers, described grizzlies as “white.” Westerners still call them “silvertips.” As for those elephants, the ivory tusks of mammoths, not very long extinct, still lay about at the Big Bone Lick in Kentucky and probably elsewhere. They were still there when Daniel Boone arrived and a long time after. Ingram could have seen those tusks and described them in the speech of his day when “elephant” sometimes meant “ivory.”

Ingram’s accuracy has also been questioned because he describes buffalo as “Beastes as bigge as twoe Oxen in length almost twentye foote.” Buffalo are not 20 feet long. But if those who question Ingram will walk into a modern half-domestic Montana herd, they will see why buffalo *looked* 20 feet long to Ingram, passing through the enormous wild herds on the plains 400 years ago.

At any rate, Ingram’s yarn was just what Elizabethans wanted to hear. Interest in America mounted, especially as successful colonization would establish a Protestant bulwark against Catholic Spain. Sir Humphrey Gilbert, who had heard Ingram talk, sailed off to colonize Newfoundland. Sir Humphrey perished at sea in 1583, cheerfully shouting to another ship as his own



A MUSKETEER OF EARLY COLONIAL DAYS, FROM JACQUES DE GHEYN, "MANIEMENT D'ARMES," 1608, FOLGER LIBRARY

went down that the way to heaven was "as neere by sea as by land." The royal patent went to his half brother Sir Walter Raleigh, who began the great effort that would give birth to Jamestown. So even Ingram, the poor, illiterate tar with more imagination than memory, had a hand in England's settlement of the New World.

EARLY EXPLORERS FOUND plant life in unimaginable abundance and luxuriant growth. Trees of the eastern forests were enormous. Oaks were "far greater and better" than in England. White cedars, today rather small trees, rose 70 or 80 feet. A thick keel 88 feet long could be hewn from a single maple trunk, so the whole tree was a good deal taller. White pines grew to 150 feet with trunks six feet through. Sycamores in Pennsylvania and the Middle West often had 15-foot trunks. A whole family of settlers could and sometimes did use for a cabin one of the great trunks lying hollow on the ground.

Though magnificent to see, these eastern trees created a dark forest world. Up the trunks scrambled vines, their leaves forming a heavy canopy spread out above the treetops. The abundance of grapes led the Norsemen to name the new coast "Wine-land" or "Vinland the Good." But the leaves created a shadow so deep that song-birds and many wild animals could not live in the heart of the forest. One pioneer journeyed a mile without finding a spot "the size of a hand" where sunlight could penetrate. And in thick evergreen woods one could not see 20 feet in any direction.

There was an odd and fortunate circumstance about the darkness. Poison ivy, too, had to seek light above the treetops, where it could do no harm. Except for one mishap of Capt. John Smith's, there is no record of ivy poisoning until well on in the 18th century. When the white man cleared the forests, the gleaming trilobed leaves with their poisonous oil came down to earth where victims could touch them.

There were mosquitoes, of course, the "vexatious, glory-minded, musical winged, bold denizens of the shady forest." Champlain notes "it was wonderful how cruelly they persecuted us."

The perpetual forest gloom depressed white men who passed through it. The darkest parts were sometimes called "the Shades




A CHIEFTAIN OF VIRGINIA, ENGRAVED BY THEODORE DE BRY, 1590, FROM WATERCOLORS BY ROANOKE GOVERNOR JOHN WHITE, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

of Death." Travelers found themselves unconsciously talking in whispers. This somber forest swept westward, with pines and hemlocks in the northern states, rather more hardwoods in the mid-Atlantic region, and palms and palmettos starting as one went south. In Ohio small openings began to appear, but even in Indiana it was rare to find any place where one could see 200 yards ahead.

Along the Ohio and southward down the Mississippi huge canebrakes grew. The green, jointed, bamboolike stalks towered 30 feet, high enough to conceal a man on horseback from his enemies. Across the Mississippi the Great Plains began, rolling expanses of grass and the parti-colored flowers of spring. There were few trees except cottonwoods and willows along the streams.

In and beyond the Rockies the forest commenced again, with trees that overshadowed any in the East, even in unspoiled virgin forest. Along the Columbia River they rose 200 feet. One astonished Easterner declared Oregon trees were so tall it required "two looks to enable one to see the tops," and the gigantic stumps that still dot the Oregon countryside suggest the man was very nearly right. Redwoods along the Pacific coast reach more than 350 feet.

NIMAL LIFE TEEMED in Columbus's America. The small Indian population, probably no larger than 900,000 in the whole United States, armed only with bows, arrows, spears, and stone axes, could not possibly deplete the game. Moose and elk ranged northern forests. Elk probably wandered as far south as the Susquehanna Valley. Deer of one species or another roamed the entire continent. Bison spread eastward to the Susquehanna. Pennsylvania had a herd of 400 as late as 1799, and the state's last buffalo is said to have been killed near Lewisburg in 1801. East of the Mississippi, buffalo usually moved in small herds. But on the plains, a man could ride a horse for 25 miles with the great beasts around him all the way.

With its boundless fertility, its woods full of game, its rivers and lakes teeming with fish, America seemed a new-found Eden to many an early traveler.

"The country was so pleasant, so beautifull and fruitfull that it grieved me to see y^e world could not discover such inticing countrys to live in," one wrote. "Europeans fight for a rock in the sea against one another, or for a sterill land and horrid country [while these] kingdoms are so delicious & under so temperat a climat, plentifull of all things, the earth bringing foarth its fruit twice a yeare, the people live long & lusty & wise in their way."

Into this bounteous continent came the Spanish, the French, men of many lands. The English came to found homes and stay. And it was they, in the end, who took over most of North America—only to lose it at last to other Englishmen like George Washington, Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson, the Adamses, who were willing to do battle for traditional English rights. By this time "development" had started, and the unspoiled beauty of primitive North America was on the way out. But so vast were North American resources, so huge the land, that it took nearly 400 years after Columbus before Americans knew what they had. By then no region of North America had missed the white man's tread.

And what did he do with his discoveries? That is the theme of this book.

JAMESTOWN

*England's gentlemen-adventurers sink roots
in the fertile soil of Virginia*

AT THE LOOKOUT'S SHOUT, sea-weary men tumbled from their narrow bunks and raced to the rail, searching for the Virginia shore. The *Susan Constant*, with the *Godspeed* and the *Discovery* trailing her like ducklings, slipped into the mouth of Chesapeake Bay. Eagerly, a party put ashore.

"Wee could find nothing worth the speaking of," reported George Percy, "but faire meddowes and goodly tall Trees; with such Freshwaters running through the woods, as I was almost ravished at the first sight thereof."

Nothing worth speaking of! In other words, no gold. For years the English had eyed Spanish treasure from America—and raided Spanish galleons. But to control this wealth, they wanted to carve a slice of America for themselves. Sir Walter Raleigh, who had failed, languished in the Tower. Now the Virginia Company of London had sent forth these ships under Capt. Christopher Newport to plant a colony 100 miles upriver, safe from attack. It must be on unoccupied land where a 50-ton ship could set provisions ashore. It must be healthful.

If there was such a place the explorers failed to find it. Instead they chose for their "Jamestowne" a swampy fist of land jutting into the James River, where ships could snuggle up to the bank in six fathoms of water. On May 13, 1607, the fleet made fast to trees. Next day men and supplies went ashore—and the first permanent English settlement in what is now the United States was born.

"Now falleth every man to worke," wrote a member of the party, "the Councell contrive the Fort, the rest cut downe trees to make place to pitch their Tents; some provide claphord to relade the ships; some make gardens, some nets &c."

The colonists' council had elected as president Edward Maria Wingfield, well-born, but pompous and unimaginative. Though Indians were all about, Wingfield failed to drill his men or to build any defense but a barrier of loose boughs. On May 18 the chief of the Paspaheghs strolled up to the flimsy fort. A hundred armed braves "garded him in a very warlike manner with Bowes and Arrowes."

The chief signaled the English to lay aside their arms. They refused. He boldly entered the fort with his men. One Indian stole a hatchet. An Englishman snatched it back, striking him on the arm. "Another Savage, seeing that, came fiercely at our man, with a wooden sword, thinking to beat out his braines." The English raised their muskets. Silence. Each side waited for the other to move. The chief gave an angry command, and the braves trooped out of the fort.

The Indians soon struck in earnest. Captain Newport, returning from a voyage upriver to where Richmond now stands, learned that Jamestown had been attacked: two dead, 14 wounded. A cannon shot saved the colony by knocking a tree bough upon the redskins and scaring them off. An arrow had pierced Wing-

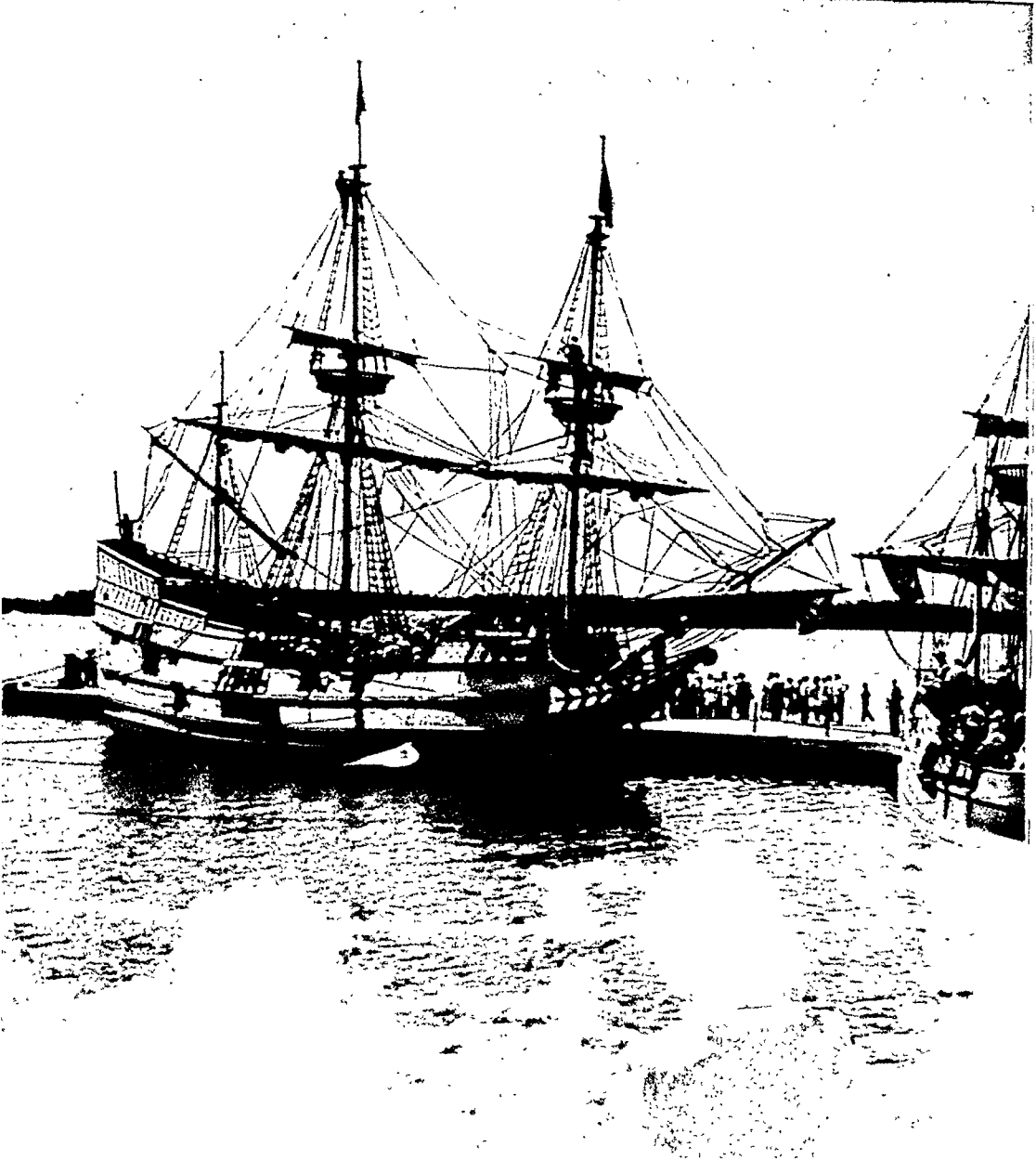
James Fort rose from wilderness to guard the first permanent English settlement in America. Colonists lived behind a palisade in thatched half-timbered houses. The reconstructed fort stands in Jamestown Festival Park.

field's beard. Observed a diarist: "Hereupon the President was contented that the Fort should be pallisadoed, the ordinance mounted, his men armed and exercised."

But rations were running short. In June, Newport sailed away to England, leaving 104 men with scanty provisions to maintain their toe hold in Virginia.

Soon the daily menu was half a pint of wheat and half a pint of wormy barley, boiled in water. Sickness struck. "Scarse ten amongst us coulde either goe, or well stand; such extreame weaknes and sicknes oppressed us," the record reads. By September 10, half the settlers had died. Wingfield had blundered enough. The other council members told him he was through. "You have eased me of a great

Tiny ships like these park replicas brought settlers: *Susan Constant* (left), *Godspeed*, *Discovery*.



deal of care and trouble," he replied. The weakened colony now leaned upon John Smith, sturdy, bristle-bearded, and contentious, who had the irritating habit of telling people how to do things, and usually proving himself right.

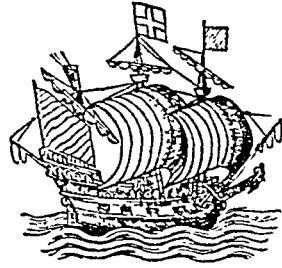
When Smith took over, no houses had been built, the tents were rotting, scarcely five men were well enough to mount guard.

Pamphlet (right) extolled Virginia while the colony starved.

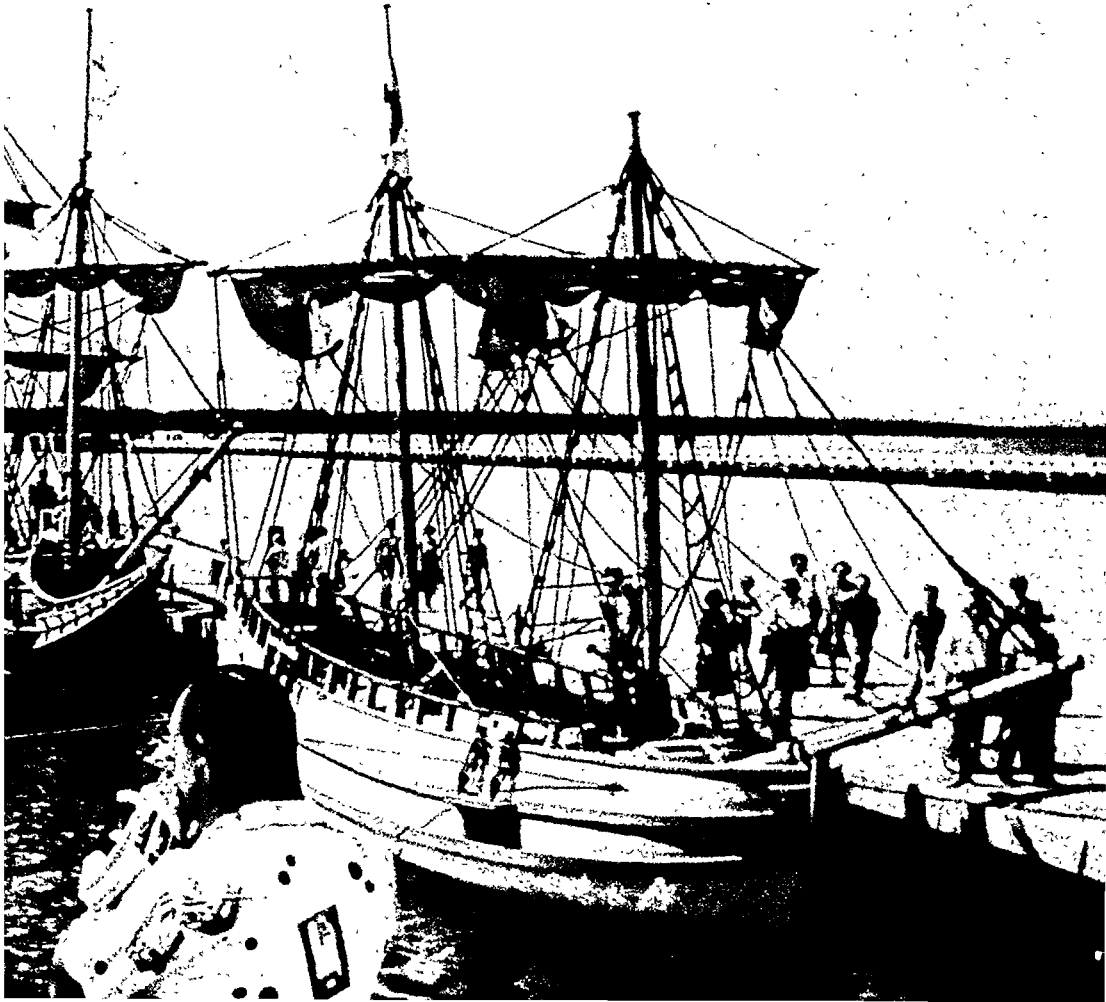
THOMAS J. ABERCROMBIE, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF. INSET. NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

NOVA BRITANNIA: *J. Smith*
OFFERING MOST
 Excellent fruites by Planting in
 VIRGINIA.

Exciting all such as be well affected
 to further the fame.



LONDON
 Printed for SAMUEL MACHAM, and are to be sold at
 his Shop in Pauls Church-yard, at the
 Signe of the Bull-head.
 1609.



Even those who recovered, snorted vigorous John Smith, "would rather starve and rot with idleness, then be perswaded to do any thing for their owne reliefe." He set them to mowing, binding thatch into bundles, building and thatching houses. The result was a tiny village of huts crammed within a stockade.

Smith headed up the Chickahominy River to get badly needed food by trading with Powhatan, Indian ruler of the lower Chesapeake area. He finally waded ashore in a marsh and headed into the woods with an Indian guide. In a few minutes he heard Indians yelling behind him.

Grabbing his guide, Smith bound him "to his arme with his garters, and used him as a buckler." An arrow whistled out of nowhere and struck Smith in the thigh. Spinning about, he saw two Indians drawing their bows. More sprang up. Firing his pistol and holding his Indian in front of him, he kept the attackers away. Then he backed into a quagmire. At last, "being neere dead with cold, he threw away his armes."

The Indians dragged him off to their village, and after dancing around him with "hellish notes and screeches," they thrust him into a long house and served him enough food for 20 men—"which made him thinke they would fat him to eat him," Smith wryly remarked.

Finally the Indians led him to Powhatan. The old chieftain was "proudly lying upon a Bedstead a foote high, upon tenne or twelve Mattes, richly hung with manie Chaynes of great Pearles about his necke, and covered with a great Covering of *Rahaugheums*" (raccoon skins). After a long powwow a crowd of braves, hideously painted, rushed at Smith and threw him to the earth, pressing his head against two huge stones. Others raised their clubs to beat out his brains.

At the last moment, as Smith tells it, "Pocahontas the Kings dearest daughter, when no intreaty could prevaile, got his head in her armes, and laid her owne upon his to save him from death." Pocahontas was a charming girl of 13 or 14—just the age to be fascinated by this handsome white stranger. In an impulsive act of pity, she wrote her name imperishably into American history.

SMITH was saved, but starvation and disease stalked Jamestown. Only 38 hungry, desperate survivors greeted Newport's ship when it sailed up the James loaded with good English food and drink. And hardly had the colonists become accustomed to the taste when disaster struck again. This time fire swept through the flimsy settlement, destroying buildings, tools, supplies, and the minister's books. After rebuilding, the colonists chose John Smith as president. Bursting with energy as usual, he extended the fort from three to five sides (our first Pentagon), drilled the men, repaired the boats, and sent out trading parties.

Newport arrived again with orders to find gold, a passage to the Pacific, and survivors of Raleigh's lost colony. With him came nearly a hundred new colonists—and not an ounce of food for winter! To top all, he was ordered to crown Powhatan and give him royal presents—a waste of time. Smith barked, when they should be trading with the Indians for their newly harvested corn.

Powhatan's presents had to be carried almost a hundred miles by water. When it came time to crown the Indian chieftain, "a foule trouble there was to make him



kneele to receive his Crowne.” At last the English, leaning hard on his shoulders, forced him to stoop a little, then popped the crown on his head. At a signal the boats in the river let go with a volley. Powhatan, thinking the whole ceremony a trap, started up “in a horrible feare.” But at last they convinced him all was well. Powhatan gave his old shoes and his mantle to Newport. That mantle can still be seen in the Ashmolean Museum at Oxford, England.

Newport sailed for home; winter brought more threats from Indians, more deaths. Finding himself the only surviving council member, Smith told the settlers: “He that will not work shall not eat, except by sickness he be disabled.” And he set them to making tar and soap ashes, digging a well, building houses, and erecting a fort across the river on a bluff—known today as Smith’s Fort Plantation. Before it was finished, President Smith found that the casked corn, which was to have seen the colony through till next harvest, was half rotten, and hordes of rats were rapidly eating the rest.

On July 10, 1609, a ship sailed in from England bringing great news: The Virginia Company had been reorganized, and heavy reinforcements of men and supplies were soon to come out. No one knew that the ship had been wrecked, that months would pass before survivors reached Virginia. Meanwhile, plagued with food shortages and insubordination, the colony barely held together.

In the fall of 1609 John Smith returned to England. He had been badly burned in an accident and was still plagued by enemies within the settlement. Yet Smith had fallen in love with America, not for the dream of gold or of a passage to the South Sea but for its own sake. He returned to explore the New England coast, but he never saw Jamestown again.

With his departure, Jamestown fell apart. Weapons were traded to the Indians,

who slaughtered the settlers; some survivors sailed for England without permission; all hogs, chickens, and other livestock were eaten. That terrible winter of 1609-10 came to be known as the "starving time." Men wolfed the meat of dogs and rats and searched the woods, eager to "feede upon Serpents and snakes and to digge the earthe for wylde and unknowne Rootes." They dug up the dead for food. Of nearly 500 people, only 60 miserable creatures were alive when the shipwrecked leaders, Sir Thomas Gates and Sir George Somers, turned up in May.

Shocked, Gates wrote that Jamestown appeared "raither as the ruins of some auntient fortification, then that any people living might now inhabit it: the pallisadoes tourne downe, the portes open, the gates from the hinges, the church ruined and unfrequented . . . the Indian as fast killing without as the famine and pestilence within."

It seemed the only thing to do with Jamestown was abandon it. On June 7, survivors set sail for England. Hope of a British America was dead. But next day as they dropped down river, they met a longboat bringing dramatic news: Lord De La Warr was in the bay with new supplies. The colony was saved.

But Jamestown still had no firm economic base. Everything—gold, glass, tar,



soap ash—had failed. Sassafras and clapboard could not pay big profits to the Virginia Company. Then in 1612 John Rolfe discovered how to cure sweet tobacco, and with this new export the colony began to get on its feet.

In July, 1619, Governor Sir George Yeardley called together America's first legislative assembly. Burgesses elected from 11 settled areas gathered in the church choir where the governor sat with his council. Before they adjourned they fixed the price of tobacco, recommended "that no injury or oppression be wrought by the English against the Indian," and decreased punishments for idleness, gambling, and drunkenness.

A few days after adjournment a Dutch ship sailed up the river and sold some 20 Negroes for badly needed provisions. Thus began the "peculiar institution" of slavery which was to affect the whole history of America.

In London, meanwhile, the Virginia Company sought 100 "woemen, Maides young and uncorrupt to make wives to the Inhabitantes and by that meanes to make the men there more settled & lesse moveable." The girls arrived next summer, gladdening an equal number of eager males. Unfortunately, the newlyweds had only two years of bliss before disaster struck. In 1622 some Englishmen



ENGRAVING BY THEODORE DE BRY, 1628, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS, AND (LEFT) THOMAS L. WILLIAMS

Plastering clay over a network of twigs, settlers slapped together their wattle-and-daub homes. But they failed to cement a lasting friendship with the Indians. In 1622 Opechancanough, Powhatan's successor, turned his braves loose on outlying plantations. They slaughtered 347 unwary colonists.



murdered a respected Indian. On Good Friday the Indians fell without warning on settlements up and down both sides of the James. Jamestown itself was saved by a friendly Indian.

Then came plague. Of the thousands who had come to Virginia, only 300 were left in 1623. But a change was in the wind. James I made Virginia a royal colony. More planters arrived. By 1625 there were a score of settled areas. Brick dwellings rose in Jamestown, including the home of Colonial Secretary Richard Kemp and that of Gov. John Harvey, which became the first statehouse. A brick church was begun about 1639. Part of its tower still stands.

Though endlessly beset by Indians, disease, and fires, the Virginia Colony grew to a prosperous community of 80,000. Then in 1699 the capital moved to Williamsburg. Jamestown declined into an "Abundance of Brick Rubbish."

Thanks to the National Park Service and to Virginia authorities, that rubbish has been turned into a meaningful site where all Americans can pay homage to the brave settlers whose trials were a source of our strength.

The tower, rising above this rebuilt church, is the only standing ruin of 17th century Jamestown. Loopholes pierce its three-foot walls. Grave-stones carry such honored names as Berkeley, Byrd, Lee, Blair, and Harrison. In 1619 the first representative legislative assembly in the Americas convened on this site. Here, too, came worshipers in Sunday best.

B. ANTHONY STEWART,
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

nn-
rick
He
yle.

LEFT
out
ion,
dor
gar-
ing.



Bacon's Rebellion

NATHANIEL BACON had an ear for the woes of his fellow planters. In the 1670's they faced ruin, for tobacco glutted England. Governor Berkeley packed the assembly with cronies, barred elections, and levied crippling taxes. When Indians attacked in 1676, Berkeley made no move to check them.

Without the governor's authority, Bacon and 300 men went to fight redskins. Berkeley declared him a rebel and set out after him, but Bacon whipped the Indians and became Virginia's hero. He marched triumphantly into Jamestown, where the raging governor tore open his fine clothes and shouted, "Here! Shoot me! 'Fore God a fair mark, shoot!"

Bacon replied that he only wanted "a commission to save our lives from the Indians . . . and now we will have it before we go." And his men echoed, "We will have it!" shaking their guns.

They got it. But Bacon couldn't decide whether to fight Indians or Berkeley, who alternately pursued and fled him. Finally the rebels laid siege to Jamestown and burned it (above). Bacon planned reforms, but dysentery killed him. Berkeley returned and hanged 37 of Bacon's followers.

"That old fool," said Charles II, "has hanged more men in that naked country than I have done for the murder of my father."

Thus ended Bacon's rebellion against many of the same injustices that brought on the American Revolution a century later.

NEW ENGLAND

Pilgrims plant freedom on Plymouth's shore

JAMES THE FIRST arched a pious brow at the Pilgrims' petition. "What profits may arise in the parts to which they intend to go?"

"Fishing," he was told.

"So God have my soul, 'tis an honest trade! 'Twas the Apostles' own calling." He granted royal sanction. Yet the Pilgrim Fathers sailed from England, September 6, 1620, with very little fishing tackle. They sought less tangible profits

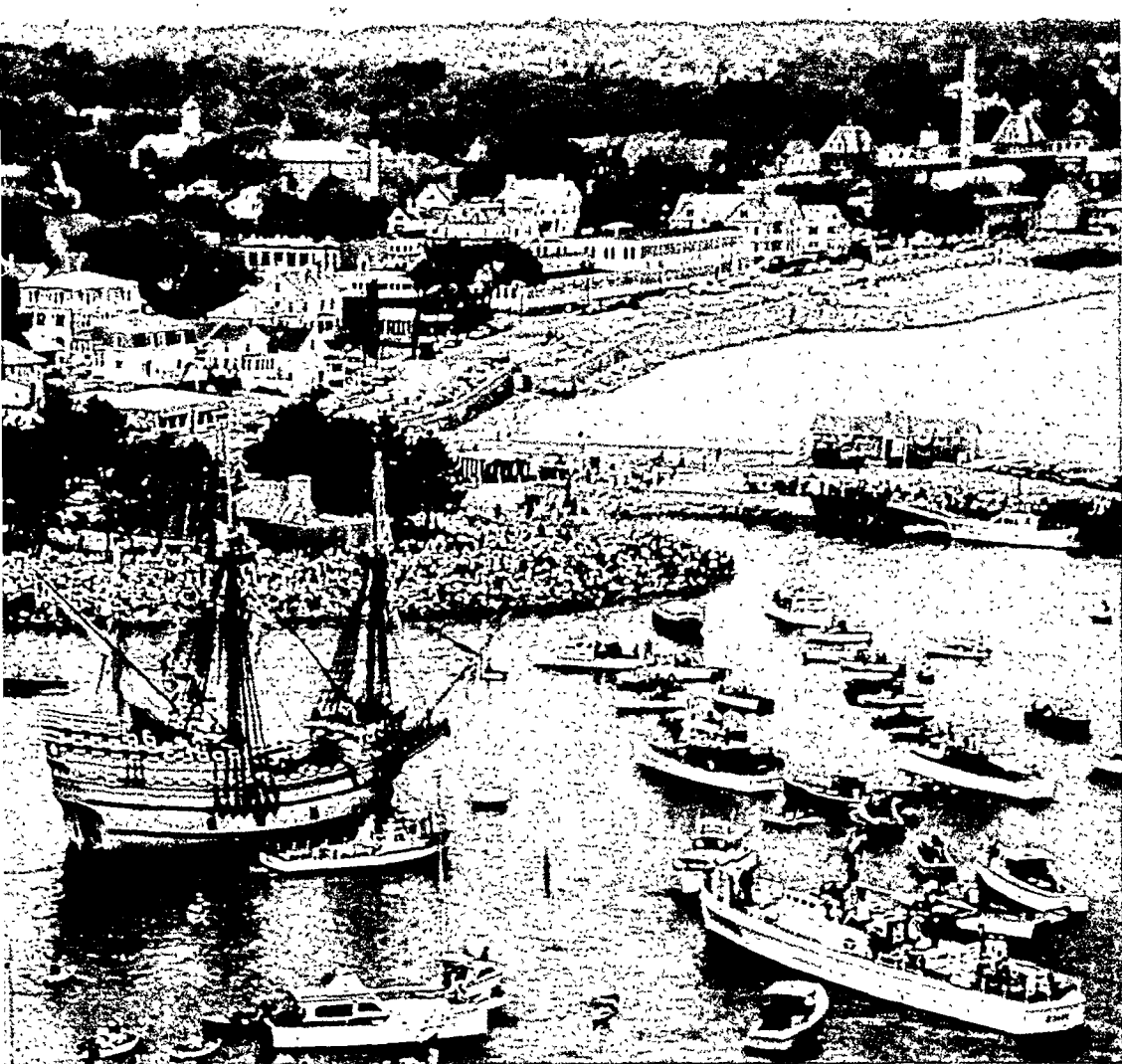
V73'NG1

K2

289 (Gift USIS)



DEPARTURE OF THE SPEEDWELL FROM HOLLAND, 1620, BY ROBERT W. WEIR, IN U.S. CAPITOL ROTUNDA



LUIS MARDEN AND (LEFT) BATES LITTLEHALES, BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

games and feasting on venison, roast duck, shellfish, berries, and wine "very sweete & strong." A hungry winter followed, more Pilgrims arrived from England, and the colony staggered under the load. But the tattered saints never lost faith.

Imagination must wipe away today's bustling manufacturing community to see the Plymouth of 340 years ago: A scant collection of hewn-plank and thatch-roofed houses flank Leyden and Main Streets, and a stout palisade girds the town from Town Brook to Plymouth Harbor. On Burial Hill rises "a fort of good timbers, both strong and comely," and brazen cannon look down to overawe the "salvages." Assembling in Leyden Street at beat of drum, Pilgrims march up the hill together in family groups. They congregate in the fort's lower room where Elder William Brewster leads them in worship.

Expanding slowly, New Plimoth became Old Plymouth Colony, stretching from Cape Cod's tip to Narragansett Bay, from Scituate to Nantucket Sound. Pilgrim traders founded outposts from Maine to the Connecticut Valley, matched wits and wampum with French, Dutch, and Indians.

Mecca for modern Pilgrims is famous Plymouth Rock. To most it somehow seems too small: "They expect a cliff, I guess," remarked a guide. Broken off the original boulder, reduced more by souvenir chippers, it now lies safely beneath a classic colonnade at tide's edge. The old town is rich with relics and memories of democracy's growth. Here lie time-yellowed records of Governors Bradford and Winslow; there hangs a portrait of Winslow, the only known likeness of a *Mayflower* passenger. In Plymouth was born the New England town meeting. And from its gray clapboarded Town House, patriots defied King George's Stamp Act: "We will never be slaves to any power on earth."

The Jabez Howland House (1667) echoed to Pilgrim boots. The restored Sparrow House (1640) has a round-cornered fireplace, carved paneling, and a door buttressed "to withstand tomahawk blows." The Harlow House was built in 1677 "from the timbers of the old fort." Children, like the Pilgrims, plant corn and flax in the yard when "oak leaves are the size of a mouse's ear." Plimoth Plantation recreates forefathers' days with old-style dwellings and a replica of the *Mayflower*.

Neighboring Kingston was home to William Bradford. A "father to them all," he governed the colonists 31 years. Duxbury ranks second to Plymouth in early





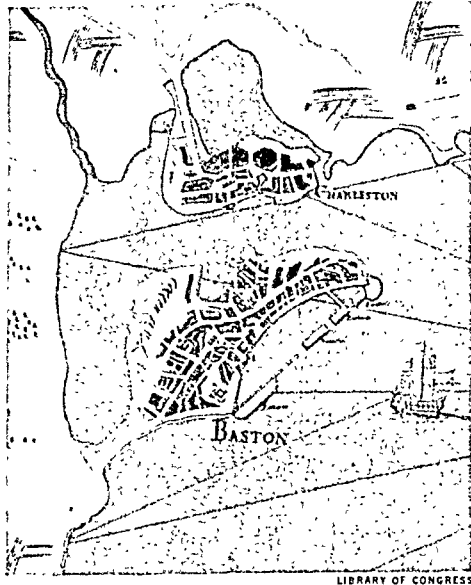
Before the kitchen fireplace, like this in the Duxbury home of John Alden, Pilgrim families supped on bowls of hasty pudding. Then both men and women lit pipes.

Pilgrim associations. Here lived Philippe de La Noye, an ancestor of Franklin Delano Roosevelt. Here also stands the John Alden House, built by son Jonathan in 1653. Now a museum, it has been in the Alden family for three centuries. It saw the death of "Speak for yourself" John and probably Priscilla. They rest in the pine-shaded Old Burying Ground not far from the grave of Capt. Myles Standish, the odd man of that legendary triangle.

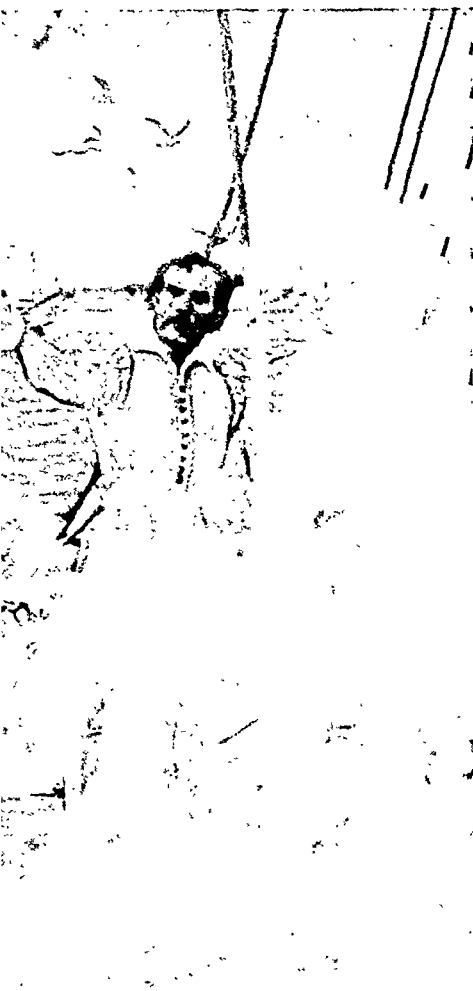
Longfellow memorialized the captain in verse: Duxbury honors him in sculpture. His statue atop a 130-foot granite monument is "the highest in the world," wisecrack old-timers. "It's Myles above the sea!" Standish never joined the Pilgrim church, never bowed to its self-righteous code. He kept a tolerant outlook when Pilgrims and, later, Puritans were losing theirs.

Pilgrim Village, rebuilt at Plymouth, mirrors days when forefathers shocked corn for the harsh winter ahead. Exhibits include a saw pit where house planks are hand-sawn from logs, and crafts of the Pilgrims' Indian allies.

PLYMOUTH PLANTATION AND (ABOVE) KATHLEEN PEVIS,
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER



"Baston," as a French mapmaker labeled it in 1693, grew blueberries when Ann Pollard skipped ashore in 1630. Aged 100 (right), she recalled it.



Puritans settle Massachusetts Bay



MEN OF PLYMOUTH scouted north to the Shawmut peninsula in 1621, dropping names—Brewster Islands, Point Allerton, Squantum—that Boston still reveres. They esteemed the Boston Bay country superior to Plymouth and regretted they had not settled here. But as Governor Bradford in true Calvinistic tradition pointed out, "it seems ye Lord who assignes to all men ye bounds of their habitations, had appoynted it for another use."

Thus predestined, Squire John Winthrop, charter in hand, landed at Salem, June 12, 1630. After exploring down the coast, he chose the mouth of the Charles River for his colony and led the Puritans to Charlestown. Scarcity of fresh water soon prompt-

Governor Winthrop's arrival began the great migration

CHARLES HOFFBRAUER, NEW ENGLAND MUTUAL LIFE INSURANCE COMPANY
ABOVE: MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY



© ANTHONY STERN, FOR LALCE GRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

The Common, Boston's oldest landmark, harks back to 1634 when it was bought for \$150 to serve as "a traying field . . . and for feeding cattell." Cow paths winding to the 48-acre pasture have become downtown streets.

ed the governor to shift his flock again. They crossed to the neighboring peninsula of Shawmut, where they could share the spring-water supply of William Blaxton, a hermit who lived on Beacon Hill. On September 7 they named their settlement Boston, after the Lincolnshire town so familiar to the Puritan leaders.

First ashore was "romping" ten-year-old Ann Pollard—she lived to see 100—who remembered the land being "very uneven, abounding in small hollows and swamps, covered with blueberries and other bushes." Soon the peninsula boasted a cluster of sod-roofed and bark-covered cottages, and a fort "which can command any ship as shee sayles into any Harbour within the still Bay."

The first Bostonians, mainly city dwellers with notions of becoming gentlemen-farmers, arrived too late to plant a crop had they known how. Scrimping on clams and mussels, ground nuts and acorns, ravaged by starvation and disease, some 200 of them—perhaps one in five—died before winter.

Survival lay in the sea: fishing, shipbuilding, trading. In 1631 Puritans launched the first ship built in Massachusetts and soon laid keels for more, some as big as 200 tons. New hope surged in Boston. And before the end of the decade new life thrived as 20,000 Englishmen, many of them scholars, fled the despotic England

Salem challenges pioneers . . .

of Charles I. With renewed vigor Bostonians cut firewood, pastured cattle on the harbor islands, developed "Farms in the Countrey," and proclaimed their city "the chiefe place for shipping and Merchandize." Like Old Testament patriarchs, their ministers laid down the law from the pulpit on matters affecting the community—excommunicating a heretic, perhaps, or ordering the town butcher to "remove the Stinking garbage out of his yard, nere the street."

In the mid-1600's theocracy grudgingly gave ground to civil rule by laymen gathered in the town meeting. "Puritanism," remarked James Russell Lowell, "believing itself quick with the seed of religious liberty, laid, without knowing it, the egg of democracy."

Boston hatched it, but Salem did the initial incubating. Four years before Winthrop landed, Roger Conant rallied a few defectors from the Plymouth Colony and established them at the Indian fishing village of Naumkeag. They fished and planted, "feeding their fancies with new discoveries at the Spring's approach . . . turning down many a drop of the bottell." Two years later stern John Endecott arrived in Salem and took command. Endecott had cut short the far from puritanical goings on at Wollaston, where rebels from Plymouth's strait-laced society had raised a Maypole to frisk around. He had no trouble setting Salem to rights.

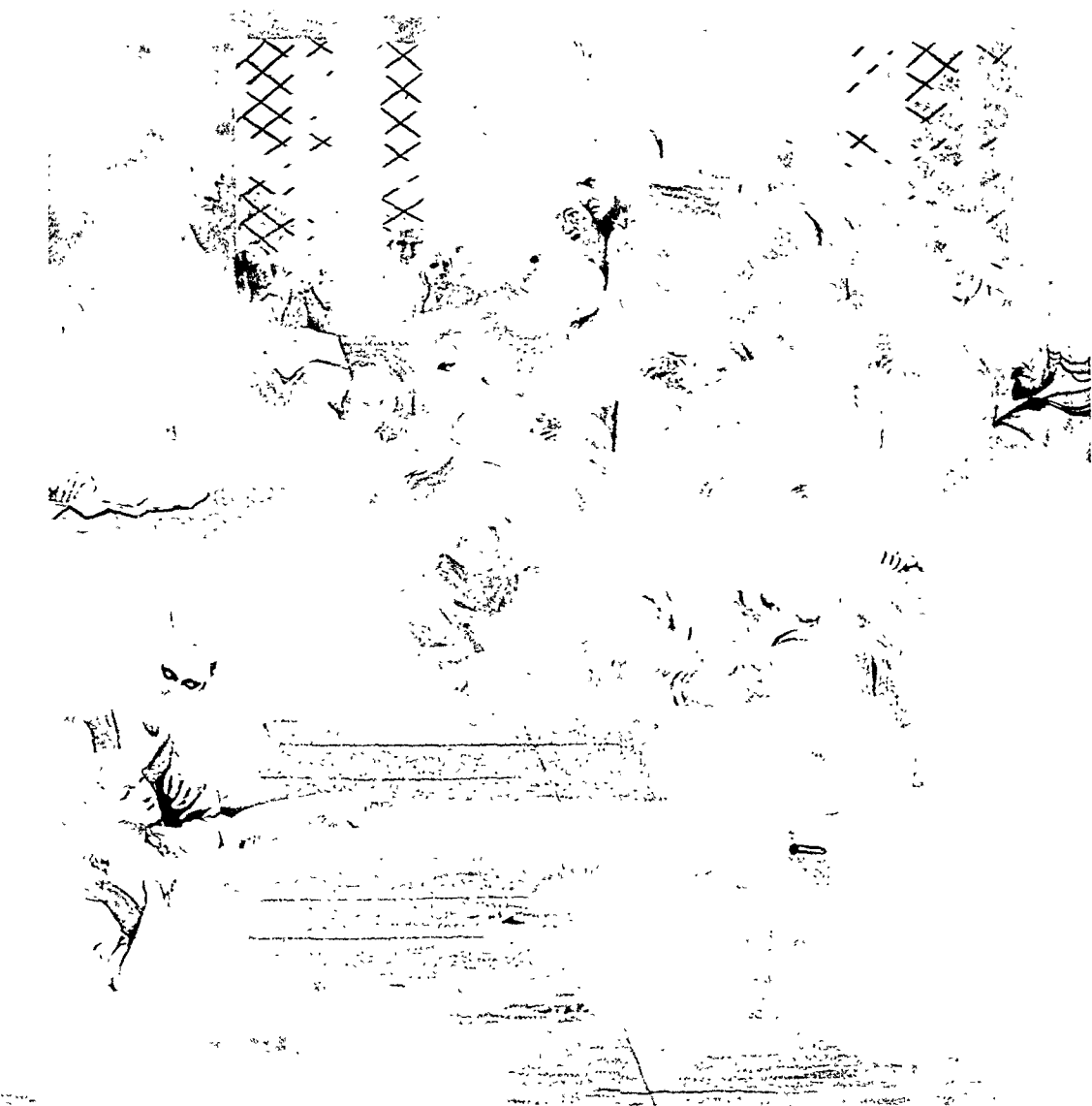
Salem's Pioneer Village makes today's visitors aware of the hardships settlers here and elsewhere in New England took for granted. As shelter from raw winds and drifting snow, they dug their first homes from the rocky soil or raised wigwams. Green sapling poles, bent to join at the roof, were thatched and shingled with pine bark.

Nearby stands the Lady Arbella House. A well-born Puritan, she came with Winthrop on the ship named for her, but died within a month. Her husband also succumbed, and Cotton Mather noted: "She first deceased, he for a little while tried to live without her, liked it not, and died."

Rev. Francis Higginson established the first Puritan church in America at Salem. Roger Williams became its pastor, but before seven years had passed, he was hounded out for advocating a clean break with the Church of England and went south to found Providence. This presaged the day half a century hence when Salem, maddened by "witchcraft," would again loose the dogs of intolerance.

IN THE LANGUAGE of the Old Testament, Salem means "City of Peace." But to any American schoolboy Salem remains best known for the hysteria that gripped the town during a few months in 1692.

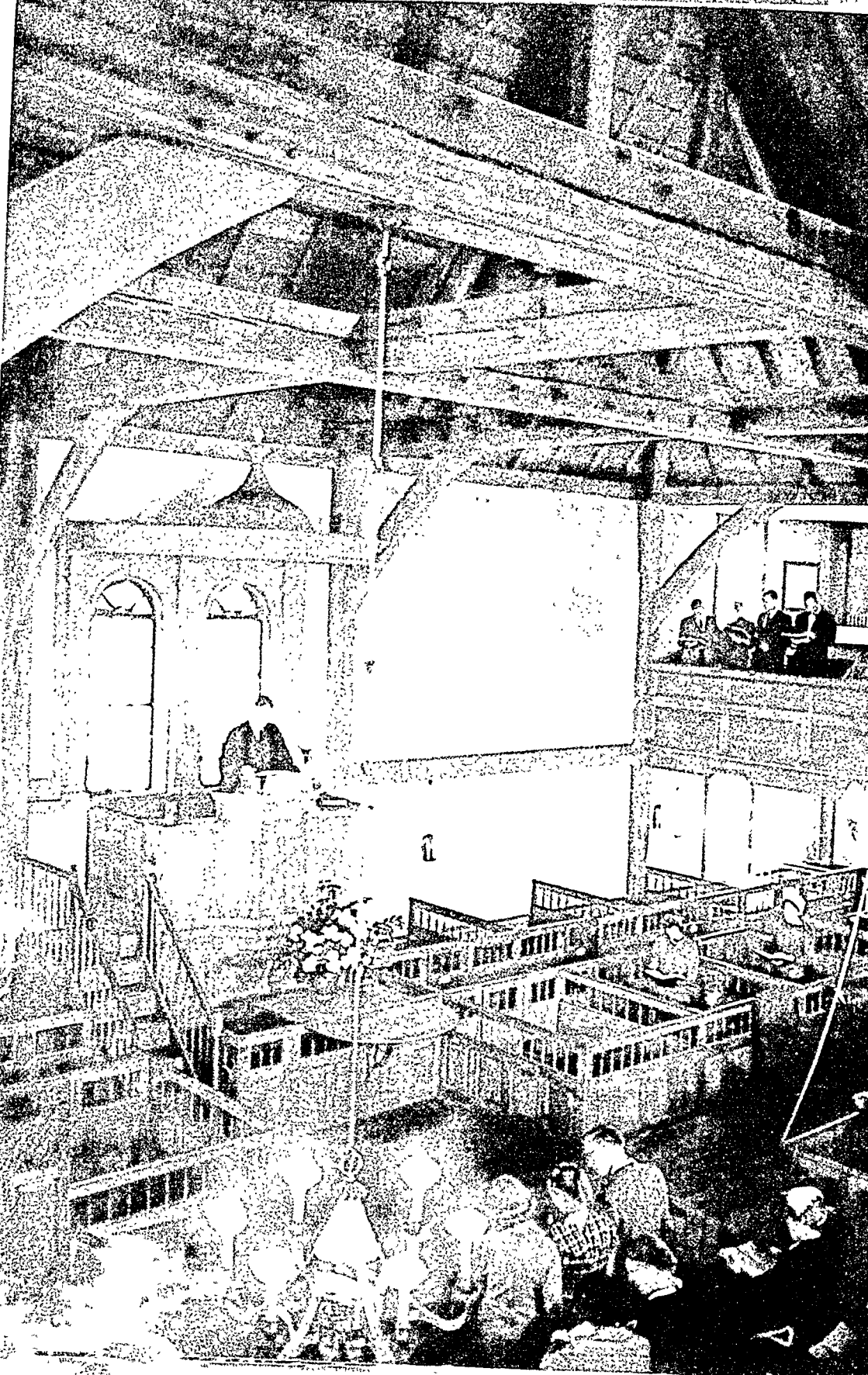
By this time New England was as enlightened as any land in the world. Harvard was already a good deal older than many of today's colleges. New Englanders had been elected to the Royal Society of London. Massachusetts scholars had a grasp of physics and astronomy that was second only to the newest learning of Europe. Yet the Puritan church, based largely on the fear of hell-fire, clung firmly to belief in witchcraft—the possession of human souls by the devil. The religious climate remained hospitable to any suggestion that witches might be doing



Witchcraft hysteria seizes convulsing girls who point to "sorcerer" George Jacobs. "You tax me for a wizard," he shouts. "You may as well tax me for a buzzard. I have done no harm!" Yet the court sentenced him to die on Gallows Hill.

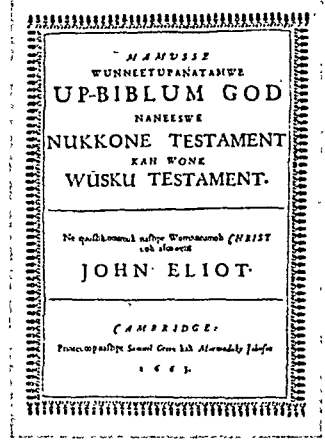
Jonathan Corwin, a judge at the trials, lived in the Witch House (far left). House of Seven Gables, with its secret staircase, belonged to a cousin of novelist Nathaniel Hawthorne. An ancestor, John Hathorne, was also a judge at the witchcraft trials.

B. ANTHONY STEWART AND JOHN E. FLETCHER,
BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF
ABOVE: T. H. MATTISON, ESSEX INSTITUTE, SALEM





WOODCUT C. 1670 BY JOHN FOSTER, MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY, AND (RIGHT) HUNTINGTON LIBRARY AND ART GALLERY



Bible and preacher wielded power in Puritan towns. Missionary John Eliot sought to extend their sway over the Indians, translating the Scriptures into Algonquian (above). Master printer Marmaduke Johnson came from England to print the book "at the presse in Harvard Colledge."

Richard Mather, shown at left in the first American woodcut, was the grandfather of Cotton Mather.

Puritan life centers in the church . . .

PIETY AND HARD WORK were the driving forces of the Puritans. Every member of the large families did his chores faithfully. But by dusk on Saturday work had to cease, for the Sabbath had begun. Beans bubbled in a pot on the great hearth. Pies cooled on a window sill. They could be served without effort for supper and Sunday breakfast.

On Sunday everyone filed into the meetinghouse for a session that might last for hours. Families took square pews, assigned according to rank and dignity. Attention focused on the high pulpit. If thoughts wandered, the watchful tithingman stood near with his long pole. One end was knobbed to rouse those made drowsy by their live-coal footwarmers; the other bore a patch of fur to tickle any maiden caught yawning, tittering, or flirting. The congregation stood while prayers rumbled on past the turning of the minister's hourglass.

Nucleus of the village, the meetinghouse stood at the head of the green, surveying the dwellings that lined the street. In early days it served as a fort, and worshipers leaned their guns in pew corners. Thursday was Lecture Day, and villagers gathered to hear long harangues, to scoff at the town drunkard trussed in the stocks, and to test their aim with matchlocks on the green. Then it was home for supper in low-ceilinged kitchens with huge fireplaces where family life centered.

. . . and in the home

Old Ship Church has echoed Hingham's prayers since ships' carpenters raised its massive timbers in 1681. Puritans shunned altars; pews in the square meetinghouse focus on pulpit. In last hymn, congregations often turned to face choir.

The Whipple House at Ipswich grew with the years from austere 1640 to the day of the piano.



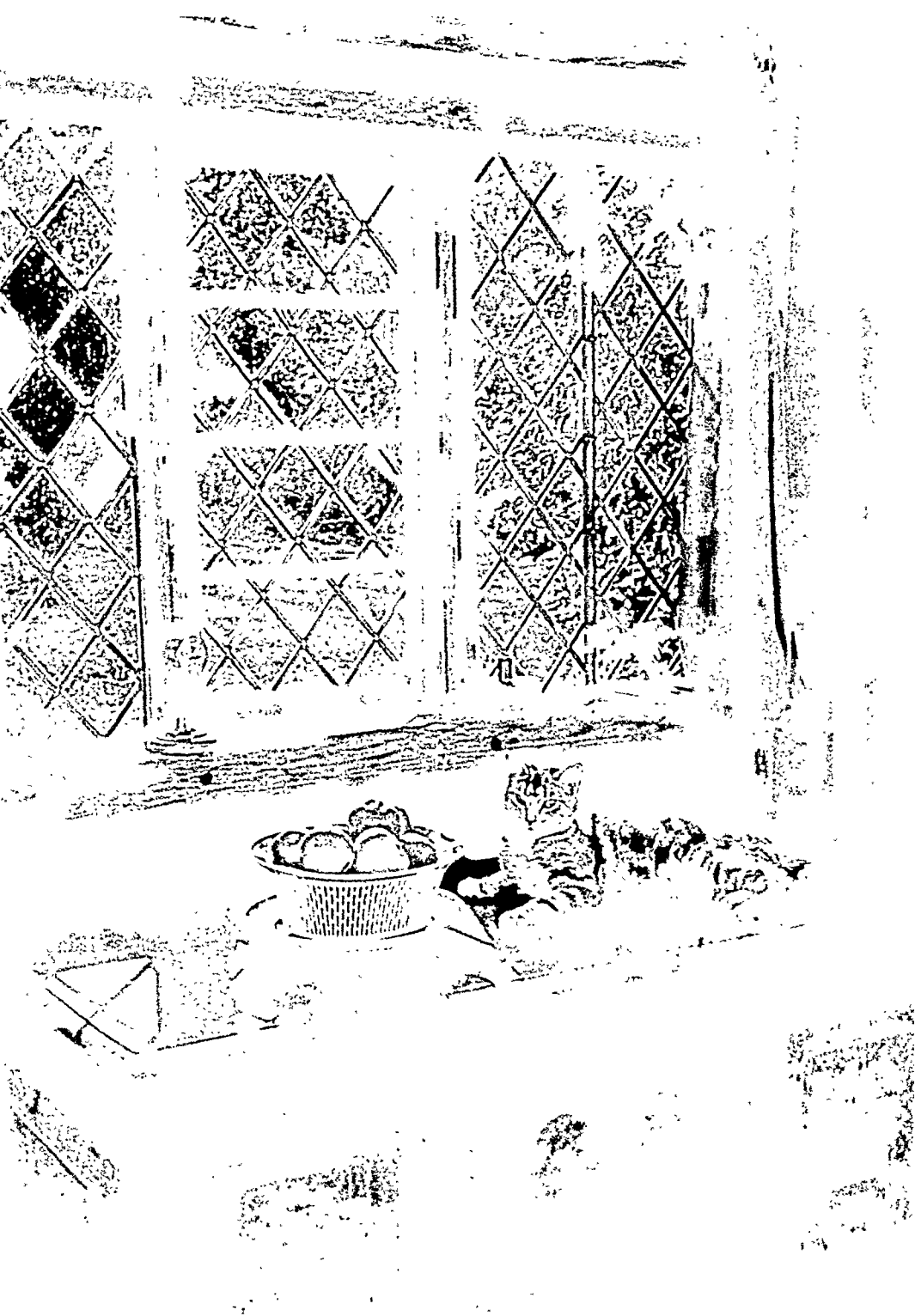
Wooden utensils (from top): a wrench to tighten rope bedsprings, bowl, funnel, mortar and pestle, piggan, butter paddle, trencher. Forks were rare.

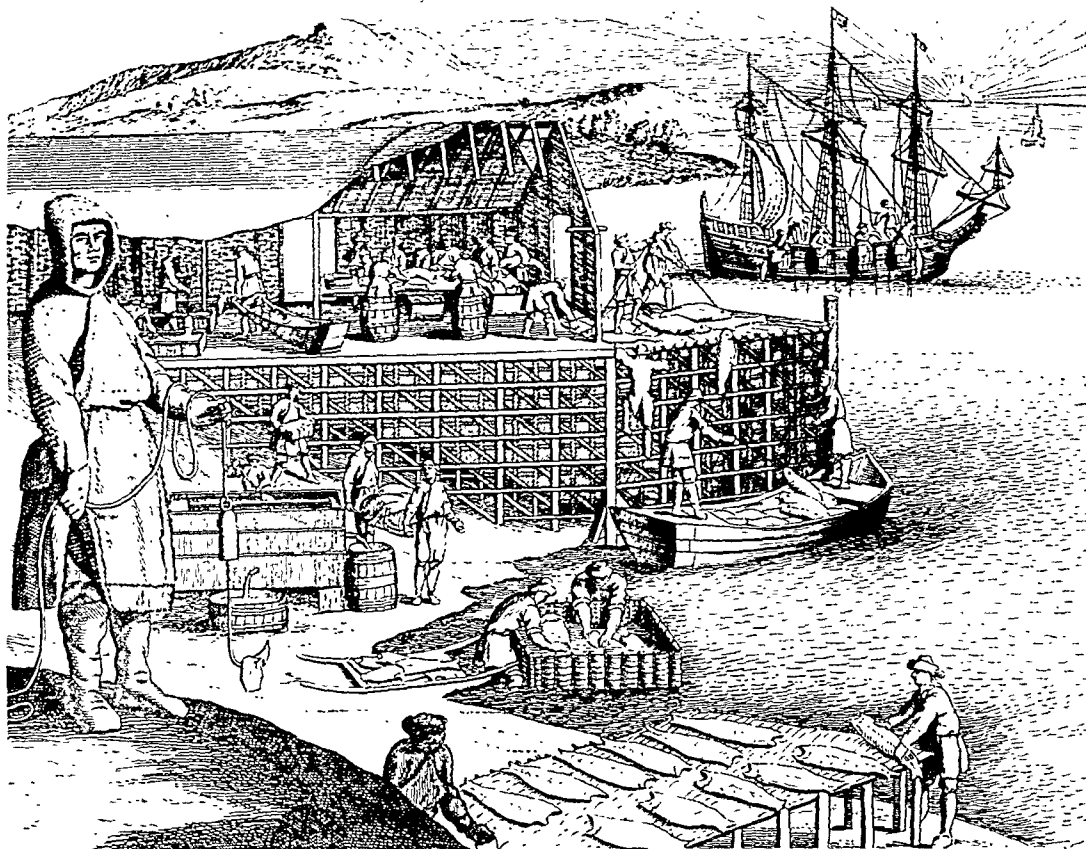


Spinning and weaving kept families clothed. Children helped at small looms. Simplicity, sturdiness mark early homes like the Whipple House (right) and Topsfield's Parson Capen House.



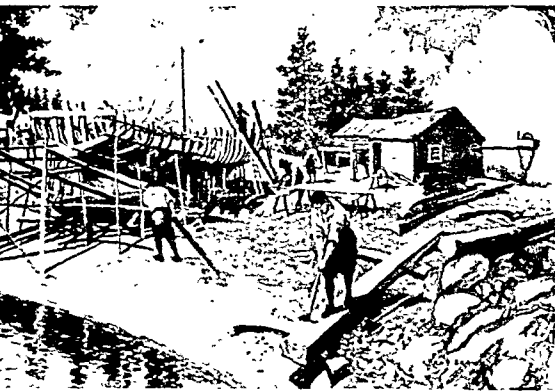
WHIPPLE HOUSE BY KATHLEEN REVIS, WEAVING AT PLYMOUTH'S HARLOW HOUSE BY BATES LITTLEHALES, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHERS. TOP: OLD STURBRIDGE VILLAGE. LEFT: FOLGER LIBRARY





FROM HERMAN MOLL'S MAP OF NORTH AMERICA C. 1710. LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

Cod hooked in Newfoundland's chill waters were split, salted, spread out to dry. Oil was pressed from liver. The fish abounded year round. Cured cod kept indefinitely.

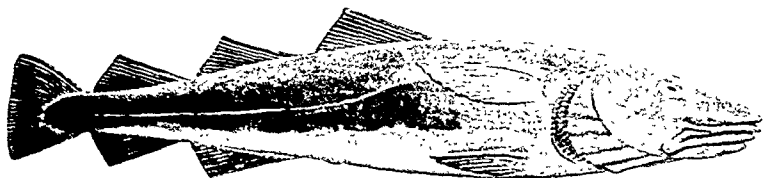


RAY BROWN FOR STORY OF OUR MERCHANT MARINE

In ships they built with adz and ax, New Englanders carried their corn and salt fish to West Indies marts.

WITHOUT the bounty of the sea, Pilgrims and Puritans could scarcely have scratched a living from New England's rocky soil. Indians taught them to plant dead fish along with their corn. Herring or alewives served the purpose, and towns boasted of their coastal brooks where alewives ran in spring.

The corn crop, ground into meal, furnished a family with pudding, porridge, and tough crusty journey cake. Even now New Englanders eat "johnnycake," Indian pudding, and corn meal mush sweetened with maple syrup.



Sacred cod hangs in the Massachusetts State House, honored as lifesaving food for settlers, first export, and the humble origin of mercantile wealth.



PAUL R. HOFFMASTER

*One for the cutworm, one for the crow,
One for the woodchuck, and two to grow.*
So says the Yankee farmer, planting five kernels of corn and a fish or two in each hill.

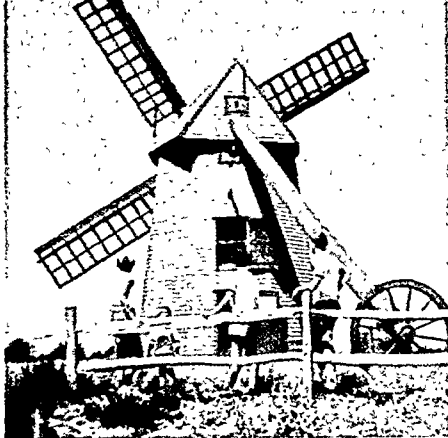
New Englanders discover corn, codfish, and coastal trade

But cod was the fish that fed early New England. Big and meaty, they nosed close to shore in spring and fall. Settlers were quick to realize the profit from fishing. Their fishing vessels were nodding to each other on the cod-rich Grand Banks in 1645. Gloucester earned its fame from the codfish—and New England learned how to sail.

The day in 1631 when Gov. John Winthrop launched his 30-ton *Blessing of the Bay* to carry cargoes between settlements, the future of the region became certain: trade.

Gloucester's Madonna, cradling a schooner, welcomes fishermen home. This old port's fleet is manned today mostly by Portuguese whose ancestors fished the Grand Banks a century and more before the Pilgrims came.

LUIS MARDEN AND (LEFT) KATHLEEN REVIS,
BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF



MASSACHUSETTS DEPARTMENT OF COMMERCE

To grind corn settlers first hollowed a log for a mortar. Streams later powered mills. Where winds blew fresh, as on Cape Cod and Nantucket (above), windmills turned.





KATHLEEN REVIS, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER, AND (RIGHT) SAUGUS IRONWORKS RESTORATION

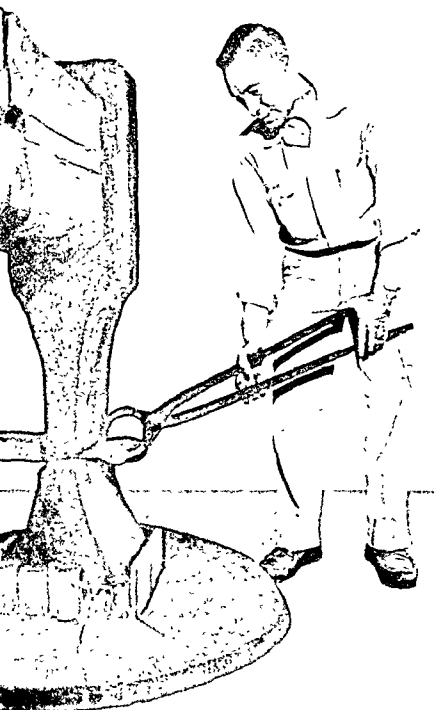
**Ironworks of the Puritans
surge to life again**

Churning power for the rolling mill delights young visitors as they explore the birthplace of America's steel industry on the banks of the Saugus near Boston. Blast furnace, forge, warehouse, wharf, and iron-master's house also have been restored to their 17th century prime.

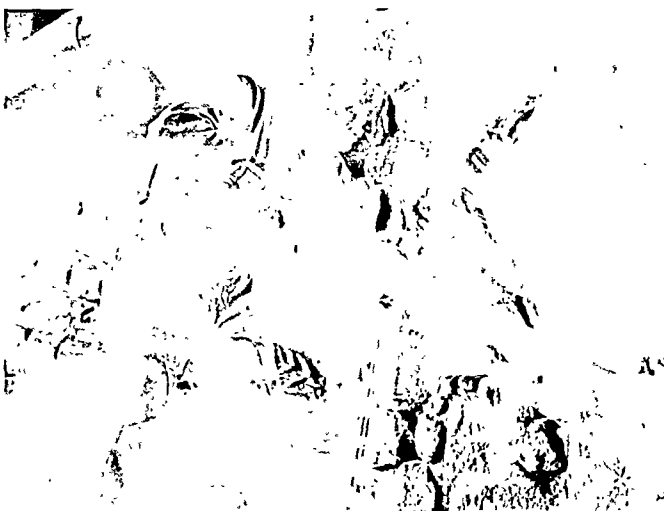
ican Iron and Steel Institute finally poured more than \$1,500,000 into six years of painstaking restoration. Archeologists uncovered some six tons of relics, including a mighty water wheel far beneath the town's busy Central Street.

A rusty scum on Massachusetts bogs indicated iron ore in the muck beneath—and inspired the original project. Timber for charcoal abounded. Rock from the nearby coast added a fluxing material to remove impurities. English and colonial investors, the "Company of Undertakers," raised capital.

John Winthrop, son of the Bay Colony's governor and organizer of these backers, set up an unsuccessful blast furnace in Braintree, south of Boston. Richard



Flames leap, a 500-pound hammer clangs as a guide demonstrates



STEP BACK IN TIME at Saugus and in your mind's eye you'll see sweating colonials in leather aprons charge the blast furnace with layers of charcoal, "bogge" ore, and rock. A water wheel pumps the flapping leather bellows; smoke billows from the furnace top. To the bottom seeps iron "made so very fluid by the Violence of the Heat," to be forged into the tools of a wilderness civilization.

The tap plug is broken and liquid fire flows out. Some is molded into brittle castware. The rest runs into furrows in the floor. The main channel hardens into a "sow" bar while side rivulets become "pigs"—like a sow feeding her young.

Amid a spray of sparks and the ring of metal against metal, craftsmen in the forge heat and reheat the pigs, and hammer carbon from the cast iron to produce wrought "merchant bars." Some are sold at the site, some shipped to Boston and to other colonies. Others go next door to be rolled into strips or to be slit into "small barres or roddees to serve for the making of nayles and other thyngs."

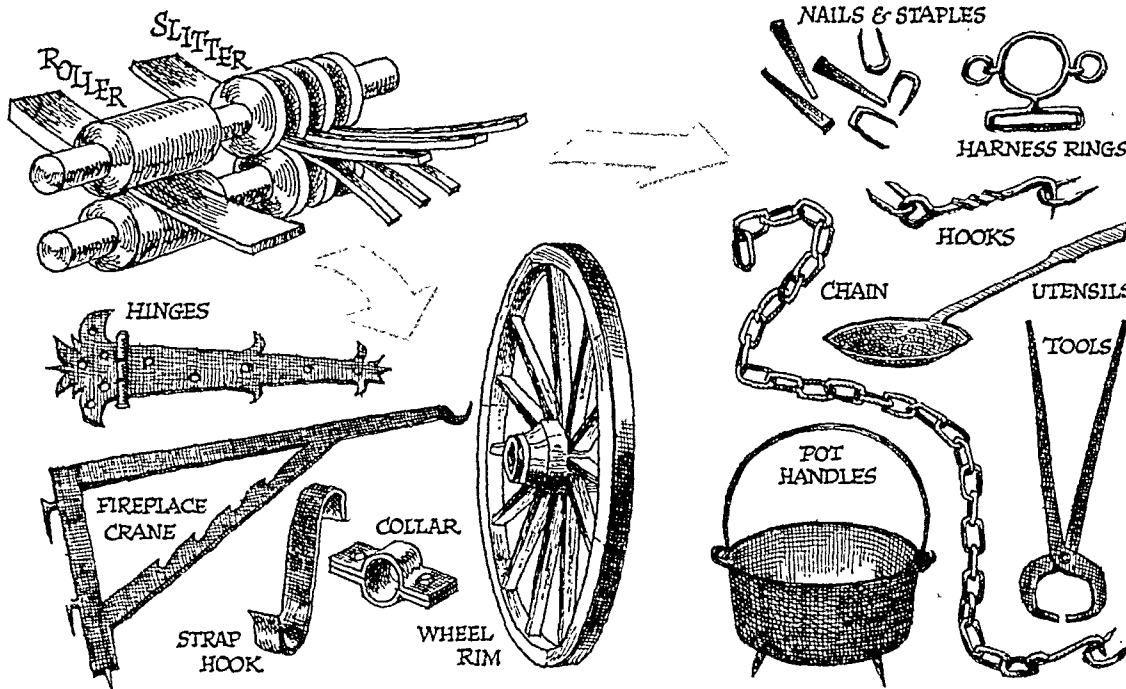
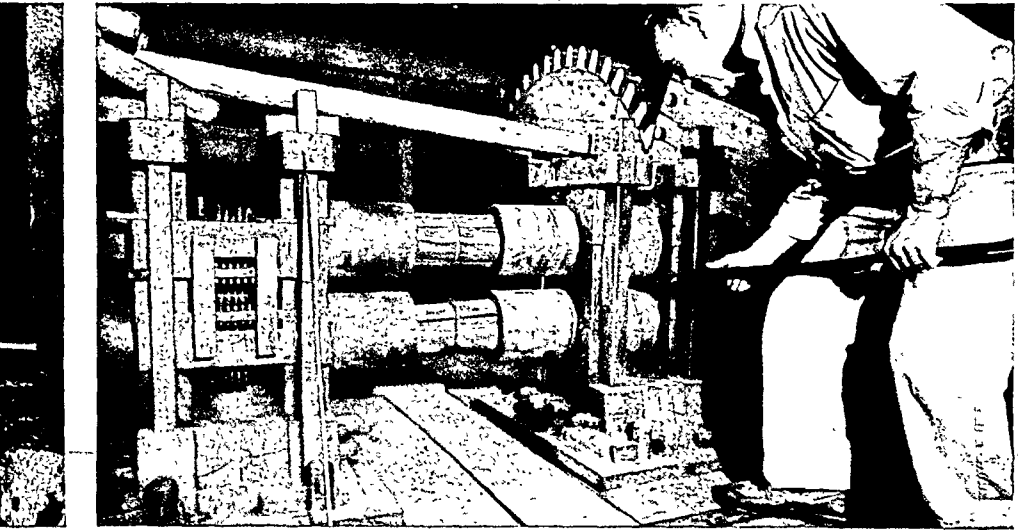
*In the 17th century
great labor
produced small quantities
of a much-needed metal:
wrought iron*

Leader, a man of "skill in mynes, and tryall of mettals," replaced Winthrop, moving the operation to Saugus, north of Boston, where a river navigable below the works could be dammed. In 1648 Governor Winthrop noted, "the Furnace runnes 8 tun per weeke, and their barre Iron is as good as Spanish."

Saugus employed some 185 ironworkers, miners, woodcutters, and boatmen, and housed them in a "company town." Included were Scots, captured in battle by Cromwell, indentured to the ironworks, and bedded down, some say, in the "Scotch"-Boardman House. No fortunes grew from America's first "big business," but Saugus trained the men who built much of the colonial iron industry.

for Saugus visitors how wrought iron was forged. In rolling and slitting mill the guide rolls a bar flat.

SAUGUS IRONWORKS RESTORATION. LEFT, KATHLEEN REVIS, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER. BELOW, PAUL R. HOFFMASTER



Rebellious Puritans spread out



Roger Williams, champion of the rights of red man and white, flees in exile to found a refuge.

PURITAN ELDERS sought iron, but when they found it in Roger Williams's unbending opinions they liked it not. Williams, pastor of Salem Church, denied the Bay Colony's right to take Indian lands and preached that the state could not control man's conscience. "Forced worship stincks in Gods nostrils," he later wrote.

Ordered to deny these views, Williams, whose hot Welsh temper made him "passionate and resentful under provocation," refused. Banishment was the only answer to this rebel. To escape deportation to England, Williams plodded south through snowy wilds to Manton's Neck on the Skeekonk River. There, with 12 companions, he founded a settlement named "in commemoration of God's Providence," and drew up America's first document separating church and state. This covenant provided a local government "only in civill things." No cleric would deal out civil punishments in Rhode Island. In 1638 Williams helped found America's first Baptist church.

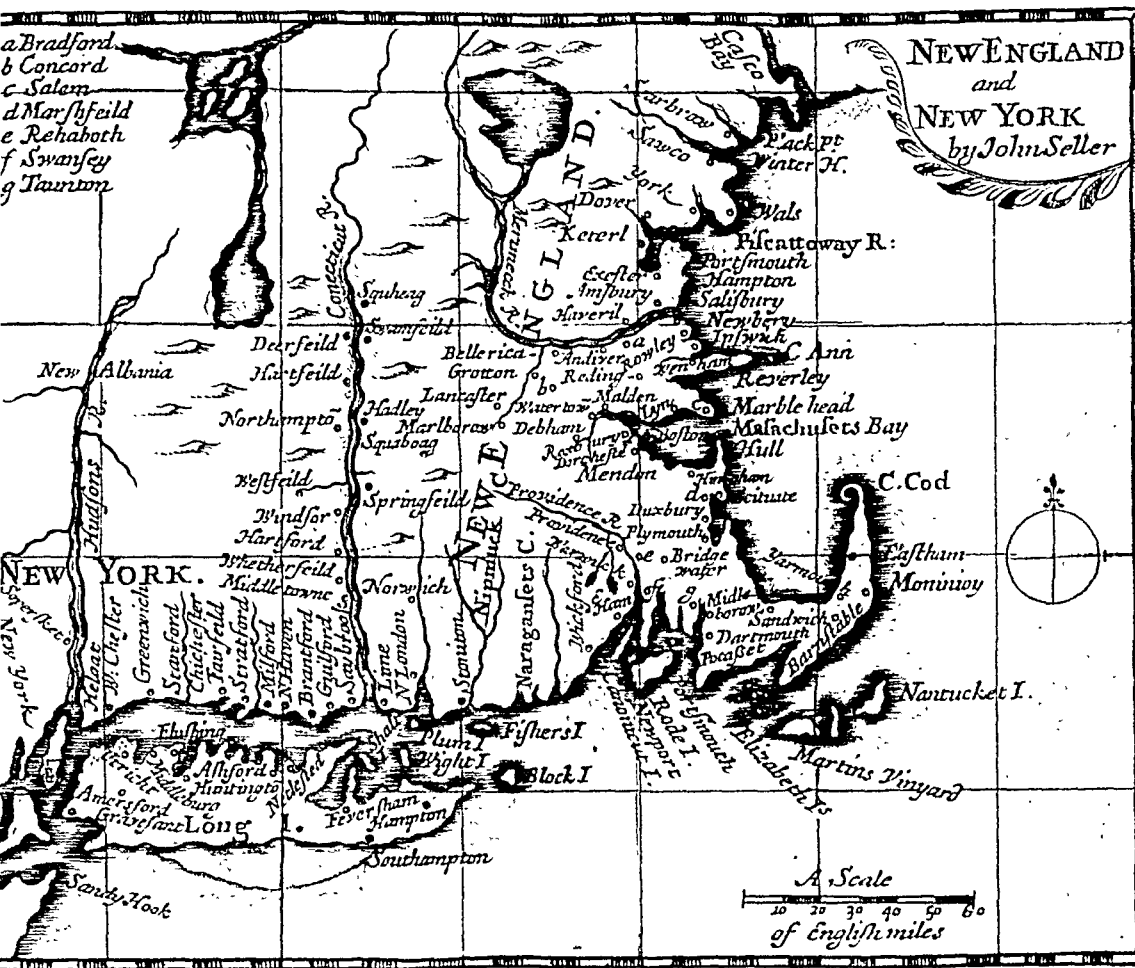
The Boston elders labeled Rhode Island a "sewer" to catch the "Lord's debris." But the colony thrived on its tolerance.

Anne Hutchinson, an ambitious Bostonian of "nimble wit, active spirit and voluble tongue," became a sort of evangelist, stridently naming those citizens who deserved to be saved and those who did not. When she included some of the most prominent clergy in the latter category, her fate was sealed. Out she went, and Roger Williams purchased from the Indians some land for her followers at what is now Portsmouth, Rhode Island.

Rev. Thomas Hooker of Cambridge Church thought freemen, not just church members, deserved the vote; that a congregation's authority should reside in itself, not stem from the elders. When his flock tired of fighting the sandy soil and cramped quarters around burgeoning Boston, he got permission from the General Court, the Bay Colony's ruling body, to remove to the fertile region along the Connecticut River, discovered and claimed for Holland in 1614 by Adriaen Block.

In the summer of 1636 Hooker led 100 men, women, and children and 160 head of cattle westward along an Indian trail into the wilderness. Living on milk from their cows, they fought through swamp and thicket. At what is now Hartford they found wide meadows around a Dutch trading fort.

Three years earlier a small expedition from Plymouth Colony had sailed up the



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS AND (LEFT) BETTMANN ARCHIVE

Villages dotting this late 17th century map contrast with New England's howling wilderness two generations earlier. Puritans, overcrowded around Boston, moved as entire congregations, seeking elbowroom to build towns.

river, defied the fort's two cannons, and staked out Windsor to the north. Immigrants from Watertown had planted Wethersfield while William Pynchon, destined to prosper in fur trading, settled a dozen families at Springfield.

These scattered villages with their thatch-roofed, salt-box houses braving the edge of the unknown sought unity in the Fundamental Orders, America's first written constitution. Hooker spread the seeds of democracy from his Hartford pulpit: "The choice of public magistrates belongs to the people. . . . The foundation of authority is laid, first, in the free consent of the people." This principle, in Connecticut's royal charter of 1662, affected New Haven (founded by London merchants in 1638) and 11 Long Island communities, Gravesend to Southampton.

But Puritanism still ruled daily life. Worshipers at Hooker's church might see one Walter Gray publicly corrected for "labouring to invegle the affections of Mr. Hoocker's Mayde." For the average God-fearing Puritan such "sinful dalliance" went down as hard as Venice treacle, a popular cure-all of boiled snakes, white wine, herbs, and opium. Public whippings for inveterate idleness and pil-



Lady Pepperrell House graces Kittery Point, Maine. Victor over the French at Louisbourg (1745), her husband was first Yankee baronet.

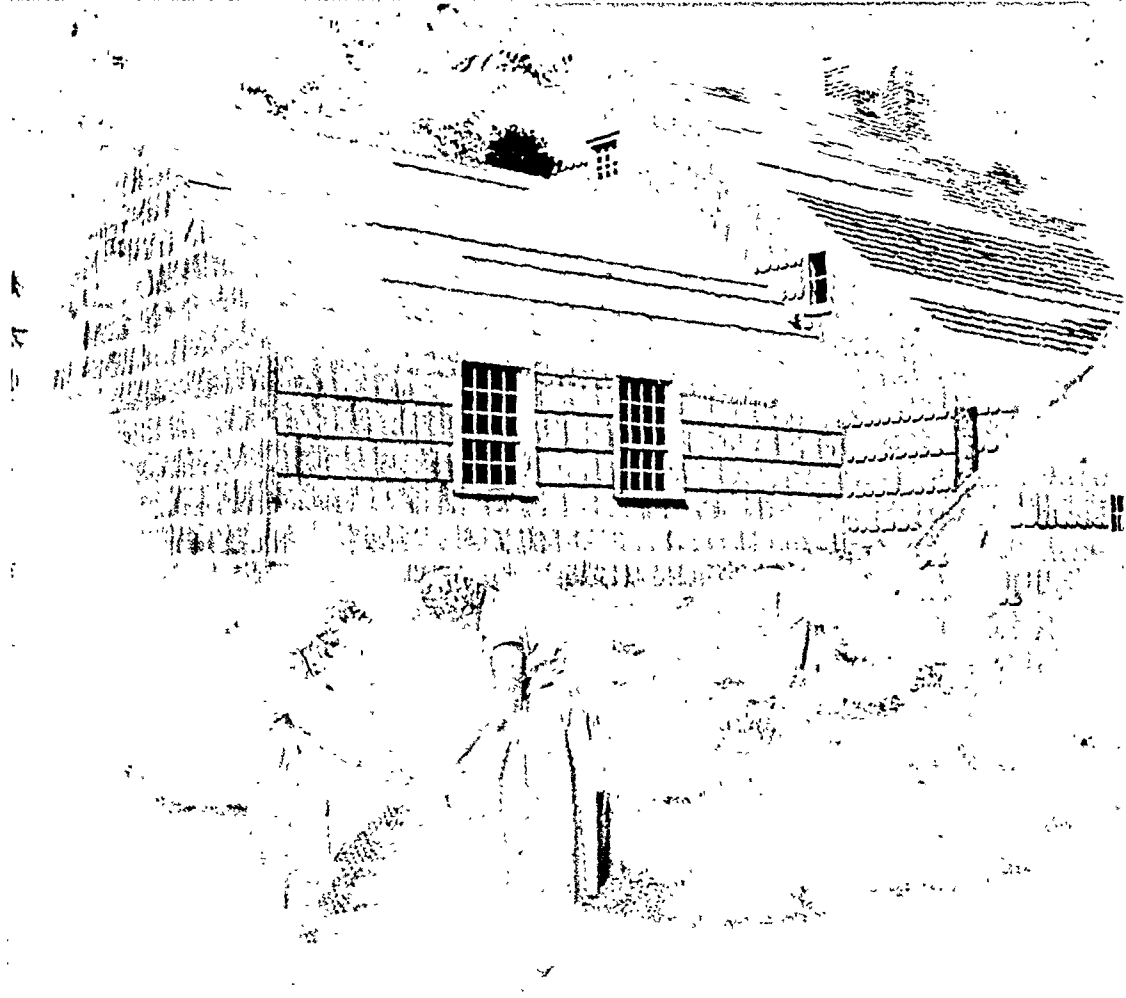


Roger Williams preached at Smith's Castle, near Wickford, Rhode Island, rebuilt in 1677 after burning by Indians. Colonists killed in the Great Swamp Fight are buried nearby.



Clemence House, Providence "stone-ender," is tied to a huge fireplace. Most New England homes had a central chimney.

FROM LEFT: MAINE DEPARTMENT OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT, WILLARD R. CULVER, L. F. KINNEY, E. J. CYR. BELOW: ROBERT F. SISSON, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER



Sheldon's Tavern, one of the fine white buildings in historic Litchfield, Connecticut, was raised in colonial simplicity in 1760, then embellished with a mansard roof and Palladian portico.

Washington, in 1781, had upstairs room on the right.

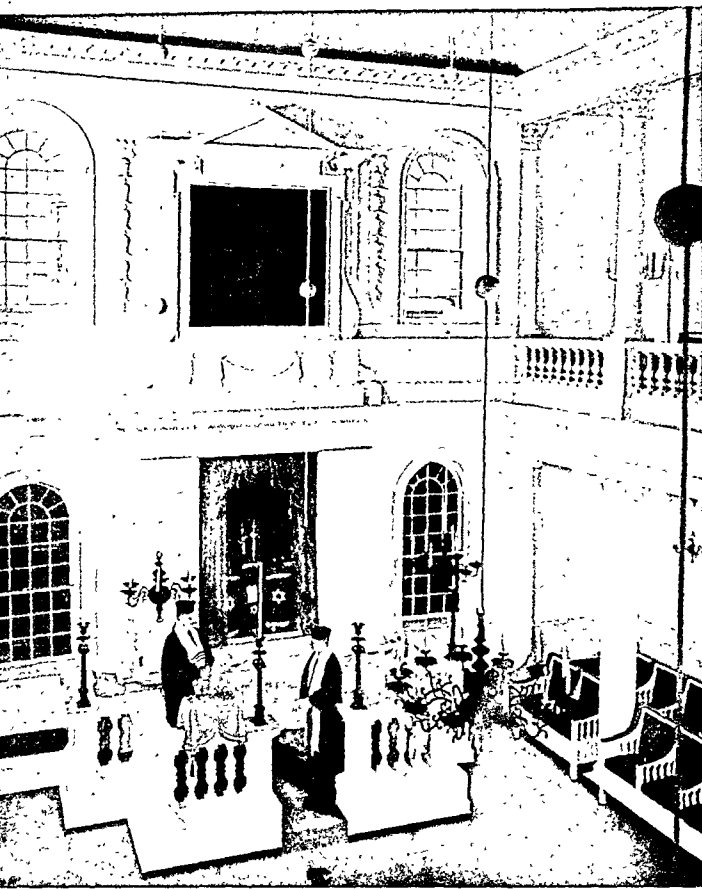
Thomas Lee House stands in stark dignity beside a quiet road in East Lyme, Connecticut. It began in 1664 as a single room with a chamber above but grew with the family. The owner had 15 children.



SEDGE LEBLANC AND (ABOVE) EDWARDS PARK, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

Rev. Henry Whitfield built Connecticut's oldest stone house at Guilford in 1639-40.

Settling on Long Island, New Englanders built salt-box homes like the Thompson House at Setauket.



Newport stood as a beacon of religious freedom. Jews founded a congregation in 1658 and dedicated Touro Synagogue (above), America's oldest, in 1763. At Old Colony House (right), where Rhode Island's General Assembly met, Catholic Mass was read in 1780. Quakers built Friends Meeting House (far right) in 1699.

lorying for unreligious talk kept minds fastened on the virtues of work and of reverence for God, not the king. Consumed with his fight for survival on the frontier, the Connecticut settler forgot England, forging a fierce independence that became his legacy to America.

But religious freedom still centered in "Rogue's Island." William Coddington, a friend of Anne Hutchinson, quit Portsmouth in 1639, moved down Aquidneck Island, and settled Newport. It became a religious asylum. Spanish-Portuguese Jews soon took root there and gave the country its oldest synagogue. Quakers, who in Massachusetts risked having ears lopped off, tongues bored with hot poker, or necks stretched, congregated at Newport and built a meetinghouse. Presbyterians, Moravians, quietists, even freethinkers abounded.

Newport soon outstripped Providence in commerce. By the early 1700's it



vivors refused to abandon their wilderness outpost, and a farm village rose again, prospering from the rich soil.

Today visitors find "The Street" lined with lovely elm-shaded 18th century homes—also grim reminders. One gravestone recalls the 48 killed in 1704; another that Parson Williams's wife, taken captive, "fell by the rage of Ye Barbarous Enemy."

FRONTIER life was not usually so violent. Massasoit honored a peace treaty 40 years. Fair laws protected and soothed the red men. When Arthur Peach and his gang murdered an Indian trader, Plymouth hanged them. Her settlers paid for Indian land. The Bay Colony's intolerant Puritans, however, saw the devil in the non-Christian savage, and so felt justified in seizing his property. The Indians in turn watched with growing alarm as settlers overflowed into their hunting grounds.

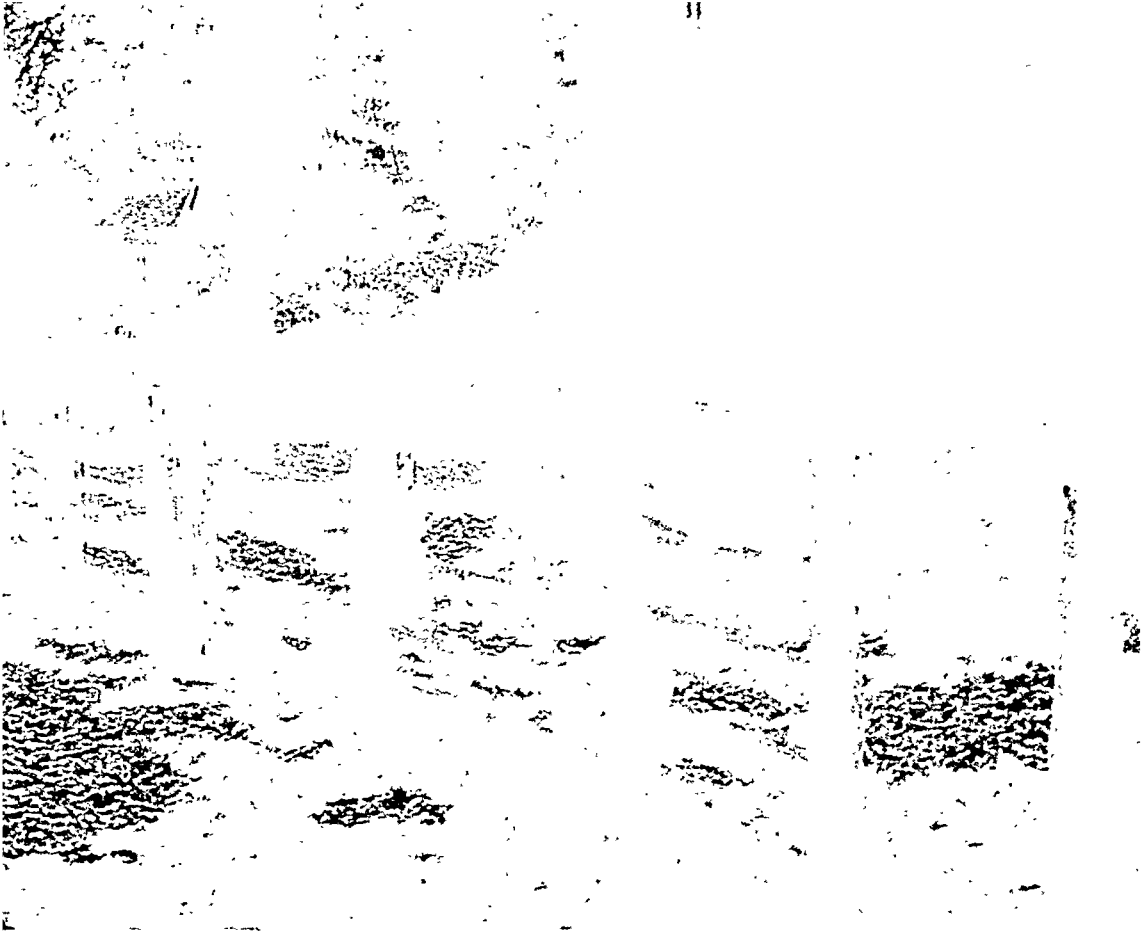
Philip, son of Massasoit, nursed a hatred of whites that in 1675 erupted into King Philip's War. Savages from encircling forests attacked half New England's towns. Lawmakers saw God's judgment on the colony for immodest clothes and hairdos. After a year of terror, militia tracked down Philip's band in Rhode Island, butchered them in the Great Swamp Fight.

Atrocities continued in the north as French and Indians swept down in Queen Anne's War. Jesuit historian Charlevoix noted complacently that in 1703 "they effected some ravages of no great consequence; they killed, however, about three hundred men." The next year they fell on Deerfield. The Peace of Utrecht in 1713 finally pacified New England until the French and Indian War a half century later.



Old Deerfield's quiet charm bespeaks peace; its tombstones tell of sudden death. A survivor's marker notes he "was twice Captivated by the Indian Salvages." Connecticut Valley homes with

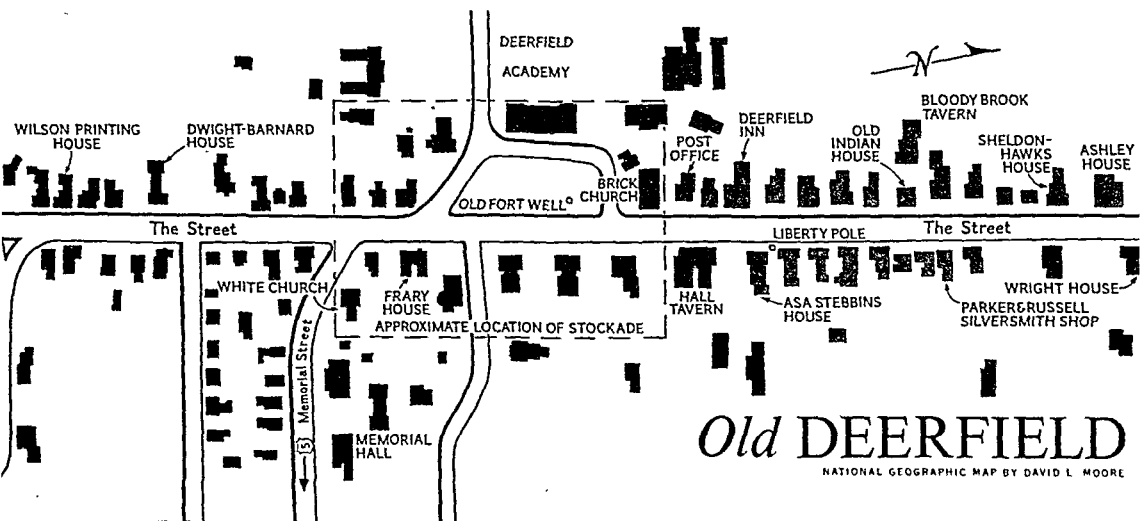




MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF. BELOW LEFT: AL DAIGLE

unpainted clapboards, narrow, unshuttered windows, and dignified doorways line the mile-long street, evoking life on the frontier 75 miles west of Boston. A fiery Tory preacher lived in the Ashley

House (right). Locked out of church by townsmen, story has it he axed his way in. Sheldon-Hawks House, also open to visitors, stands next door. Only Frary House witnessed the 1704 raid.





Peter Stuyvesant ruled New Amsterdam with a fist of iron, 1647 to 1664. His town stood at the lower end of the island Peter Minuit bought from the Indians for "\$24 worth of trinkets."

In this first view, drawn about 1626, the fort is exaggerated, the landscape reversed. The Dutch settlers would hardly recognize Manhattan today!

Amsterdam op de Manhatans



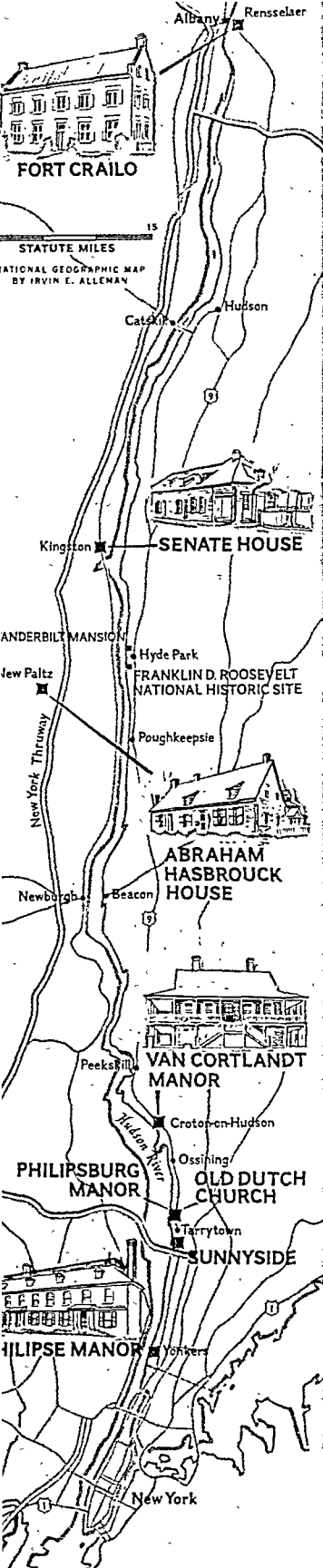
STOKES COLLECTION NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
AND (LEFT) BROWN BROTHERS

THE DUTCH ON THE HUDSON

THE *Half Moon* sailed slowly up the “great streame” that led into the wilderness. Henry Hudson and his men gazed in awe at wooded mountains and watched cautiously as “swarthy natives” paddled out to trade. Hudson, an English captain, had been hired by the Dutch in 1609 to find a new route to China. Instead, when shallowing water turned him back near present-day Albany, he had established a Dutch claim to the river that bears his name.

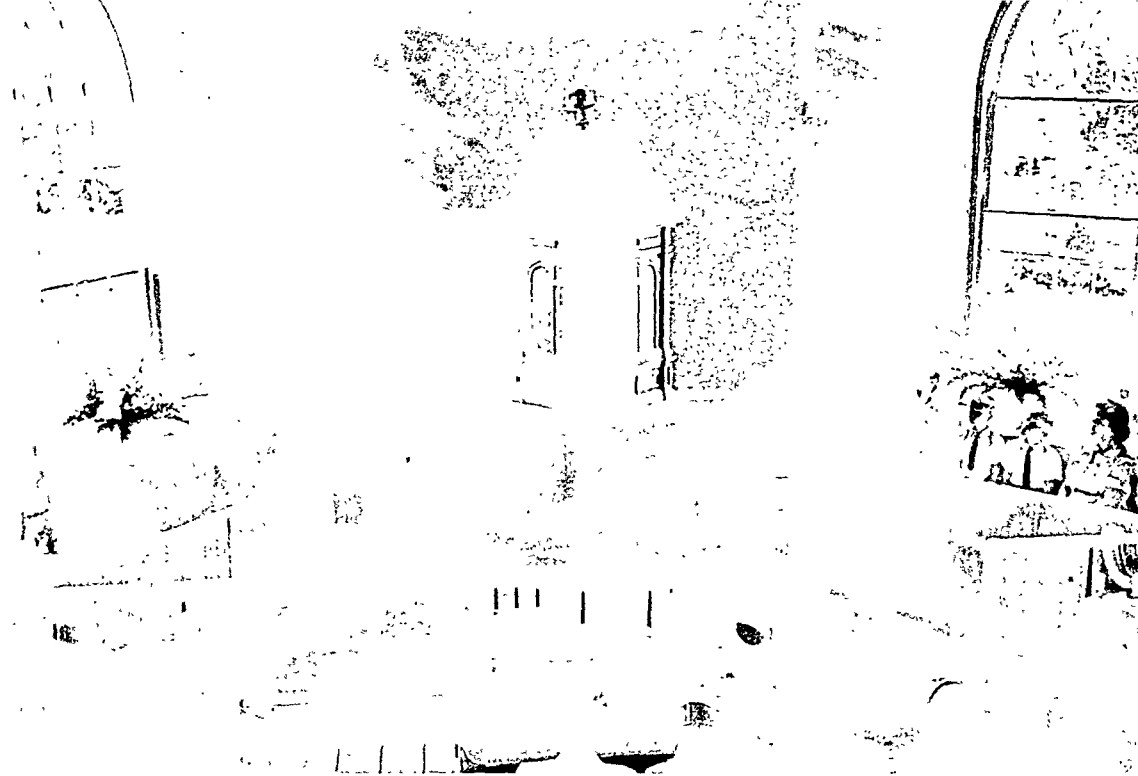
Fur traders followed. Then in 1624 the Dutch West India Company settled a few Walloon families on the site of Albany. They built Fort Orange and traded trinkets for pelts with the Iroquois who came from the darkly wooded Mohawk Valley to the west. A year later the company established New Amsterdam on Manhattan Island. But growth was slow. Dutchmen were reluctant to leave their prosperous, tolerant homeland. The West India Company was more interested in quick fur profits and raiding the Spanish treasure fleets than in colonizing. Its governors proved inept; strongest of the lot was peg-legged Peter Stuyvesant.

Thumping ashore in 1647, this truculent old soldier declared he would “be as a father over his children.” And it was a rowdy family he took on. New Amsterdam was by then a lusty frontier seaport. Thatched wooden homes huddled about the fort, and the blades of the lumberyard windmill moved in drowsy arcs across the blue sky. Blond children darted down rutted dirt streets, dodging creaking carts



and snorting hogs. Burghers in broad-brimmed hats and baggy trousers strode purposefully in and out of warehouses. From the White Horse and other taverns came oaths and raucous laughter. Backwoods traders and foreign sailors sought to drown months of hardship with mugs of beer and brandy while they spun wild tales to townsmen who listened through the smoke from long-stemmed pipes. Tongues babbled in Swedish, French, Danish, German, and Portuguese, for the colony welcomed all.

Beyond the town sprawled the domains of the *patroons*. The Dutch tried to spur colonization by importing feudalism. Any member of the company who would bring 50 families to settle was offered 16 miles of river frontage. This patroon "would forever possess all the lands . . . fruits . . . and lower jurisdictions" thereof. But vassalage did not fit the frontier; only the 700,000-acre estate of Amsterdam jeweler Kiliaen Van Rensselaer prospered under Dutch



NEW YORK TIMES AND (LEFT) B. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

Philipsburg Manor and the Old Dutch Church recall Hudson Valley days when haughty aristocrats held sway. Building his stone home in 1683, Frederick Philipse provided a secret passage so he could eavesdrop on his indentured servants. In church, his family sat in pews while the servants stood in a gallery. Ichabod Crane glimpsed this Sleepy Hollow church as he fled from the Headless Horseman. Washington Irving lies in the churchyard.

rule. Tenant farmers who tired of paying rents settled at Esopus, now Kingston, and won their own charter and *schout*, or sheriff. Here and there along the river hearty *boers* carved homesteads in the forests.

These men did not bow easily to Stuyvesant's tyrannical rule. But if the governor spoke often in "foul language better befitting the fish market," he did have cause. Swedish settlers defied Dutch claims on the Delaware. New Englanders pushed down the Connecticut River and spread over Long Island. Indian wars flamed as hotheaded Dutch spread their farms into ancient hunting grounds and the redskins struck back with tomahawk and fire. Raiding the Esopus settlement in 1663, they left the fields strewn with "roasted bodies, like burning sheaves behind the mower."

Stuyvesant faced a showdown when four English ships dropped anchor off Manhattan in 1664. Their commander claimed the colony for the Duke of York, the king's brother. Hopelessly outgunned, the burghers feared destruction of their gabled homes with yellow brick walls and red tiled roofs. They remembered that the governor had hamstrung their efforts for representative government. They refused to fight. Stuyvesant fumed and stomped, then sighed, "Let it be so."

New Amsterdam became New York, in honor of the duke. But the Dutch stayed on, and so did their ways. The great estates, converted to English-style manors, now flourished. Philipsburg Manor, built by one of Stuyvesant's former officials, provides a glimpse into the old life.

A brook bubbles by the reconstructed grist mill that ground the corn the tenants carted from miles around. The church Frederick Philipse built still stands. On Sundays its pealing bell brought in neighboring families, children well scrubbed, women in crisp white caps and billowing dresses. Within the two-foot walls of the great house are tables and chairs the lord of the manor chose for comfort rather than style. Rows of pewter glimmer on dining room shelves. In the kitchen's huge fireplace chickens once turned on the spit, browning over crackling logs. In smoke-darkened pots bubbled fruit preserves, giving off sweet aroma. No wonder Dutchmen loved to eat.

Other Dutch-built houses stand today to delight the visitor. Van Cortlandt Manor and Fort Crailo bear loopholes designed for use in Indian attacks. The hipped roof of Philipse Manor in Yonkers reflects English influence in the colony. Less pretentious are the Ten Broeck House, now called the Senate House, in Kingston, and the Abraham Hasbrouck House, one of several built by French Huguenots who settled New Paltz. Dutch names abound in New York City. The Bowery recalls *bouweries*, or farms, that once dotted Manhattan and spread along the Hudson. Wall Street follows the earthworks that once marked the city limits. And village names *Breuckelen* and *Haarlem* are recognizable in anglicized forms. Nearby Yonkers is named for a *jonker*, or nobleman, who once owned the land.

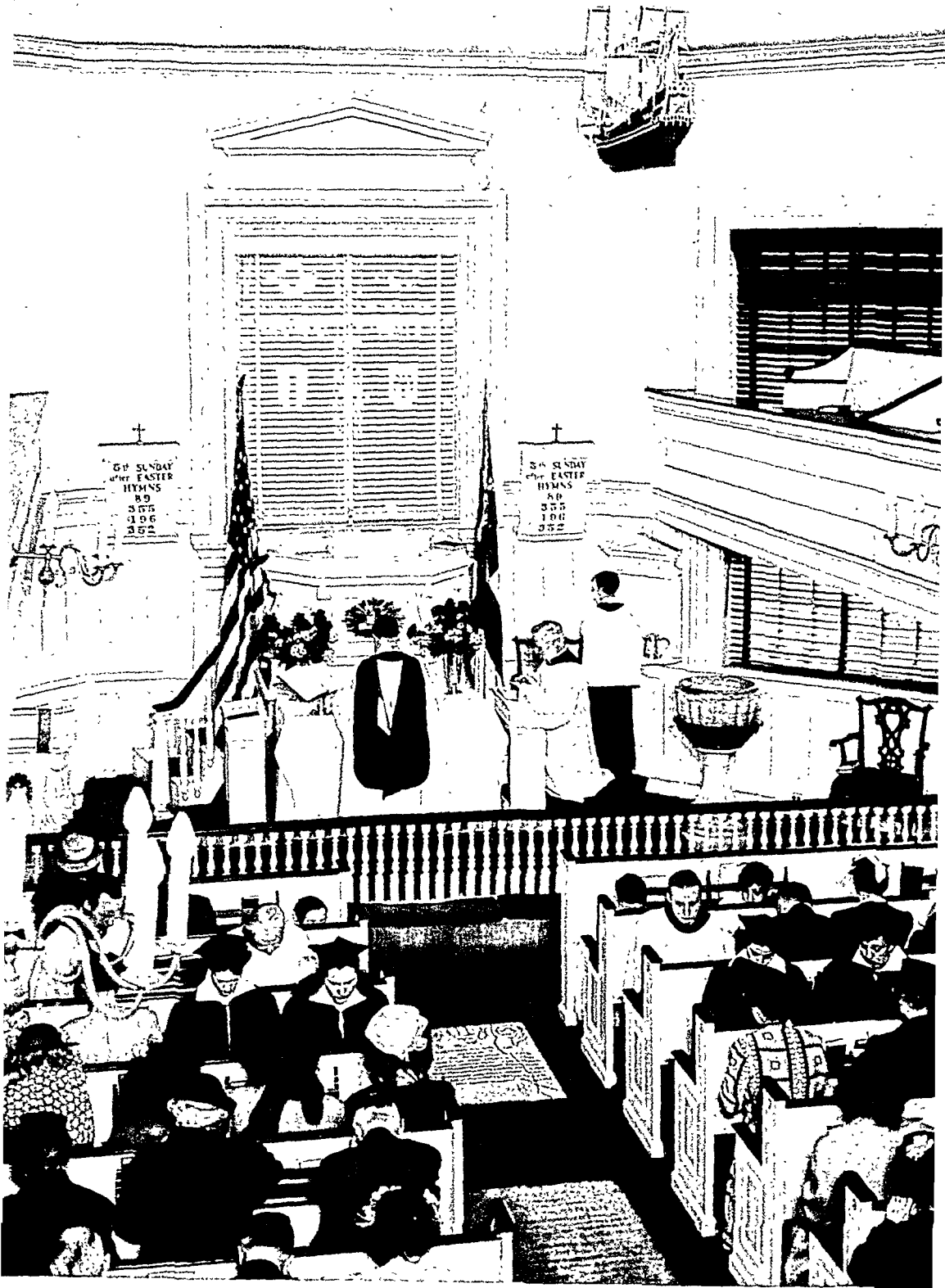
THE RICH flavor of Dutch life on the Hudson is perhaps best preserved in the writings of Washington Irving, who made his first trip up "this glorious river" in 1800. The sensitive young man wandered among shaded hollows and sleepy villages around Tarrytown, noting "a contagion in the very air . . . it breathed forth an atmosphere of dreams and fancies." His acquaintances served as models for fictional characters. The "ripe and melting" Katrina Van Tassel, courted by Ichabod Crane, is reputed to be a Van Alen girl from Kinderhook—a sweetheart of Irving's. Ichabod himself was modeled on another friend, Jesse Merwin, who generously applied the rod at the village schoolhouse.

Making a name with his lighthearted *Knickerbocker's History of New York*, Irving wrote *Rip Van Winkle* and *The Legend of Sleepy Hollow* in England after he failed there in business. He lived abroad for years, but returned to build Sunnyside and stay in the valley his pen had peopled with goblins and Dutchmen.

Bluish haze still shrouds the Hudson's mountains and coves, and you can sense there a timeless air of mystery and majesty. Legend has it that on dark nights along the Tappan Zee you can hear the splashing oars of Rambout Van Dam, a young Dutchman condemned to ply the river until judgment day. He broke the Sabbath by rowing home from a party. And Irving tells us that thunder from the Catskills signals the return each 20 years of Henry Hudson and his *Half Moon* crew, who play at ninepins and look down on the great river they explored long ago.

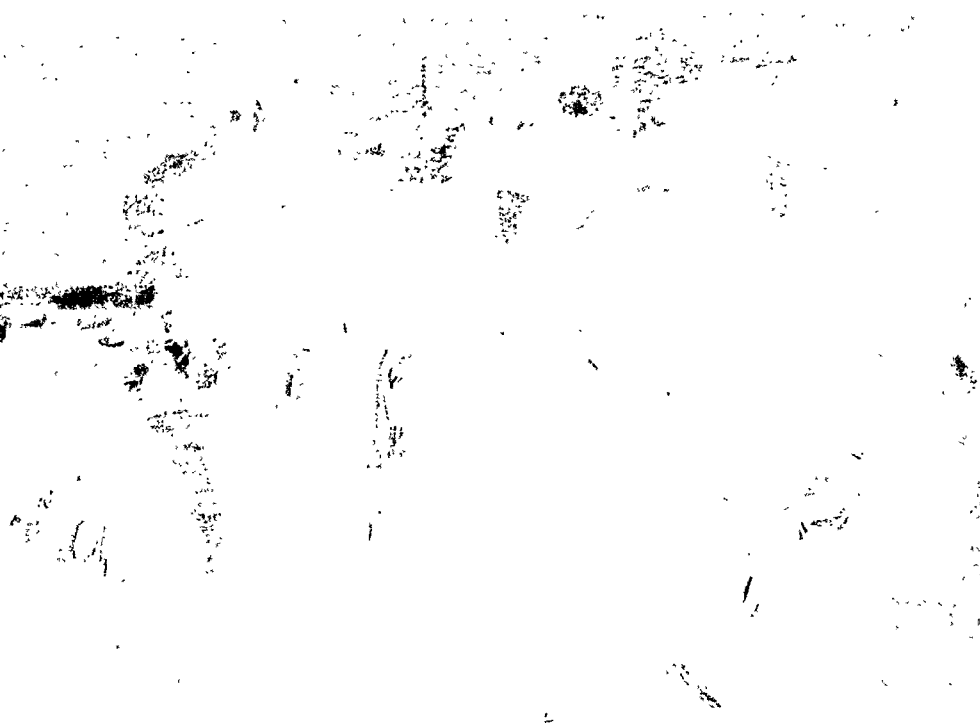
JOHN J. PUTMAN

Rip Van Winkle finds his village changed when he returns after a sleep of 20 years. Rip's creator, Washington Irving, lived at Sunnyside (lower), a house "made up of gable-ends, and as full of angles as an old cocked hat."



ROBERT F. SISSON NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

Philadelphia's *Gloria Dei* Church was built in 1700 by descendants of original Swedish Lutheran colonists. Episcopalians now worship under a model of the first settlers' ship.



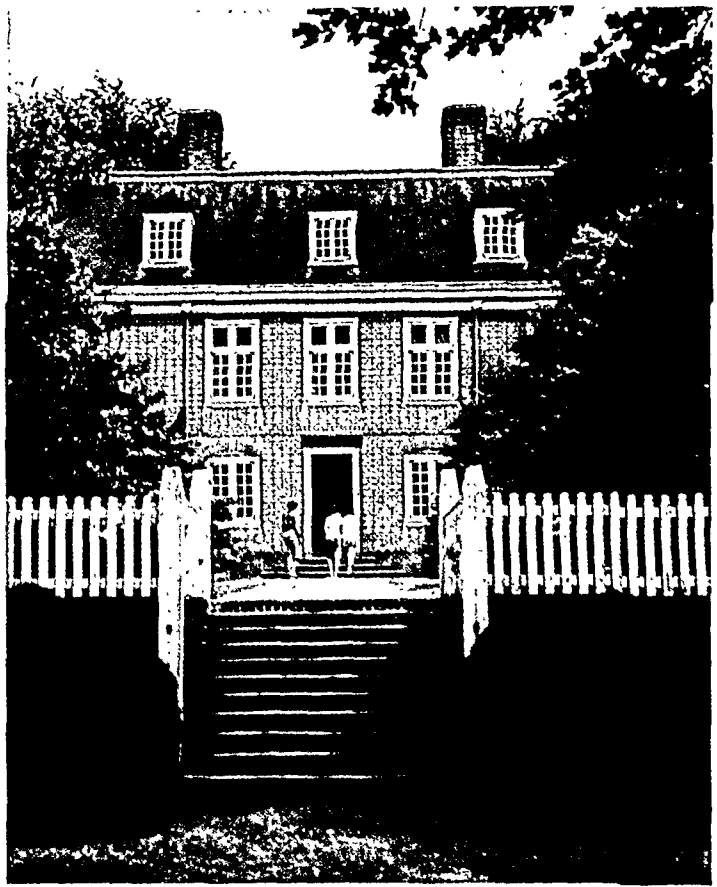
PENNSYLVANIA ACADEMY OF THE FINE ARTS AND (RIGHT) MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

PENN'S WOODS

"A fit place for younger brothers and men of small estates"

THE BROAD Delaware River in its lovelier stretches mirrors the white summer clouds as they pass overhead. In such a manner did the colony of Pennsylvania reflect the mind of its gentle Quaker founder.

William Penn, son of a hard-fighting English admiral, wrote, "If we would amend the World, we should mend Our selves." He sought to mend himself by turning his back on the glittering life of a courtier and embracing the "honestly simple" beliefs of the Society of Friends. For preaching against the ritual and dogma of the Church of England, he was tossed into prison. He decided "there can be no reason to persecute any man in this world about anything that belongs to the next."



William Penn pledges eternal friendship with the Delawares at Shackamaxon (now in Philadelphia), in this idealized painting by Benjamin West. The Quaker leader welcomed Indians and colonists alike to his home, Pennsbury Manor. Reconstructed above, it overlooks the Delaware near Morrisville.

But England did not agree, and Penn turned to America. Perhaps there “an example may be set up to the nations . . . an holy experiment.” Pressing a debt owed his father by the Crown, Penn won the grant of a huge colony. He called it Sylvania (woods). Charles II added “Penn” to honor the old admiral.

Penn’s first settlers sailed up the Delaware in 1681 and found the cabins of Dutch, Swedes, and English dotting the wilderness. But Penn, landing in 1682 at New Castle, then convening his first General Assembly at Upland (which he re-named Chester), pioneered in men’s minds. He decreed not only religious freedom but that “no Law can be made; nor Money raised, but by the Peoples consent.”

At Shackamaxon and other meeting places Penn welded a bond of friendship with the Indians. Instead of making them the usual token payments for land, he insisted on a fair price and told his settlers to “sit down lovingly among them.” No Indian massacre stained Penn’s Woods while he was there.

At the mouth of the Schuylkill Penn gazed with pleasure on the “greene

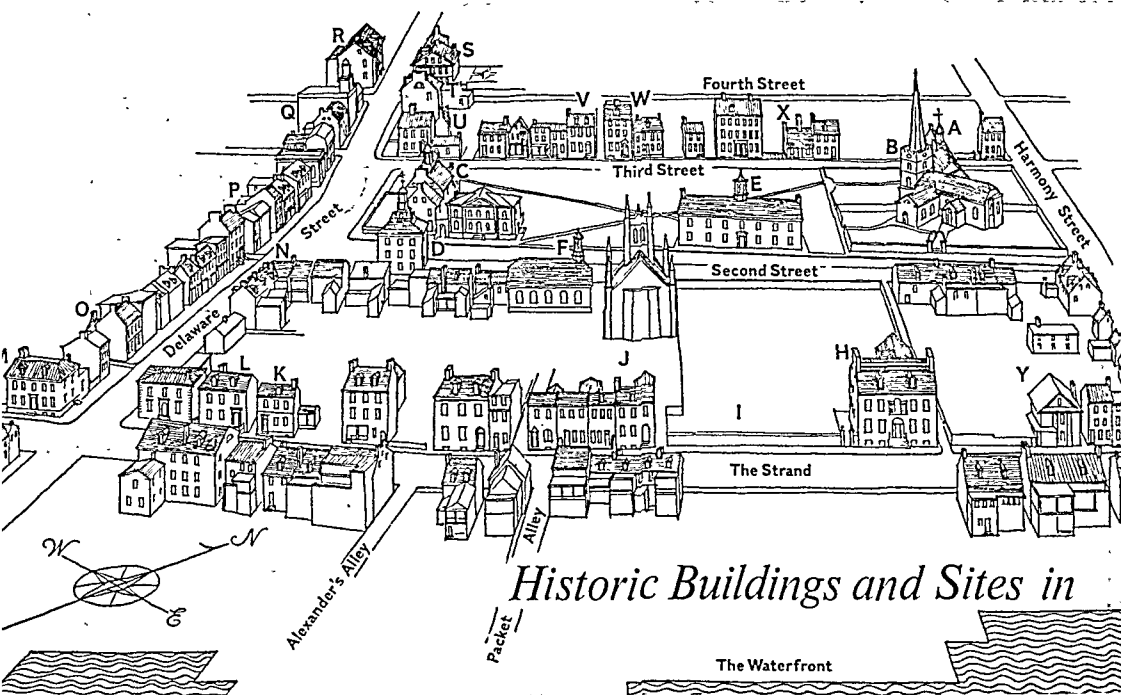


HOWELL WALKER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

Half-timbered walls of Gideon Gilpin's farmhouse at Chadds Ford (map, page 212) evoke early Quaker days. Brick and cobble grace New Castle (below), where Penn landed, adding Delaware to his domain. Old Dutch House and Amstel House are museums.

Country Towne" laid out by his agent and gave the streets names like Walnut, Chestnut, and Pine. Here at Philadelphia, City of Brotherly Love, a stream of colonists landed. By 1685 more than 7,000 had come, stirred by advertisements of "Pennsylvania . . . a fit place for Younger Brothers, and Men of Small Estates . . . The Air is generally clear and sweet . . . Corn produceth four hundred fold."

English Quakers settled early in Philadelphia, Chester, and Bucks counties. Welsh Friends spread along the Schuylkill. Germans, the vanguard of a huge migration, founded Germantown in 1683. Their fellow countrymen spread in a broad arc across the southeast of the colony. Scotch-Irish pushed past them to the western mountains. Some, finding land taken, filtered into the Shenandoah



Valley and the back country of North Carolina.

It was a good life for the Quakers, who could "thee" and "thou" as they wished, and trade diligently in grain, beef, and salt pork from the countryside. Inside neat brick dwellings such as the Letitia House (now in Fairmount Park, Philadelphia) plump housewives loaded tables with "ducks, hams, tarts, custards, porter and punch." Officials built big country homes like Graeme Park and Stenton (see map, page 212).

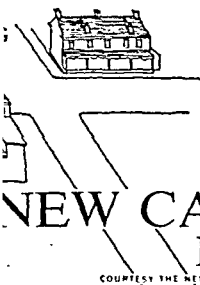
Modern visitors sense the plain, deeply sincere nature of Quaker worship at the Buckingham Meeting House at Lahaska, near New Hope. Here the Friends gathered on "First Days." There was no clergy. When a man felt the call to pray he prayed. Others stood, broad-brimmed hat in hand, until the prayer ended.

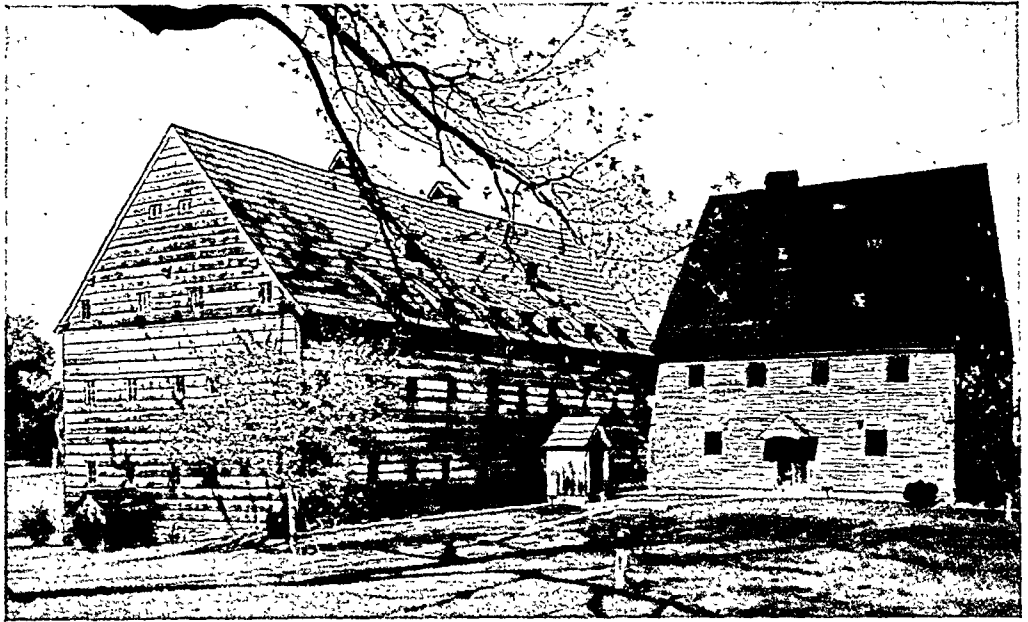
- | | |
|-----------------------|----------------------|
| A THE ACADEMY | N CLOUD'S ROW |
| B IMMANUEL CHURCH | O ROSEMONT HOUSE |
| C COURT HOUSE | P "PENN" HOUSE |
| D TOWN HALL | Q K J VAN DYKE HOUSE |
| E ARSENAL | R NICHOLAS VAN DYKE |
| F PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH | HOUSE |
| G THOMAS HOUSE | S AMSTEL HOUSE |
| H READ HOUSE | T CHANCELLOR JOHNS |
| I 1st READ HOUSE SITE | HOUSE |
| J DUTCH BURIAL GROUND | U KENSEY JOHNS HOUSE |
| K McWILLIAMS HOUSE | V RODNEY HOUSE |
| L GUNNING BEDFORD | W GEMMILL HOUSE |
| HOUSE | X OLD DUTCH HOUSE |
| M VAN LEUVENIGH HOUSE | Y TILE HOUSE SITE |



ROBERT F. SISSON, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

New Hope, on the Delaware, preserves much of the flavor of Pennsylvania's past. Visitors examine an antique spice cabinet of pewter, brass, and copper.

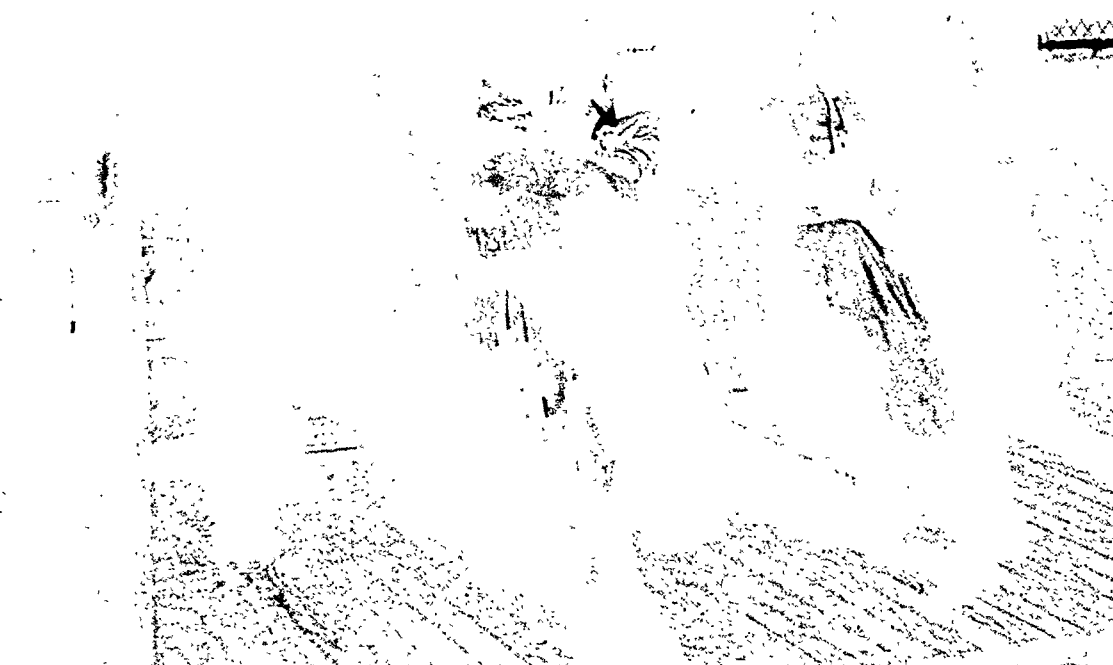




The Plain People of Pennsylvania

TO NO PEOPLE did Penn's promise of a "free colony for all mankind" mean more than to the war-weary, persecuted Germans of the Rhine Valley. Reaching Pennsylvania they told their new neighbors they were *Deutsch*. To English ears this sounded like "Dutch," hence today's "Pennsylvania Dutch."

They planted a variety of religious sects in the new land. German Seventh-Day Baptists built Ephrata Cloister and lived in austere piety like monks and nuns. Moravians practiced their "General Economy" at Bethlehem. The Amish still cling to their folkways. Their neat homes in Lancaster and other farming counties are bare of curtains and lack such worldly luxuries as electricity. Their black coats

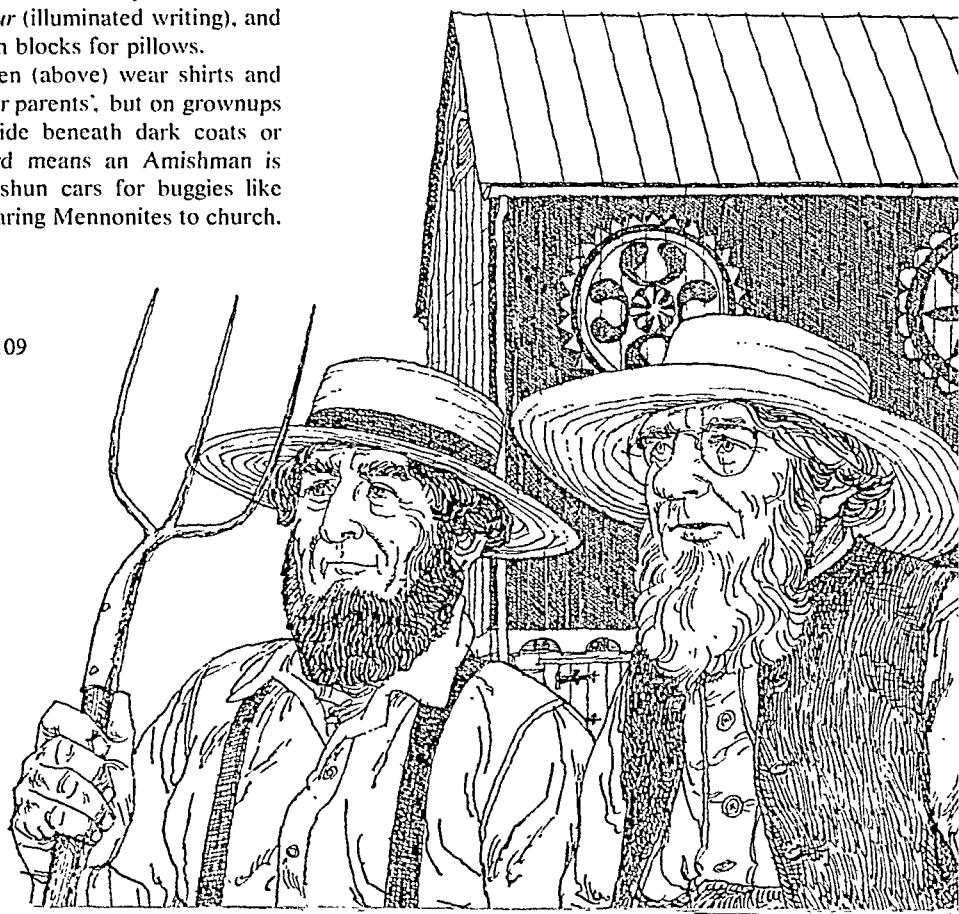


HOWELL WALKER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF, AND (BELOW) PAUL R. HOFFMASTER

At Ephrata Cloister (upper left) Conrad Beissel's followers wrote hymns, revived the art of *fraktur* (illuminated writing), and slept on wooden blocks for pillows.

Amish children (above) wear shirts and dresses like their parents', but on grownups bright colors hide beneath dark coats or aprons. A beard means an Amishman is married. They shun cars for buggies like those below bearing Mennonites to church.

109





MAYNARD OWEN WILLIAMS AND (BELOW) INDEX OF AMERICAN DESIGN

"Oompah" sounds sweeter from a green tuba garnished with hearts and flowers! Pennsylvania Dutch daub tulips and *distelfinks* (allegorical birds) on everything from *taufscheine* (baptismal certificates) to tin coffeepots.



and unadorned dress earn them the name "plain people," which they share with somber-suited Mennonites, Brethren, and others. All farmed wisely. Today the "Dutch" country is renowned for fat cows, green pastures, golden wheat, and big red barns with mysterious "hex signs."

Penn provided his colonists with a beneficent frame of government, but his relations with them were not always happy. He learned that democratic precedents lead to fresh demands. In 1701, badgered by quarrels and debts, he returned to England. No more would he live in his beloved Pennsbury Manor on the banks of the Delaware. But he had planted well.

"Had New England, New York, and Virginia been swept out of existence in 1800," wrote Henry Adams, "democracy could have better spared them all than have lost Pennsylvania."

JOHN J. PUTMAN



The Kutztown folk festival inspires bonneted Aunt Sophia Bailer to share her cure for warts. Other "Dutch" women exchange cherished recipes for *schnitz un knepp* (dried apples and dumplings) and *hinkle bott boi* (chicken pot pie).



The Colonials

WHY DID THOUSANDS OF IMMIGRANTS to America risk the hazards of the sea, the greed of ship captains, the tomahawks of savages, and the uncertainties of life in an alien land? Why did they endure incredible hardships to establish homes that stretched, by the middle of the 18th century, from Maine to Georgia? The firstcomers hoped for quick wealth; others sought adventure or escape from a tyrannical father, a railing wife, or the imminence of debtors' prison. Some wanted freedom of worship. Some came unwillingly at the behest of sheriff and judge, for the authorities regarded exported criminals as good riddance—and just possibly they might rehabilitate themselves and do some good for the new country.

The strongest single appeal to most immigrants was the opportunity to own land, ever the symbol of status in Europe. Land was so easy to acquire in the colonies that anyone with a little capital could become a landed proprietor. Younger sons with no hope of inheritance in England remedied that defect in America.

Even indentured servants faced a hopeful future in the colonies. Unable to pay their passage, they contracted to serve their masters four to seven years in return for transportation. After they became free citizens again they could buy land on easy terms and establish themselves as small planters. A few, like the three Dulany

brothers who arrived in Maryland as servants in 1703, later rose to prominence and political importance through shrewd investments in land.

From its earliest days America offered the greatest opportunity in the world for a man to benefit from the work of his two hands. Wages were high and the demand for labor was pressing. Anyone could raise himself to a higher economic position through his own enterprise, and a craftsman might hope to become well to do and gain respect in America's flexible society. The dignity of labor and the virtue of diligence, part of the basic doctrine of England's rising commercial class, took firm root in the New World.

PURITANS WERE CONVINCED that "piety bred industry." Refusal to work was a sin against God, while incessant industry was evidence of godliness and would be rewarded with prosperity. The career of John Hull of Massachusetts Bay provides a classic statement of the success that came through ingenuity, industry, and imagination.

As a child Hull helped his blacksmith father with the farm work, then became a goldsmith's apprentice. Turning to commerce, he traded Virginia tobacco for English textiles and manufactures; dabbled in the wine and sugar trade between Boston, the West Indies, and Spain and Madeira; shipped horses from his farm to Barbados. Indeed there was scarcely any trade that honest John Hull did not engage in. He was, moreover, a skilled craftsman. Through his perseverance and resourcefulness, Hull became one of the first citizens of Boston, owner of a fine house, of many ships, of town lands and farms.

The Brown family of Providence was founded by a pious Baptist who combined business and preaching. His descendant James Brown took the sloop *Truth and Delight* to Martinique with a cargo of corn, cheese, tobacco, tar, lumber, shingles, and 11 horses. He returned with sugar and molasses for his rum distilleries in New England. Pious as Captain Brown was, he had no compunctions about evading the sixpence-per-gallon tax on foreign molasses that was established when Parliament passed the Molasses Act of 1733. He gave his shipmasters careful instructions on ways to elude the customs agents. Obadiah Brown followed his brother's footsteps, adding a "chocklit" mill to his enterprises. He began the manufacture of spermaceti candles, which became an important industry in Rhode Island.

William Phips, an obscure Maine frontiersman and ship's carpenter, married well, became a shipbuilder, took command of one of his vessels, and on a trading voyage to the West Indies heard of the treasure that lay in sunken Spanish galleons. In 1685 Phips and his crew raised a hulk off Haiti and recovered so much gold and silver that he retired a rich man with a knighthood. Lady Phips bought a mansion in Boston's fashionable Green Lane so that Sir William could live in the style to which he was not accustomed.

The vastly rich Derby family of Salem had a progenitor who started as a soap boiler and owner of a small shop that sold Bibles and psalm books. Like the Hancocks of Boston (who looked back to a village cobbler as ancestor), the 18th century Derbys prospered on trade. They often flouted the British Navigation Acts—in other words, smuggled. Many merchant families stationed members at

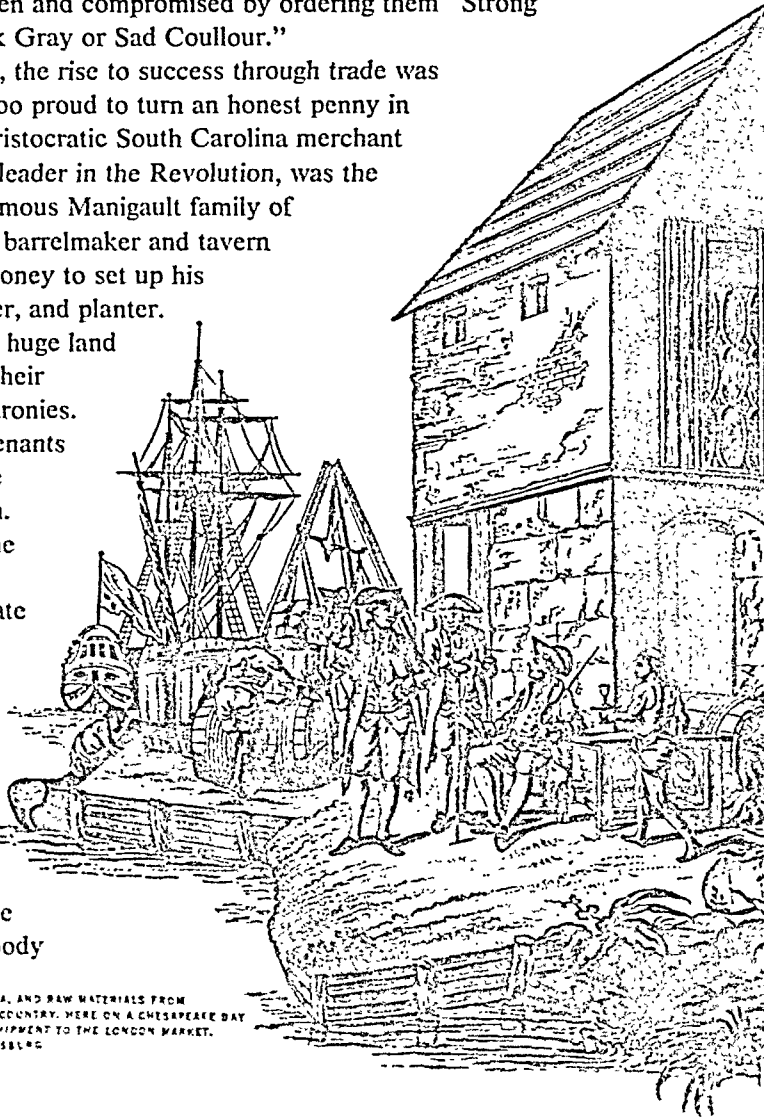
strategic points; perhaps Newport, Charleston, in the West Indies, and in England. Thus they kept in touch with each other and watched over the family businesses.

Quakers, Huguenots, and many Anglican planters shared with New England Puritans the gospel of work, which emphasized diligence, sobriety, and thrift. If the planters sometimes lapsed in sobriety they rarely disavowed diligence. Even elegant William Byrd II, the Samuel Pepys of Virginia, supervised the planting of orchards and crops and commented in his diary on the ruin of his stockings and the need of washing his feet.

Merchant aristocrats of New York like the De Lanceys, Livingstons, and Van Cortlandts were noted for their love of comfort and the increasing luxury of their households. But the Quakers of Pennsylvania, shrewd, careful of credit and reputation, built Philadelphia into the greatest center of wealth in the American colonies. Blessed with prosperity, Quaker merchants often indulged themselves beyond the simplicities that their creed urged. James Logan, Jonathan Dickinson, and others had houses as fine as any Anglican. When Isaac Norris in 1713 ordered a coach "like Jonathan Dickinson's," he drew the line at having a crest painted on it and settled for initials only. He blamed his wife for the ostentation of liveries for his coachman and footmen and compromised by ordering them "Strong and Cheap, Either of a Dark Gray or Sad Coullour."

In the agrarian South, too, the rise to success through trade was respected. No planter was too proud to turn an honest penny in business. Henry Laurens, aristocratic South Carolina merchant and plantation owner and a leader in the Revolution, was the son of a saddler. And the famous Manigault family of Charleston stemmed from a barrelmaker and tavern keeper who made enough money to set up his son as merchant, slave trader, and planter.

Englishmen who obtained huge land grants in America failed in their efforts to establish feudal baronies. Settlers in Maryland were tenants of the House of Calvert, the absolute lords of the domain. But the immigrants had come to better their condition and did not willingly accommodate themselves to an outworn system of land tenure. Only by compromise were the proprietors able to collect their rents and fees. The proprietors of New Jersey, John, Lord Berkeley and Sir George Carteret, tried to make their grant attractive to immigrants by issuing a body



COMMERCE FLOURISHED IN 18TH CENTURY AMERICA, AND RAW MATERIALS FROM THE COLONIES BROUGHT WEALTH TO THE MOTHER COUNTRY. HERE ON A CHESAPEAKE DAY WHARF MEN LOAD HOGSHEADS OF TOBACCO FOR SHIPMENT TO THE LONDON MARKET. CLEMENTS LIBRARY, COURTESY COLONIAL WILLIAMSBURG

of "Concessions" which guaranteed liberty of conscience and a representative assembly and made easy the procurement of land.

Berkeley and Carteret also were among the eight courtiers to whom Charles II had granted the Carolinas in 1663. These lords of the land drew up a remarkable instrument of government called the Fundamental Constitutions. This provided for a ruling aristocracy based on land ownership, with landgraves, caciques, gentlemen-commoners, and yeomen. The grandiose scheme failed because Carolina settlers preferred to exchange their labor for land of their own.

Self-made men—planters, merchants, and craftsmen—turned Charleston into "perhaps the most urbane of American cities," reports historian Ulrich B. Phillips,

"with a notable semi-public library, thriving bookstores, excellent newspapers, mantua makers and milliners in touch with Paris fashions, a thronged race course, dancing assemblies, and easy-mannered men's clubs."

Runaway servants, debtors, ne'er-do-wells, and poor but honest settlers had long trickled into North Carolina, in those days a wilderness. New Englanders who had started an unauthorized settlement at the mouth of the Cape Fear River damned the country as unfit for humans. But pamphleteers corrected that libel and proclaimed it was an ideal marriage ground for "any Maid . . . if they be but Civil, and under 50 years of Age."

Quakers, Huguenots, Swiss, Welsh, Scotch-Irish, and Highlanders moved into what remained for years the most isolated communities in America. Pirates haunted the inlets of Pamlico Sound, and some boasted they were welcome visitors to Carolina homes.

One of the most notorious pirates was Edward Teach ("Blackbeard"), who is said to have gone into battle with his beard plaited and with lighted matches stuffed under his hat to illuminate his fierce countenance. Most of his 14 wives were alive to mourn him when he was killed in 1718 off Ocracoke Island. He fell in hand-to-hand combat with Lt. Robert Maynard of the Royal Navy, having been "closely



BLACKBEARD THE PIRATE RAIDED SHIPPING OFF THE CAROLINA AND VIRGINIA COASTS. NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

& warmly engaged . . . till the Sea was tinctur'd with Blood round the Vessel," Maynard sailed off with Blackbeard's head lashed to the bowsprit.

Maj. Stede Bonnet was another infamous pirate, credited with having actually carried out that fabled method of execution, walking the plank. Bonnet is supposed to have left his home in Barbados to escape a nagging wife. He roamed the Carolina coast and was captured with his crew near the mouth of the Cape Fear River. Admirers placed flowers in his shackled hands as he swung on the gallows.

HOW HARDE WYLL IT BEE for one browghte up amonge boockes and learned men to lyve in a barbarous place where is no learnynge and lesse cyvillytie," wrote one of John Winthrop's friends on the eve of his departure for New England. Winthrop advised him to take along books. Inventories of wilderness libraries in early colonial times reveal a surprising distribution of the writings of Homer, Plutarch, Pliny, Virgil, Seneca, Ovid, Horace, Livy, and other Greeks and Romans. Works of piety exerted great influence, and not only dealt with fine points of the theology but provided guideposts to everyday conduct. Books on chirurgery, medicine, law, surveying, and engineering were considered essential.

Concern over their children's future led colonials to establish schools. The people of Massachusetts Bay founded a grammar school, Boston Latin, within five years of their arrival. It is still active today. In 1647 the General Court of Massachusetts passed a law looking toward universal literacy because that "ould deluder, Satan," sought "to keepe men from the knowledge of y^e Scriptures." Every town of 50 householders had to hire a schoolmaster.

The Dutch in New Netherland recommended in 1649 a public school "with at least two good teachers, so that the youth, in so wild a country, where there are so many dissolute people, may, first of all, be well instructed and indoctrinated." William Penn's first Frame of Government ordered the erection of public schools where "all children within this Province of the age of twelve years, shall be taught some useful trade or skill, to the end none may be idle, but the poor may work to live, and the rich, if they become poor, may not want."

Private schools, particularly in Philadelphia, stressed such utilitarian subjects as mathematics, bookkeeping, navigation, surveying, and the rudiments of natural science. Girls' schools taught needlecraft, plain sewing, and various handicrafts.

Southern colonies with isolated plantations experienced difficulty in setting up schools. Some parents of means were so eager to have their children escape a rustic upbringing that they sent them to England almost as infants. Others hired family tutors, who often took on children of less prosperous neighbors. Skillful dancing masters were always in demand in the South, where manners were emphasized. Not to know how to dance was to display lack of good breeding—and to miss the most popular of colonial amusements.

Higher education in English America began with the founding of Harvard College in 1636. As *New England's First Fruits* (1643) reveals, "it pleased God to stir up the heart of one Mr. *Harvard* . . . to give the one halfe of his Estate (it being in all about £1700) towards the erecting of a Colledge, and all his Library: after

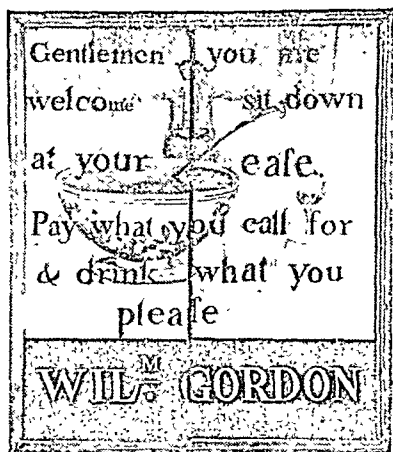
him another gave £300 others after them cast in more, and the publique hand of the State added the rest: the Colledge was, by common consent, appointed to be at *Cambridge*, (a place very pleasant and accomodate) and is called (according to the name of the first founder) *Harvard Colledge*."

Harvard's first president, Henry Dunster, dreamed of making it into a university for all the English-speaking colonies, but religious differences prevented that. By the turn of the century Harvard's growing liberalism alarmed strict conservatives. "Places of Learning should not be Places of Riot and Pride," preached the Reverend Solomon Stoddard of Northampton; "'tis not worth the while for persons to be sent to the *Colledge* to learn to Complement men and Court Women."

Staunch Puritans created a second New England college in 1701 and named it for Elihu Yale, a rich merchant, in gratitude for his bequest of three bales of East Indian goods, a parcel of books, and a portrait of George I. Throughout the 18th century Yale stood as a fortress against heresy, a bulwark protecting the steady habits of Connecticut.

Zeal for an educated ministry prompted the founding of Princeton in 1746. Its president John Witherspoon typified those Scots who combined piety and classical learning, godliness and patriotic ardor for their adopted country. He and the ministers his university in New Jersey sent out to the frontier were a tough-minded lot ready to fight the Prince of Darkness with pen or musket. The churches and schools built by these Scotch Presbyterians during the colonial period were light-houses of religion and learning in the wilderness.

King's College, later Columbia, in New York was established in 1754 in a radically different spirit. Its charter stipulated that no rule should be made that would "exclude any person of any Religious Denomination whatever from Equal Liberty and advantage of Education, or from any the Degrees, Liberties, Priviledges, Benefits, or Immunities of the said College, on account of his particular Tenets in matters of Religion."

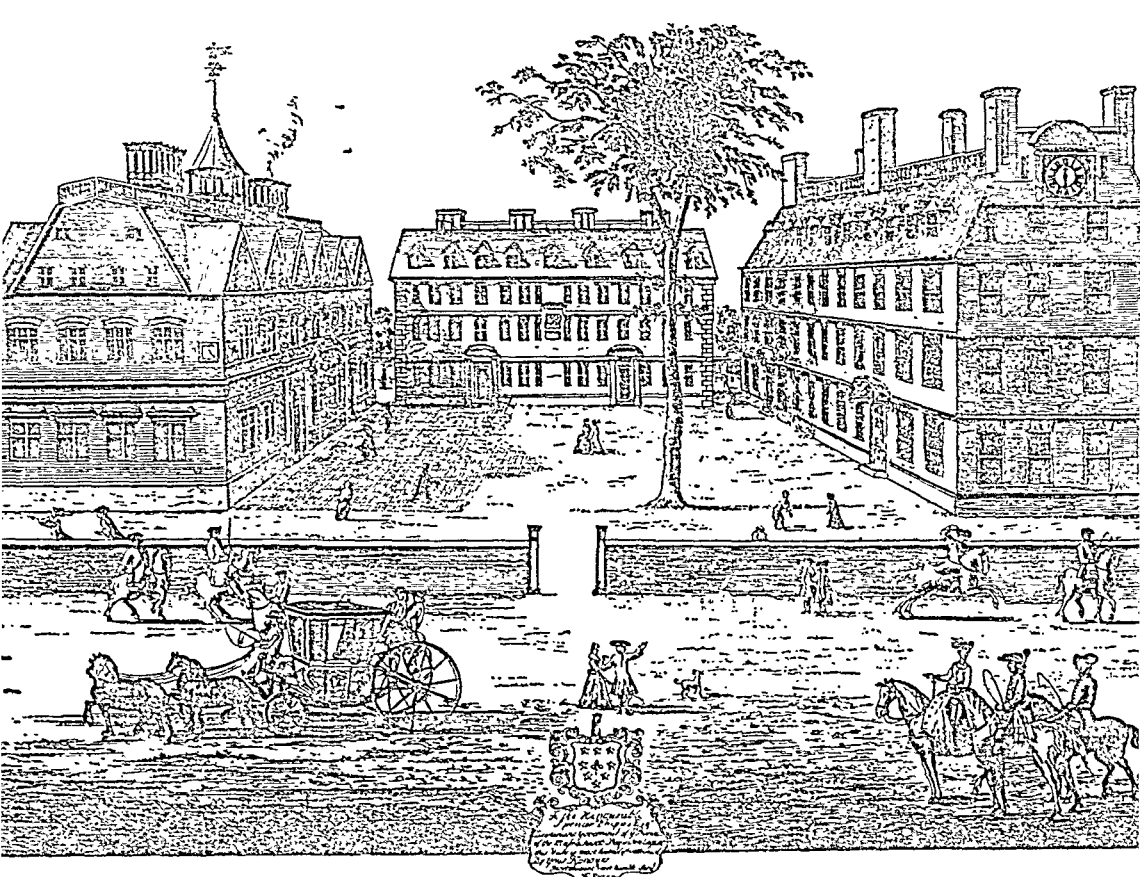


Inns and taverns greeted the parched traveler. Libraries, schools, and colleges such as Harvard (right) helped slake the colonials' growing thirst for knowledge.

Secular education in Pennsylvania owes a debt to Benjamin Franklin. He proposed the "complete education of youth," and was instrumental in founding the College of Philadelphia, later the University of Pennsylvania. Its curriculum included physics, chemistry, botany, and zoology, and was more modern than any available elsewhere in the colonies.

Thoughtful planters in Virginia had contemplated the need of a college as early as 1619. At last, in 1693, the Reverend James Blair, highest official of the Church of England in Virginia, obtained a charter from their Majesties and named the college William and Mary in their honor. The site chosen was Middle Plantation, soon to be called Williamsburg, and the cornerstone of the first building of this second oldest college in the colonies was laid in 1695.

By 1699 five students at William and Mary had advanced sufficiently to deliver orations in praise of



"A PROSPECT OF THE COLLEGES IN CAMBRIDGE IN NEW ENGLAND," ENGRAVED BY WILLIAM BURGESS, 1725-6; STOKES COLLECTION, NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY. OPPOSITE: NEW LONDON INN SIGN; MORGAN B. BRAINARD COLLECTION, CONNECTICUT HISTORICAL SOCIETY

learning before the Governor. "Methinks we see alreddy that happy time," one declaimed, "when we shall surpass the Asiaticans in civility, the Jews in Religion, the Greeks in Philosophy, the Egyptians in Geometry, the Phenicians in Arithmetick, and the Caldeans in Astrology. O happy Virginia!"

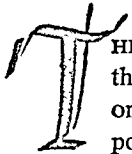
IN EARLY COLONIAL DAYS communication between Virginia and London, which usually took six to eight weeks at least, was easier than between Virginia and New York or Boston. The 18th century saw a great improvement, and an increase in intercolonial travel. Peddlers and traders made their way along the trails and tracks of the Atlantic seaboard. Southerners discovered that Newport, Rhode Island, was a desirable refuge from the ague and fever of their own torrid summers. A summer migration regularly set sail from Charleston, and visitors came from other towns and the West Indies. Americans were getting to know each other for the first time.

Communication remained a problem in the far South. Mail sent from New York to Charleston via England often made better time than when sent by postriders through Virginia. When Benjamin Franklin and William Hunter, publisher of the *Virginia Gazette* in Williamsburg, were appointed deputy postmasters general in 1753, mail delivery improved so much in the North that a Philadelphia merchant

might mail a letter to New York on one day and receive a reply the next. Travel between Northern colonies was made easy along the network of ferries, bridges, and roads. Though the latter were dusty in summer and in winter deep in mud, they often surpassed the highways of Great Britain.

Carts, wagons, chaises, and coaches traversed them. At first "stage wagons" provided public transportation. Later, stagecoach lines developed, especially in New England, and often made connection with packet-boatlines. Private coaches remained an evidence of conspicuous wealth.

Gregarious Americans exchanged information wherever they met. Pioneers and traders were bringing back tales of good land to be had for the taking beyond the Appalachian barrier. This word needed no newspaper or penny post; it was reported around campfires, at inns, and at church. Taverns were informal men's clubs and meeting places for civic bodies. Coffeehouses flourished in large towns and were resorts of merchants and politicians. And long after the colonial period the country church remained one place where rural people could meet.



THE LAST YEARS of colonial America saw a country very different from the thinly settled strip of British territories that had but a precarious foothold on the continent at the end of the 17th century. From 200,000 in 1689, population increased eightfold to nearly 1,700,000 in 1760. Shipping, lumbering, fishing, and fur trading in Maine and New Hampshire, and farming, trading, and exploiting the pine forests of Georgia gave a livelihood to settlers at the extreme ends of the British domain. The older settlements prospered. In the towns craftsmen plied a multiplicity of trades and put money in their pockets.

Already America was showing hospitality to all people. Although the dominant stock of the colonials remained British, many nationalities were represented in the leading cities. One group in particular influenced the quality of colonial craftsmanship—the Huguenots, driven from France after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. Some were printers like Louis Timothée, whom Franklin sent to Charleston to print the *South Carolina Gazette*. Some were silversmiths like the immigrant father of Paul Revere. Blacksmiths, gunsmiths, cabinetmakers, joiners, carpenters, sailmakers, weavers—hardly an honest trade was without Huguenot recruits.

Hector St. John de Crèvecoeur, a Frenchman naturalized in New York, commented on the melting pot which produced a new man, an American, different from the Englishman or European who had arrived on these shores. Frenchmen, Germans, Dutch, or Jews modified the prevailing British characteristics, then were assimilated. In New York, for example, Dutch architecture, cooking, and folklore gave a special flavor to British culture. And so it was in all 13 colonies.

A relatively homogeneous people, then, flourished in a vigorous and prospering society. European and American scientists were exchanging information. American towns were becoming cosmopolitan centers of culture even in the agrarian colonies. Maryland began to look to Annapolis. And in Virginia, Williamsburg became a focal point of fashion and formal manners and a sounding board for ideas. America was rapidly coming of age.

WILLIAMSBURG

*Virginia's early capital
re-creates colonial life*

COCKING my tricorne over one eye and giving a tug to my blue velvet coat, I quit my lodgings on Francis Street and strode down the Duke of Gloucester toward Chowning's Tavern. In the yellow glow of the lantern I carried, my brass shoe buckles winked up at me with every step, and from each Yule-decked window I passed, a candle shed its hospitable light.

Chowning's was filled with a goodly company of Williamsburg craftsmen. The master bootmaker waved a tankard of ale in greeting; the apothecary nodded over his long clay pipe. The genial hubbub rose in pitch as platters of steak arrived, and soon the walls resounded to toasts of "The Queen, God bless her," "The Ladies," and "To Ourselves—good men are scarce!"

Warmed and refreshed, we formed behind the bookbinder and his fiddle and marched out of the tavern to the strains of "God Rest You Merry, Gentlemen." The night was crisp, but our caroling spirits were high, and at more than one holly-garlanded door we found welcome and a great bowl of hot spiced punch.

It was outside John Blair House that time caught up with me. We had passed the Magazine where, next morning, militia-

Williamsburg's Capitol, symbol of our colonial heritage, was built by the Crown and helped give birth to the Republic. Here it wears colors of both: Queen Anne's coat of arms and America's first national flag. The city was restored to 18th century grace through the generosity of John D. Rockefeller, Jr.

D. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER



men would fire the Christmas cannon; passed, too, the candlelit Governor's Palace in whose ballroom musicians would be tuning up. The bell of William and Mary, second oldest college in the colonies, had clanged the hour from the Wren Building's slender tower and quivered into silence.

Then, ripping the evening sky with a sound of tearing silk, a jet plane roared by. The 20th century was serving notice: It was not to be so wantonly ignored. I could don knee breeches and buckled shoes, it seemed to say, and traipse about the cob-

bled streets; but costumes cannot long defy the calendar. The old brick walks I trod concealed telephone cables. My fellow carolers were craftsmen, yes, but on the payroll of Colonial Williamsburg, Inc.

Williamsburg, recalled to its 18th century self by John D. Rockefeller, Jr., is not merely old and beautiful: Its every brick is steeped in history. When you stroll its lanes, great men walk beside you—Jefferson, Washington, Patrick Henry, George Mason, nine royal governors, a score of statesmen who helped shape the Republic.

It is hard to link arms with these eminent ghosts in the vacation months when ladies in Bermuda shorts and sunglasses far outnumber those in farthingales. I saw the town first on a morning in late November, still and warm, with the last wizened leaves of autumn drifting silently from the beech trees. From the doorstep of the Bracken-Carter House I could see a boy sweeping out a stable yard, a warder in dun-brown redingote shuffling toward the Guardhouse, and a few pigeons strutting the ridgepole of Captain Orr's dwelling. For the rest, Williamsburg

dozed serenely. A lane took me to Duke of Gloucester Street. From in front of Orlando Jones Office I could look for three-quarters of a mile down the broad, uncluttered street past old Bruton Parish Church to the ancient brick buildings of the College of William and Mary. To my right stood the rose-tinted Capitol, as "noble, beautiful, and commodious a Pile as any of its Kind."

Crossing to the Raleigh Tavern, I pushed through a picket gate at one side and entered the brick courtyard next to the bake shop. Windows gave onto it from the tavern's Apollo Room, where young Tom Jefferson once danced with his Belinda. My goal lay in the small outbuilding from which emanated now a rich aroma of cinnamon, apples, molasses, yeast, and the smoke of hickory and oak. Inside I found the master baker pressing gingerbread dough into an elaborate wooden mold shaped as a cavalier, while his apprentice raked hot coals from the waist-high oven and shoveled them into a great canister.

"How do you know when the oven is hot enough?" I asked in my ignorance.

"I just put my arm in," the baker grunted. "If it comes out charred, the temperature's about right."

I sat back in an old rush-bottomed chair and watched the morning's baking get under way—cookies, flat round loaves on a broad wooden paddle, a few tarts,



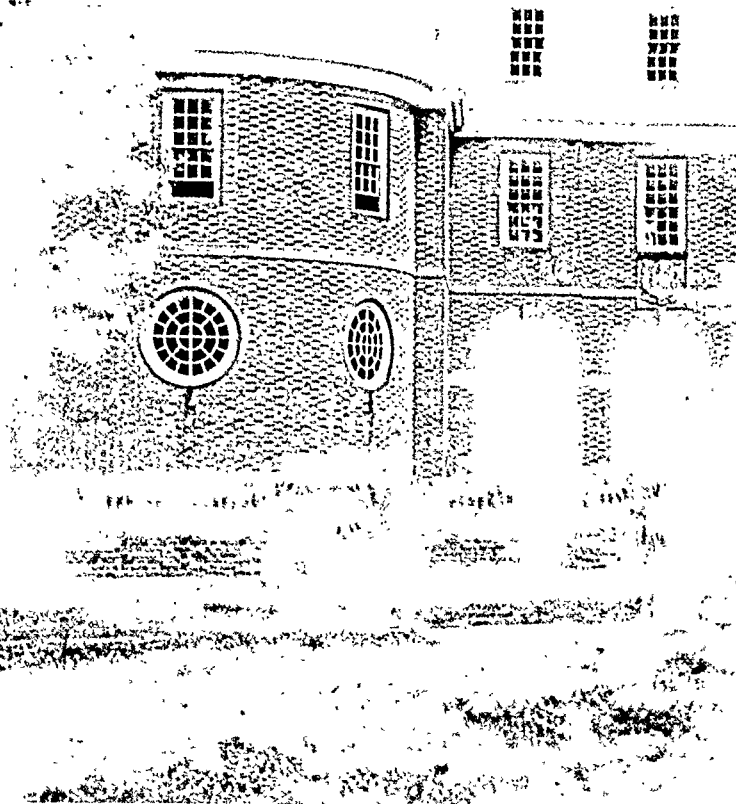
Ale, pecan waffles, and "sallad" are still served at Chowning's Tavern.

"Sir, I find your arguments as empty as your tankard." Planters in town for the General Assembly and courts swap jibes in Raleigh Tavern, then roll into bed upstairs, half a dozen to a room. Literally "politics makes strange bedfellows."

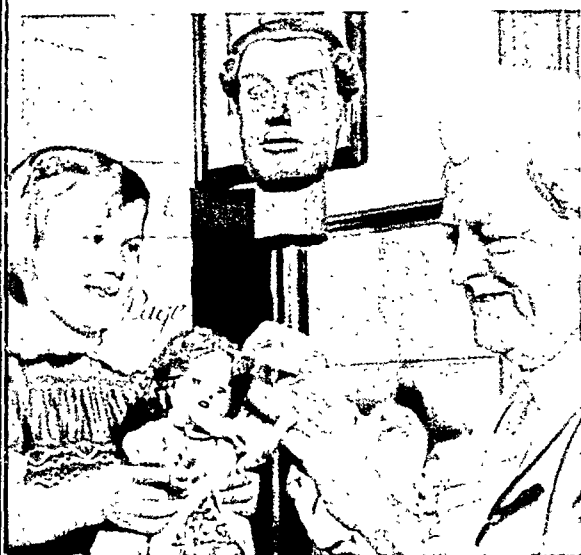
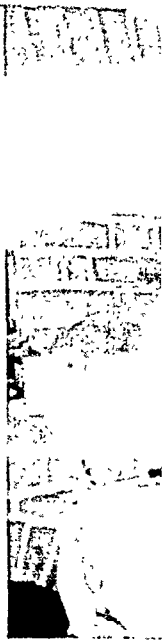


To the Capitol
flock the colonials;
from tidewater plantations,
from scratched-out farms
and piedmont forests.
Rich or poor, they know
the loneliness of a new land;
and here at "Publick Times"
they share a glow of excitement
at seeing friends' faces,
hearing news and the
latest jokes from England,
and happy prophecies of
a good tobacco year.
Flies buzz outside; sheep
graze the green. And inside
the courts convene and
the burgesses set to work.

FROM THE FILM "WILLIAMSBURG—
THE STORY OF A PATRIOT"







It's business as usual in Williamsburg, where shops representing the colonial crafts of men of "the middling sort" operate year round. On the apothecary's shelves (upper left) are horehound drops, "everywhere commended for those who are bruised, burst, or fallen from high

FROM TOP: BATES LITTLEHALES & ANTHONY STEWART. KATHLEEN REYNOLDS
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF. BELOW: JOHN CRANE. COLONIAL WILLIAMSBURG





places." Clockwise from the apothecary's: a fragrant "baker's dozen" fills a wicker basket; flaxen fibers run onto the spinning wheel as thread; cabinetmaker checks his lathe's work; milliner tickles a lady's fancy; the printer inks his type with sheepskin pads; bootmaker pegs shoes that fit either foot; the peruke maker tidies a doll's wig.



D. ANTHONY STEWART AND (LEFT) KATHLEEN REVIS.



Britain's royal lion and unicorn prance again above the governor's doorway, recalling the 169 years that Virginians lived under the Crown. Asked if her family had always lived in Williamsburg, one lady replied quickly: "Oh no! Only since the Revolution."

"Evil be to him who evil thinks," reads the motto.

some mincemeat pies. "Is your bread made just like the colonials'?" I asked.

"Martha Washington herself couldn't tell 'em apart. We get our unbleached flour from an old mill in Louisa County. It's stone-ground. The only difference is we use modern yeast. The 18th century fellows more than likely depended on scrapings from beer vats."

A lady prettily attired in farthingale and lace cap put her head in the bakery door. "I'll take a couple of loaves today, please."

"Ready at noon, ma'am." He shoved the last paddle of bread into the oven and wiped his hands on his apron. "Hostess up at the Capitol," he said with a nod toward the departing gentlewoman. "A lot of the folks in town drop by and leave orders; keeps me busy as a bird dog."

TAKING MY LEAVE, I walked along Duke of Gloucester Street to the Pasteur-Galt Apothecary Shop. The apothecary, well turned out in his sober knee breeches and ruffled stock, took me back into the office used by Dr. John Minson Galt when Williamsburg was young.

"Surgery was a bit rough in Dr. Galt's day," he said. "They had to strap the patient down. No anesthetics, of course. And no idea of antiseptis."

He picked up a sort of brace and bit. "They used this for trepanning—boring holes in the skull. The idea was to let the hot air and vapors out. Prince Philip William of Orange had 17 holes in his head—said to be the most open-minded man in Europe!"

"Did Dr. Galt practice dentistry?"

"Dentistry really hadn't emerged as a branch of medicine. Pulling teeth was about all it amounted to, and anybody would do that; the barber, for instance. False teeth gave a good deal of trouble. Washington's plates, you know, would sometimes lock open in the middle of a speech. Very embarrassing."

I strode down the street to drop in on the wigmaker, the town printer, and the master bookbinder. Before the day was over, I had visited as well the blacksmith, the spinner and weaver, the bootmaker (who kindly sewed tight a loose button on my overcoat), the silversmith, and the candlemakers. My first call on the cabinet-maker, however, yielded me only the sight of a printed notice pinned to his door:



Serene 18th century music sounding in the candlelit palace ballroom must stir silk-stockinged ghosts to dance a stately minuet

Tinkling harpsichord and mellow strings play at weekly concerts in spring and fall. Here young Tom Jefferson tried his hand at the violin with the amiable Governor Fauquier and "two or three other amateurs." In the adjoining supper room (above) the punch bowl awaited thirsty dancers. On warm evenings His Excellency would linger over coffee, savoring the fragrance of his garden, and sending off pestiferous flies that invaded his unscreened door. Bedtime would send the household upstairs to snuff out candles and burrow into beds like the great Tudor oak four-poster with crewelwork curtains (left).

Today, hostesses in farthingales show visitors the Chinese Chippendale chest and gilt bird cage in the governor's office, and bayberry candles being made in the scullery. Antiques gleaned from England and the United States duplicate the original furnishings.

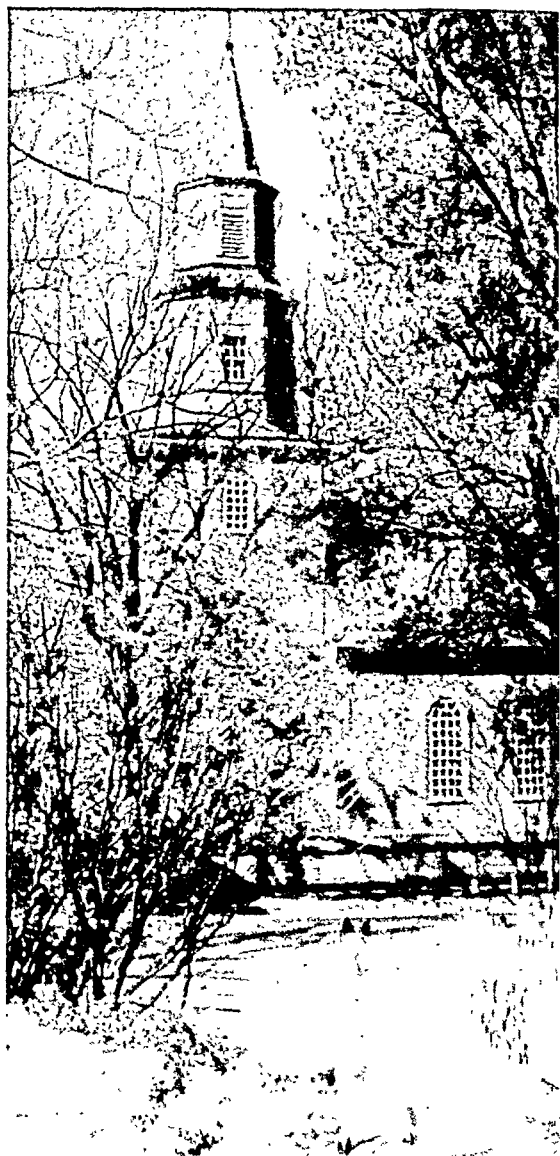
"I have been obliged through the sheer Weight of Fatigue to quit my Post & repair to my Dwellinghouse until I have recovered my usual Composure."

Aware of a certain Weight of Fatigue myself, I sympathized and made a mental note to return on the morrow, which I did, for it is craftsmen like these who bring the vast museum of Williamsburg to life. The restoration has completely reconstructed or restored more than 500 buildings over the city's original 220-acre tract. Buildings as charming as the Brush-Everard House, as impressive as the Palace engage the eye and imagination. A glowing forge, a printer's shop reeking of ink, a fragrant bakery, a great four-harness loom clicking and clacking—these re-create the past in warmly human terms.

At the information center excellent films on 18th century life, on the process and purpose of the restoration itself, are shown continuously. At the Craft House faithful reproductions of colonial glassware, pewter, silver, copper, linens, wall-paper, paint, and furniture are on display—and on sale.



Smart phaetons with costumed coachmen give visitors an 18th century ride past the Palace (above), old homes, and shops. Facilities include an information center, lodge, inn, day and night tours.



From January to December, hostesses in lace caps and farthingales stand ready to conduct the visitor through the town's great houses and public buildings with such a pleasant informality and ready flow of anecdote that you might imagine they are the proprietors, which in a real sense they are. Thoroughly grounded in the history both of colonial times and of every hand-wrought nail or ancient portrait in the restoration, they take an evident pride and relish in their work.

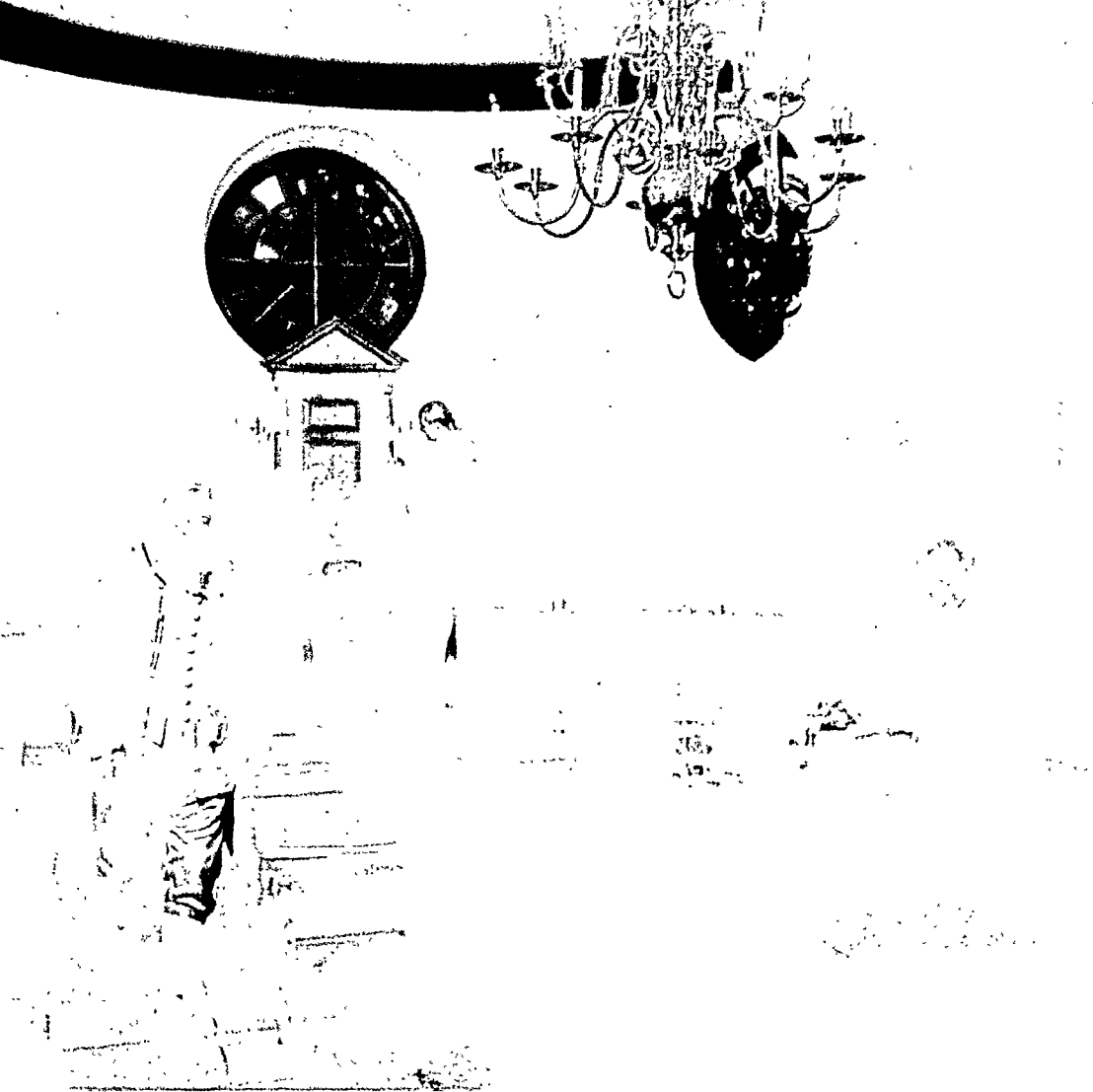
Everywhere in the restored area, in fact, an effort is made to thaw the polite frost which so easily forms over any museum. In the George Wythe House, evening visitors see the dining room as if the family had just left the table—rumpled napkins, chairs pulled back, wineglasses still rosy damp; upstairs they find night clothes laid out on the beds, slippers ready, a candle guttering beside an open book. At the Magazine, guards startle youngsters by firing old horse pistols with a satisfying roar. At the Publick Gaol, the keeper obligingly leads any parties stricken by guilt to the stocks or pillory. Under a tree near the Courthouse of



B. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

Bruton Parish Church, completed in 1715, rang out news of independence. Its first organist was also the gaoler—prisoners pumped the organ! George Washington was godfather to 14 slaves baptized here.

Garden of the King's Arms grows jonquils, dwarf boxwood, and flowering shadbush. Town plans urged half-acre lots so each householder might have space to raise herbs and vegetables, flowers and orchard trees.

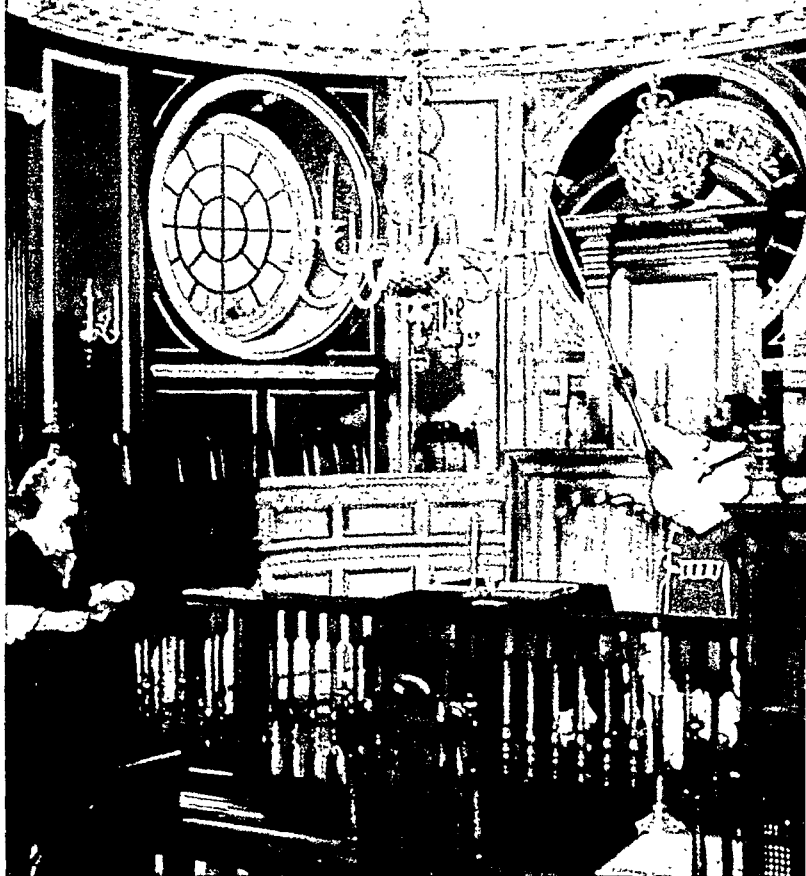


B ANTHONY STEWART AND DONALD MCBAIN, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

1770 a carriage and coachman await those who wish to rattle about behind a spanking pair of high-stepping bays.

Standing in Williamsburg, you command a panorama of American times that stretches back three and a half centuries. From the ill-favored site of Jamestown the seat of government moved to Middle Plantation, surveyed and laid out as the Town of Williamsburg. Politically patrician, Williamsburg was also socially festive and economically stable. Virginia was acclaimed "the happy retreat of true Britons and Churchmen." Its domain extended by charter across the continent to the "South Sea," a vast inland empire many times larger than Great Britain herself. More populous than any other colony, it was also the richest, its income solidly based upon that "Imperial weed," tobacco.

As its capital, tiny Williamsburg threw a long shadow. Laid out as one of Amer-



KATHLEEN REVIS AND DONALD MCBAIN, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

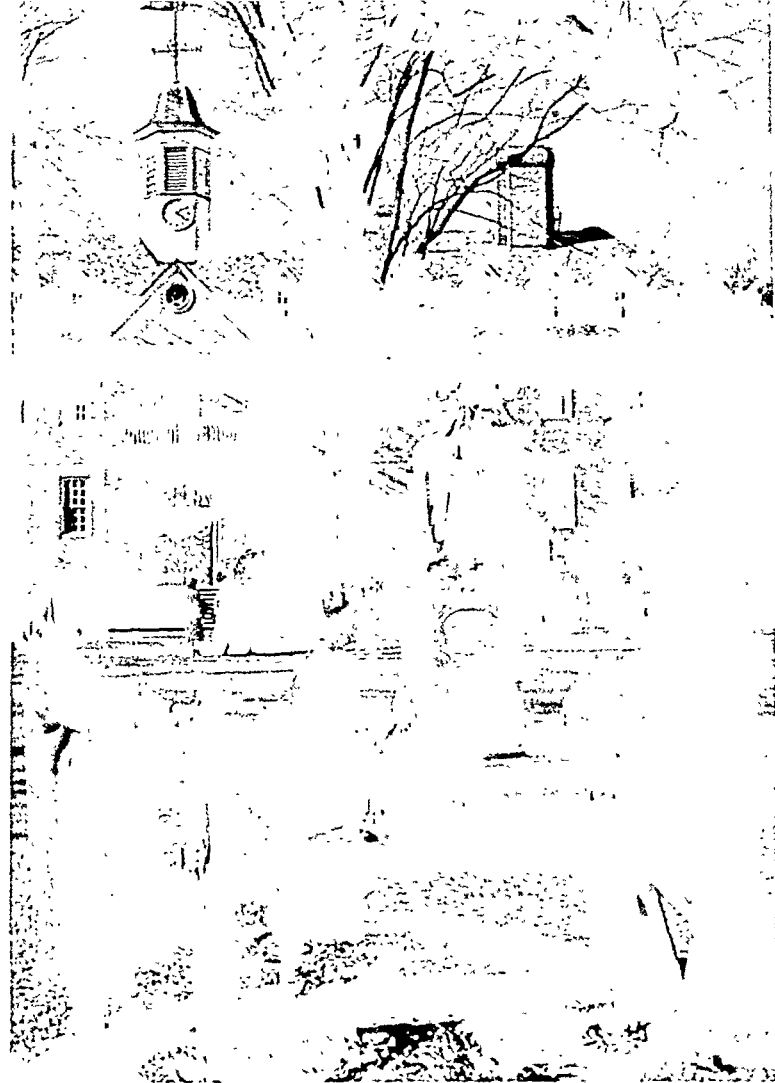
In the House of Burgesses (left), Patrick Henry thundered defiance to the Stamp Act, rousing legislators to uproarious approval. Here members of America's oldest lawmaking body applauded modest George Washington for his exploits in the French and Indian War. Here, too, George Mason's Declaration of Rights became law.

In these chambers of the Capitol's west wing (above), the General Court of the colony sentenced 13 of Blackbeard's pirates to be hanged by the neck until dead.

ica's most felicitous experiments in town planning, the little city boasted an impressive grouping of public and private buildings, knit by broad avenues and handsomely set off by greens and market square. Fifteen hundred persons normally resided in it. But at "Publick Times," when the courts or General Assembly convened, its population would be doubled or tripled by gentry in from the plantations, merchants, back-country farmers and hunters, sharpers and pickpockets, grooms and craftsmen, solemn Indians, and a sprinkling of slaves.

Over the Raleigh Tavern's chief mantel runs the Latin *Hilaritas Sapientiae et Bonae Vitae Proles*—"Jollity, the Offspring of Wisdom and Good Living."

It might have been the motto of all Williamsburg. Gov. Sir William Gooch noted approvingly in 1727: "The Gentm. and Ladies here are perfectly well bred, not an ill Dancer in my Govmt." Gov. Alexander Spotswood entertained hundreds



Wren Building of William and Mary is "beautiful and commodious, being first modelled by Sir Christopher Wren," said an early visitor. America's second oldest college counts Presidents Jefferson, Monroe, and Tyler as alumni, and Washington as Chancellor. Phi Beta Kappa began here.

Dr. James Blair, college founder, fought hard for its charter and funds. Told it would train ministers to save colonial souls, a royal official snorted: "Souls! Damn your souls! Make tobacco!"

Blair even wrung loot from pirates awaiting trial, promising a word on their behalf.

Gunpowder stored in the Magazine (right) worried Governor Dunmore in 1775. Lest rebels take it, he spirited it away. Angry colonists marched on the capital; Dunmore fled.

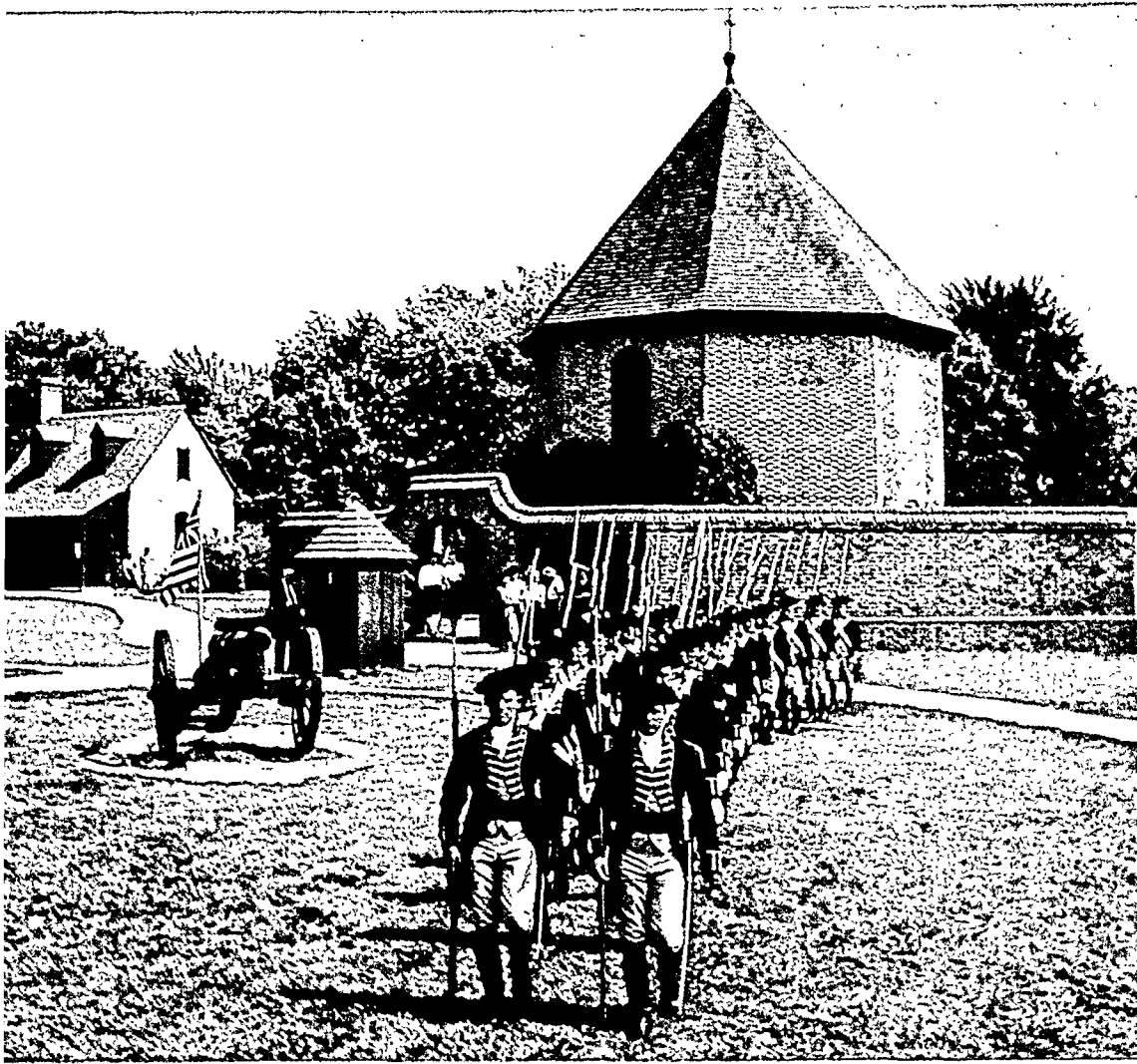
Today's visitors inspect 18th century guns.

B. ANTHONY STEWART NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

of guests at the Palace, and the drain on his wine cellars and smokehouses was fabulous. Yet underneath this festivity serious matters were afoot. Bred in a long tradition of self-government, the great landholders would not play second fiddle to the British. Loyalty to the Crown, affinity with the old country—yes. But subservience to authority from abroad—no, gentle sirs.

In the Raleigh Tavern, Jefferson and his friends set up Virginia's Committee of Correspondence. Here, too, burgesses routed from the Capitol by the governor gathered to urge a Continental Congress. Williamsburg's finest hour was upon it. And almost in the next tick of history's clock the town died. In 1779 Governor Jefferson helped move the capital up the James to Richmond, deemed "more safe and central." Williamsburg dwindled into genteel decay.

Then Mr. Rockefeller stepped in with his nonprofit corporation, Colonial Williamsburg, Inc. More than \$71,000,000 pumped into the restoration, and sums

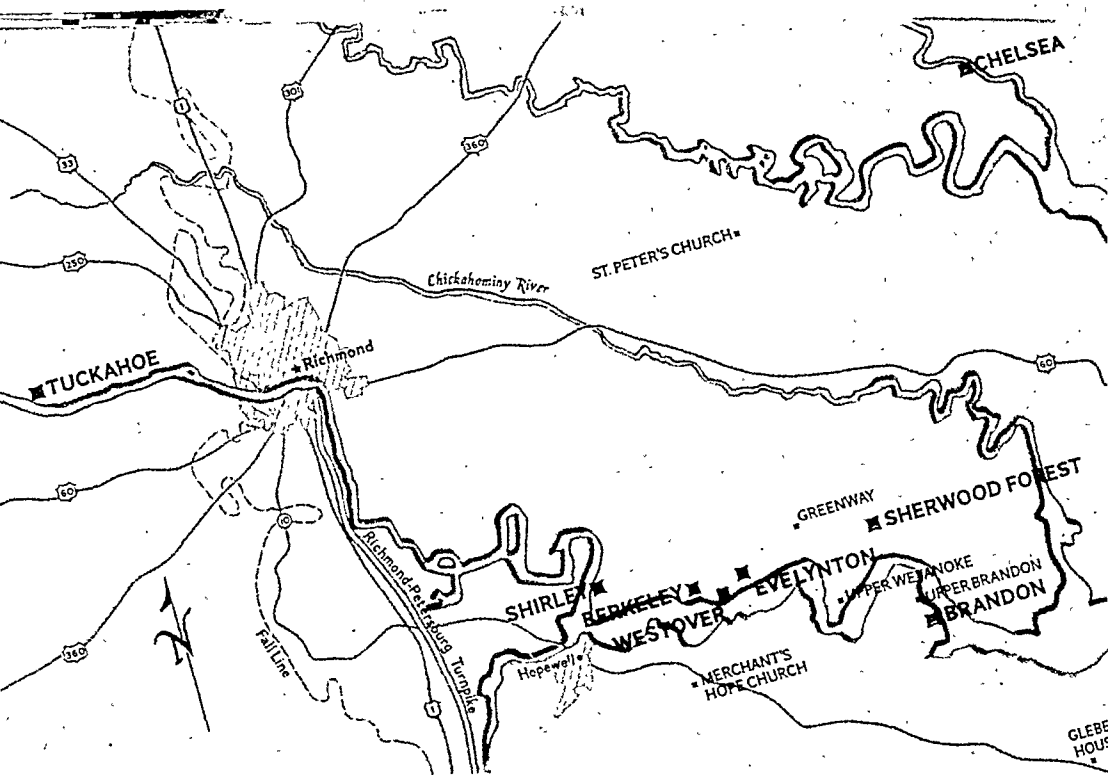


spent by millions of visitors have given the old town a great shot in the arm. And it, in turn, deals out a measure of inspiration to its guests.

I like the story of the GI from Fort Eustis who came up with his unit during World War II and got separated. He was standing before the Peale portrait of Washington in the clerk's office at the Capitol. Suddenly he muttered, "You got it for us, General. And, by God, we're going to keep it!" And he saluted.

When Mr. Rockefeller heard that story, tears came to his eyes, and he said quietly, "Then it was all worth while."



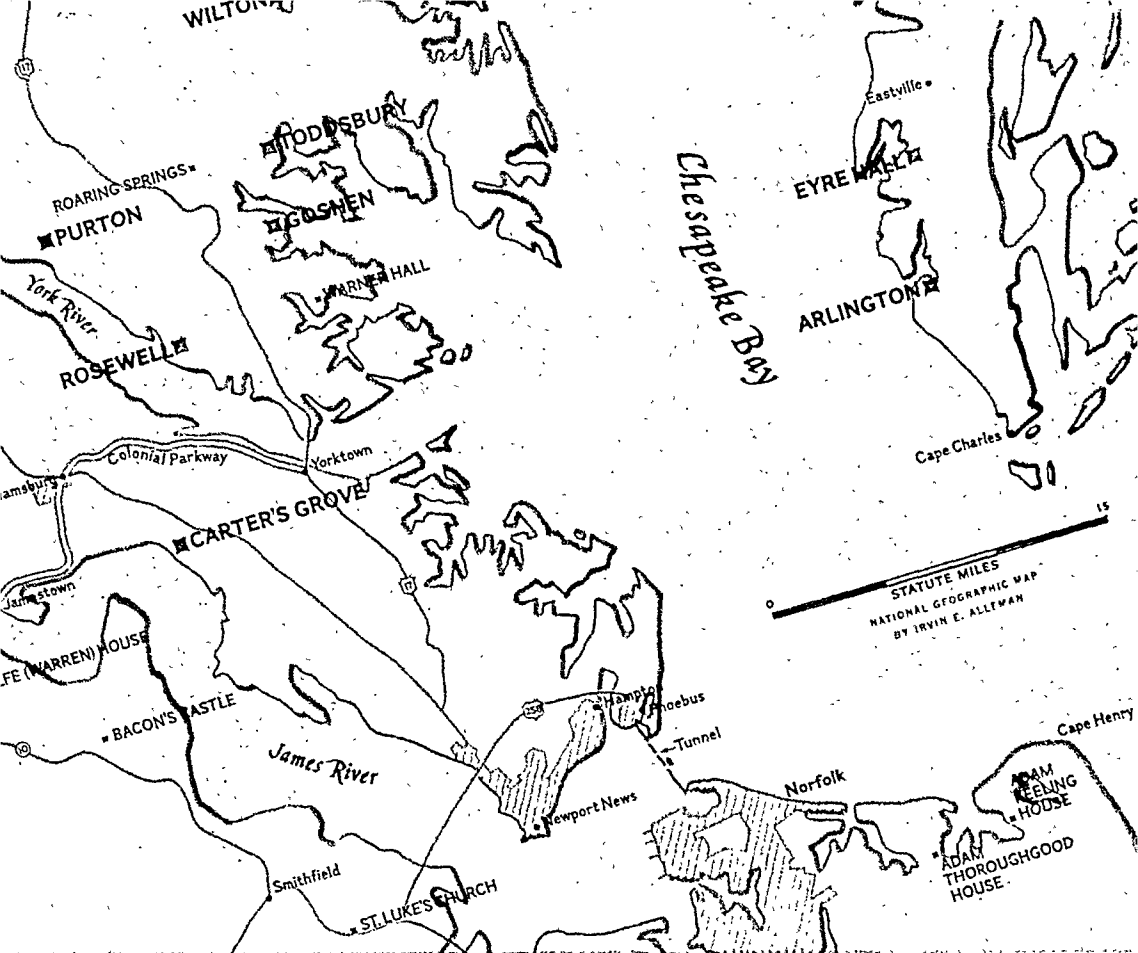


TIDEWATER PLANTATIONS *of the Old Dominion*

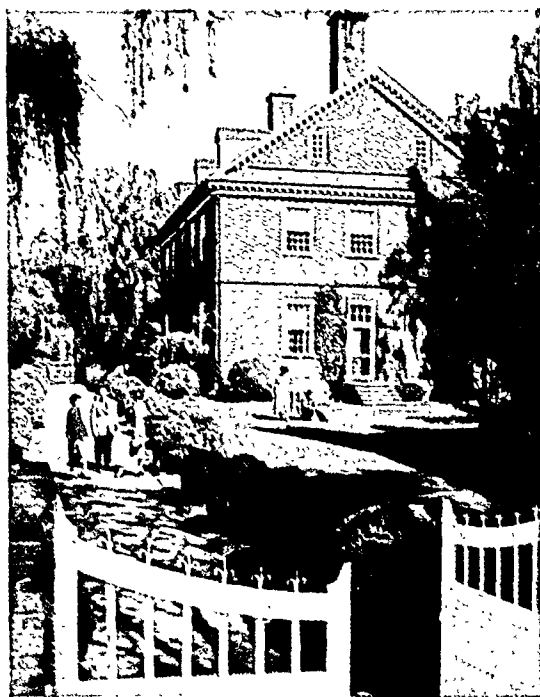
GAIETY, gossip, and government in Williamsburg were exciting, but the real life of 18th century Virginia centered on the great plantations that lined four navigable rivers—the James, York, Rappahannock, and Potomac. As soon as “Publick Times” ended, planters’ carriages lurched along dusty, rutted lanes to isolated Georgian mansions that were the hub of self-contained realms.

Astride a finely bred horse, the planter directed the overseers of slaves in the fields, the blacksmith, the cobbler, the cooper. Tobacco by the hogshead went from his private wharf to England. Back came Chippendale furniture, fashionable gowns, the latest books, and a letter from his London agent suggesting the proper school for his children. Between times he read well. William Byrd II, a learned, lusty, and land-poor aristocrat, notes in his Pepysian diary that “I rose at 6 o’clock and read a chapter in Hebrew and some Greek in Lucian.” Emulating the squirearchy of England, Virginia’s country gentlemen transplanted London culture to the riverbanks of the New World.

History lives on today in a stately procession of homes, lovingly restored by their owners or by organizations conscious of a priceless heritage. On the James rise Westover, Byrd’s magnificent mansion; Evelynton, named for his beautiful daughter; Berkeley, home of the Harrisons who gave the nation two presidents;



Berkeley, dating from 1726, housed Virginia's illustrious Harrison family. Elegantly restored and furnished, the home (right) is open daily. Terraced gardens march down to the James.



JOHN E. FLETCHER AND ROBERT F. SISSON AND (LEFT) MERLE SEVERY, ALL NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

Brandon, still the center of a 5,000-acre farm, is another riverside mansion where history keeps house. Visitors may stroll its gardens.





Wishing "a very good house," William Byrd II in the 1730's built Westover, Virginia's finest example of Georgian grandeur. Here, shaded by tulip poplars and comforted by an escape tunnel that would take him to the James if Indians struck, he ran his 179,000 acres.



© ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

read from his large library, entertained lavishly. His descendants include Admiral Richard E. Byrd, the explorer, and U. S. Senator Harry F. Byrd. Like many Virginia homes, Westover receives visitors during Historic Garden Week, late in April. Grounds are open daily.



Shirley, birthplace of Robert E. Lee's mother; 300-foot-long Sherwood Forest where President John Tyler lived; Tuckahoe, Tom Jefferson's boyhood home; and majestic Carter's Grove, built by Carter Burwell, grandson of Robert "King" Carter who owned 300,000 acres and 1,000 slaves. In the brick mansion's "Refusal Room," tradition says Washington and Jefferson both heard "no" from belles they wished to marry.

Along the York and inlets of Chesapeake Bay stand richly paneled Chelsea, the stark ruins of 35-room Rosewell, and well-preserved Purton; Goshen, mossy-roofed Wilton, and Toddsbury, one of the oldest continuously lived-in houses in America. On the Eastern Shore ramble old Eyre Hall, and Arlington of the Custis family. Irascible John Custis, who disliked his wife so much that he proclaimed it in his epitaph, once angrily drove his carriage into the Chesapeake. When his lady asked him where he was going, he bellowed, "To Hell, Madam."

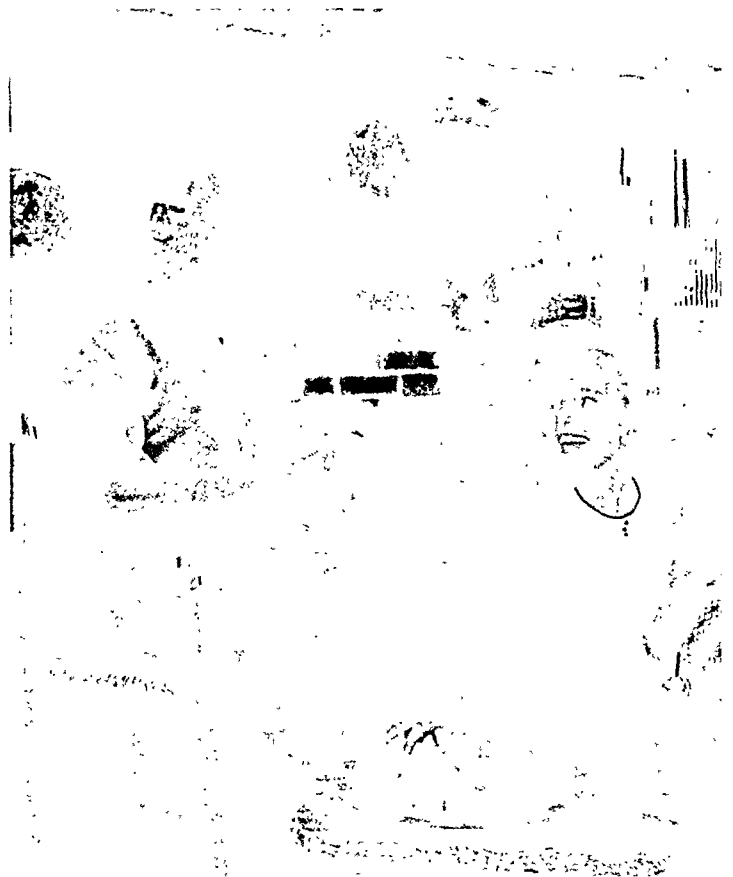
"Drive on," she said coolly. "Any place is better than Arlington."

Visits to other plantations often turned into lengthy stays. Distances were great and southern hospitality was a necessity if the planter was to have the convivial pleasures he loved. Parties were gay; but too much drinking at funerals raised some eyebrows. Intermarriage enhanced the fortunes of Virginia's first families. Washington and Jefferson took well-to-do widows. William Carter, 23, married "sprightly" 85-year-old Sarah Ellyson, "with three thousand pounds fortune." Another road to wealth was government. Tobacco quickly sapped the soil,

Carters of eighth and ninth generations tread the hanging stairway at Shirley. C. Hill Carter, Jr., (center) still operates Shirley as a plantation. Weekday visitors are welcome at the house, built in 1723.

Story has it that a visitor once commiserated with a Carter daughter for having to sell a Peale portrait of Washington. "It really didn't matter," she said. "After all, the General wasn't a member of the family."

Cozy kitchen at Seven Gables on the Eastern Shore dates from 1786. An original hand-hewn beam holds pots and pans. Dutch oven opens beyond the antique doll.





so planters sought to expand their holdings. Since Williamsburg controlled land grants, getting elected a Burgess put one on the inside track. Byrd acquired 105,000 acres for a token £525 by the good graces of the Governor's Council, of which he was a member. Jefferson advised a nephew to hasten to "that public stage whereon you may begin to be useful to yourself," but cautioned, "pursue the interests of your country . . . with the purest integrity."

Unlike Puritan New Englanders, whose churches dominated the towns, Virginia's Anglican gentry ran their parishes. "King" Carter even ordered his parson to pray for rain! Hiring the clergy, levying the parish tax, directing the care of the poor and orphaned were a lesson in government for the tobacco aristocracy.

Trained and bred to govern, the great planters of the Golden Age ruled Virginia capably. Later a new nation would call on four of them—the Virginia Dynasty of Washington, Jefferson, Madison, and Monroe—to guide it during the infant years.

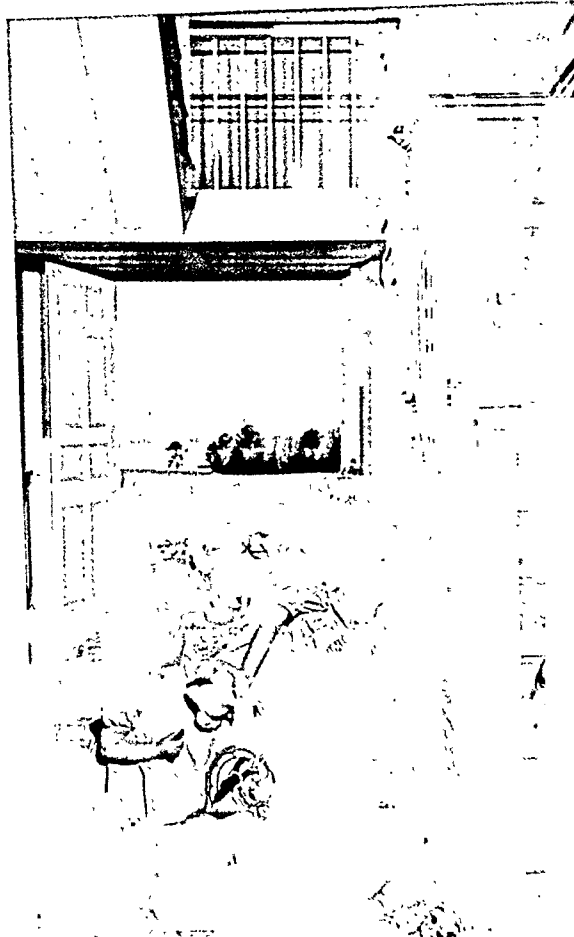
THOMAS Y. CANBY



Sheep and lambs roam Goshen's lawn, children roam old Purton

Gloucester County's Goshen, built in the 1750's, contains a chest of drinking glasses that play *Ach, Du Lieber Augustin* when damp fingers run along their rims. It is a harmonicon, once called a Hydroadaktylopsychicharmonica. Purton, another Gloucester mansion, served as a model for restoration work at Williamsburg. The iron gate comes from Spain. Open doors reveal the York River. Powhatan, father of Pocahontas, reputedly lived on this site.

VOLKMAR WENTZEL AND (ABOVE) HOWELL WALKER,
BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF



**At Gunston Hall
George Mason's pen
let freedom ring**

In every crisis that rocked America between 1765 and 1790 Mason penned some vital proposal. He devised ways to side-step the Stamp Act and to boycott England after the Townshend Acts. He called for unity in the colonies. Eying the Ohio country, he dug up legal ammunition that buttressed America's claim.

His uncle's large library taught Mason the enlightened thinking of the day: that reason should rule, that just laws make just men. He shared Jefferson's dedication to equal rights, and dubbed the slave trade "disgraceful to mankind."

A widower with nine children, he disliked public office, preferring to manage his 5,000-acre plantation.

Bequeathed to Virginia by Louis Hertle, Gunston Hall on the Potomac boasts carved Palladian and Chinese Chippendale rooms. Boxwood borders the garden aisles.

At right, the Mason seal.



J. BAYLOR ROBERTS, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF



The Virginia Declaration of Rights

GEORGE MASON'S reasoned words expressed the feelings that burned in the breasts of Americans as they moved through discontent, then revolution toward the liberty they felt more precious than life itself. Like other patriots, Mason did not at first seek independence, but the rights of the colonists as Englishmen. In 1770 he wrote, "We owe our Mother Country the duty of subjects; we will not pay her the submission of slaves."

His greatest work, the Virginia Declaration of Rights, adopted June 12, 1776, at Williamsburg, has a familiar ring. For as these excerpts show, Mason struck the chords destined to resound in two world-shaking documents: the Declaration of Independence and the Bill of Rights.

I. That all Men are by Nature equally free and independent, and have certain inherent Rights...namely, the Enjoyment of Life and Liberty, with the Means of acquiring and possessing Property, and pursuing and obtaining Happiness and Safety.

II. That all Power is vested in, and consequently derived from, the People; that Magistrates are their Trustees and Servants, and at all Times amenable to them.

III. That Government is, or ought to be, instituted for the common Benefit, Protection, and Security, of the People, Nation, or Community...and that, whenever any Government shall be found inadequate or contrary to these Purposes, a Majority of the Community hath an indubitable, unalienable, and indefeasible Right, to reform, alter, or abolish it, in such Manner as shall be judged most conducive to the public Weal.

VIII. That in all capital or criminal Prosecutions a Man hath a Right...to a speedy Trial by an impartial Jury of his Vicinage, without whose unanimous Consent he cannot be found guilty, nor can he be compelled to give Evidence against himself; that no Man be deprived of his Liberty except by the Law of the Land, or the Judgment of his Peers.

IX. That excessive Bail ought not to be required, nor excessive Fines imposed; nor cruel and unusual Punishments inflicted.

XI. That in Controversies respecting Property, and in Suits between Man and Man, the ancient Trial by Jury is preferable to any other, and ought to be held sacred.

XII. That the Freedom of the Press is one of the greatest Bulwarks of Liberty, and can never be restrained but by despotic Governments.

XIII. That a well regulated Militia, composed of the Body of the People, trained to Arms, is the proper, natural, and safe Defence of a free State; that standing Armies, in Time of Peace, should be avoided, as dangerous to Liberty; and that, in all Cases, the Military should be under strict Subordination to, and governed by the civil Power.

XVI. That Religion, or the Duty which we owe to our Creator, and the Manner of discharging it, can be directed only by Reason and Conviction, not by Force or Violence; and therefore, all Men are equally entitled to the free Exercise of Religion, according to the Dictates of Conscience; and that it is the mutual Duty of all to practise Christian Forebearance, Love, and Charity, towards each other.



CAVALIER MARYLAND

"Green gold" ushers in a gracious way of life

AN EARLY VISITOR found Maryland and Virginia "two Sister Countries, much of one nature, both for produce and manner of living." The great Chesapeake Bay slashed deep into both colonies, pushing a thousand watery fingers into the land. In such a setting tobacco plantations thrived. Yet Maryland boasted its own character, lighthearted and elegant.

Today's visitor can sense the cavalier spirit in three-centuries-old Annapolis where planters and their families gathered after the crop was in. Walk down to the harbor; the sails of pleasure boats recall days when tall-masted English ships swung on their hawsers there. Nearby stand buildings where colonial merchants offered "European and East India goods . . . on very reasonable terms, for Paper Money, Sterling, Bills of Exchange, Corn, Tobacco, or Short Credit." Stroll into Reynolds Tavern, now a library. Planters met old friends there.

Down Charles Street, the Jonas Green House jabs four chimneys into the sky, a badge of social standing for its owner. When not out back printing his *Maryland Gazette*, Green served as "Punster, Purveyor and Punch-Maker General" of the Tuesday Club. That gay group spiced each meeting with "toasts loyal and amorous," and debated all issues save politics. And while the Virginia planter read his Cicero in solitude, and the New Englander studied his Bible, members of the Tuesday Club argued the merits of popular English novels like *Peregrine Pickle* and *Clarissa*. Their womenfolk, in dresses of India silk, filled paneled salons with the tinkle of laughter as they discussed recent theatricals, *The Beaux' Strategem* and *The Virgin Unmasked*.

From its beginning Maryland was aristocratic. George Calvert, first Lord Baltimore, persuaded King Charles to grant him a slice of Virginia as a fief in 1632. He would hand out baronial manors to lesser lords and pocket their quitrents. He hoped also to provide a refuge for fellow Catholics, persecuted in England.

George died. His son Cecilius dispatched the first colonists in 1634 aboard the *Ark* and *Dove*: 17 gentlemen-adventurers and their ladies, two priests, and about 200 commoners. On Blakiston Island in the Potomac River a lonely cross marks where they landed and "humbly recited on bended knees, the Litanies of the Sacred Cross with great emotion."

On the mainland they founded St. Marys City, now a sleepy, sun-washed community where the first colonial statehouse stands beautifully rebuilt. Calvert urged religious toleration, and an "Act Concerning Religion" was passed in 1649. This guaranteed freedom for all who believed in the divinity of Christ, and fined hotheads who hurled such epithets as "heretik, Scismatic, Idolator," or "popish Priest." But in 1654 Puritans, who were in the majority, seized the government, disenfranchised both Catholics and Anglicans, and ruled with an iron fist until 1658, when the Lord Proprietor regained his authority and restored religious freedom.

Maryland's State House, begun in 1772, rises above Annapolis roofs. Here Washington resigned as commander in chief and the Continental Congress ratified peace with England. Maryland flag is based on Lord Baltimore's coat of arms.



Little Miss Proctor of Baltimore had not kissed the paint from the doll's cheek when she and her toy sat for artist Charles Willson Peale in 1789. Today her portrait and plaything have ended up



in the Hammond-Harwood House. Chippendale and Hepplewhite furnishings stand in the crimson-draped parlor where colonial ladies gossiped. Pewter and brass utensils gleam in the kitchen (below).



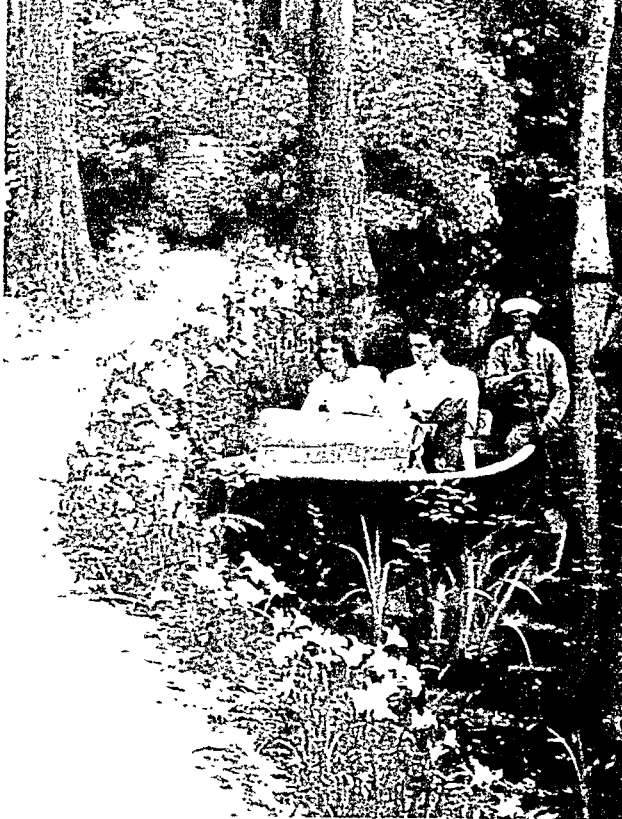


© National Geographic Map
Walter K. Morrison, Cartographer
Design and Art by
William N. Palmstrom and Walter A. Weber
Drawn by Russel G. Fritz and Robert W. Northrop

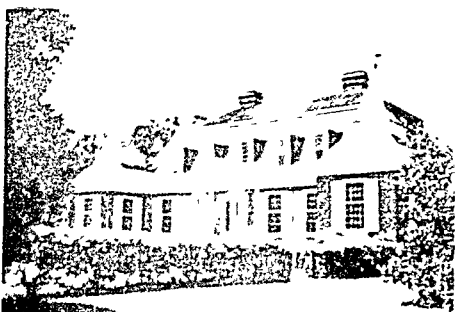


The town and province were "esteemed ye most flourishing of any in His Majestys Dominton of America."





Flowing waterways of Cypress Gardens irrigated rice fields near
 in 1900. Now they thread an enchanted, flower-decked forest.



Mulberry, built by George Washington, served as
 a fort against the Indians during the War of 1715.



Hampton, ancestral Rutledge plantation along
 the Santee, greeted George Washington in 1791.



port with nightmarish memories of Spanish, Indian, and Yankee raids. Near it, in a live-oak forest, stand the brick ruins of Sheldon Church, burned in the Revolution, rebuilt, then burned again in the Civil War. Its gaunt columns seem almost to melt into the moss-draped trees. A haunted place, and one that sums up for me the wistfulness of the South.

NORTH CAROLINA, pirates' paradise, developed slowly along Albemarle Sound and the Cape Fear River. Between the two at New Bern, settled by Swiss, Governor William Tryon built his famed palace, "the most beautiful building in colonial America." Now fully restored to the tune of more than \$3,000,000, Tryon Palace is a national show place. I toured the magnificent building, meeting place

Tryon Palace housed North Carolina's royal governors, then served as statehouse until the capital moved from New Bern to Raleigh.

Dining at the "Pallace" in 1791, George Washington noted it was "hastening to Ruins." Seven years later a fire razed part of it.

Miss Gertrude S. Carraway directed the restoration, made possible by the generosity of Mrs. Maude Moore Latham. Realistic detail includes an herb garden for the kitchen (left).

for the Assembly as well as Tryon's residence. Gazing at his six-foot-wide bed and the barber's chair where his valet shaved him, I thought about the royal governor who had planted all this luxury in the wilderness.

"He wasn't exactly popular," said my pretty, soft-voiced guide. "But ah reckon you know all about the Battle of Alamance."

I didn't, but soon learned. Back-country folk howled at the cost of the palace, and some organized as "Regulators" to end this and other grievances. Tryon's militia whipped them at Alamance in 1771.

It was part of the conflict between tidewater aristocracy and backwoodsmen, and they were indeed different breeds. The frontiersmen were Scotch-Irish, Germans, and Highlanders who had fought for Bonny Prince Charlie, been beaten by the English at Culloden, and had hung up their two-handed claymore swords in Carolina cabins.

A band of Moravians from Pennsylvania founded Salem in 1766. Now being carefully restored to its prime, Old Salem stands within the city limits of Winston-Salem, its gentle simplicity a comment on the flamboyance of Tryon Palace.

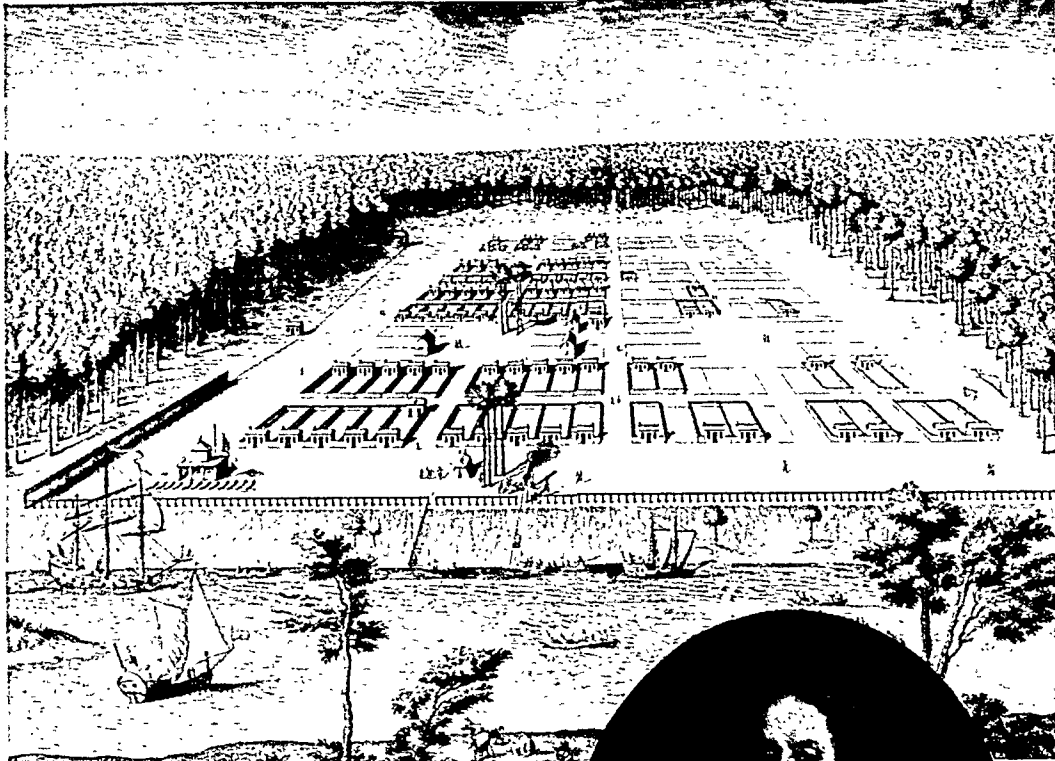
The long frontier, arching southward from Maine along the Appalachians, demanded courage, resourcefulness, an independent spirit from the lean, tough men who held it against foreign and Indian incursions. Yet Georgia, southern anchor of the frontier and last of the original 13 colonies, began as an experiment in pure regimentation. Gen. James Oglethorpe blueprinted a society that would turn English debtors into productive citizens by regulating every detail of their lives.

Off they sailed, their equipment meticulously itemized: "To every Man, A Watch-Coat, A Musket and Bayonet, An Hatchet, An Hammer, An Hand-saw, A



D. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

Old Salem preserves an Old World air, with its Home Moravian Church (right) and some of its restored buildings furnished in colonial German style. This North Carolina frontier settlement celebrates its 200th birthday in 1966.



Savannah looked like an army camp in 1734 when Oglethorpe tented beneath the tall pines at center.



shod Shovel or Spade . . . An Iron Pot, and a pair of Pot-hooks, A Frying-pan, And a public Grindstone to each Ward or Village." etc. Trustees sitting in London limited holdings to 50 acres, forbade selling or willing land, restricted movement, and decreed how many mulberry trees should be planted. Producing silk in the pine barrens was their pet idea.

The regimented colony barely survived.

Few of Georgia's many fine homes date from the early years, for wealth could not come until Georgians were free to create it. Wormsloe was one of those colonial estates granted to leaseholders who migrated at their own expense.

By the time of the French and Indian War, only some 2,000 whites and 1,000 Negroes dwelt in this tall pine wilderness—little promise of great days ahead when an elegant society would flourish amid the white columns of cotton-rich Georgia. But the colony did serve its strategic purpose by hammering back Spanish ambitions in the War of Jenkins' Ear. And as I drove through Savannah, noting the carefully laid out squares, the gridwork of streets that marched back from the river, I reflected on how much had begun with Oglethorpe and his settlers of 1733.

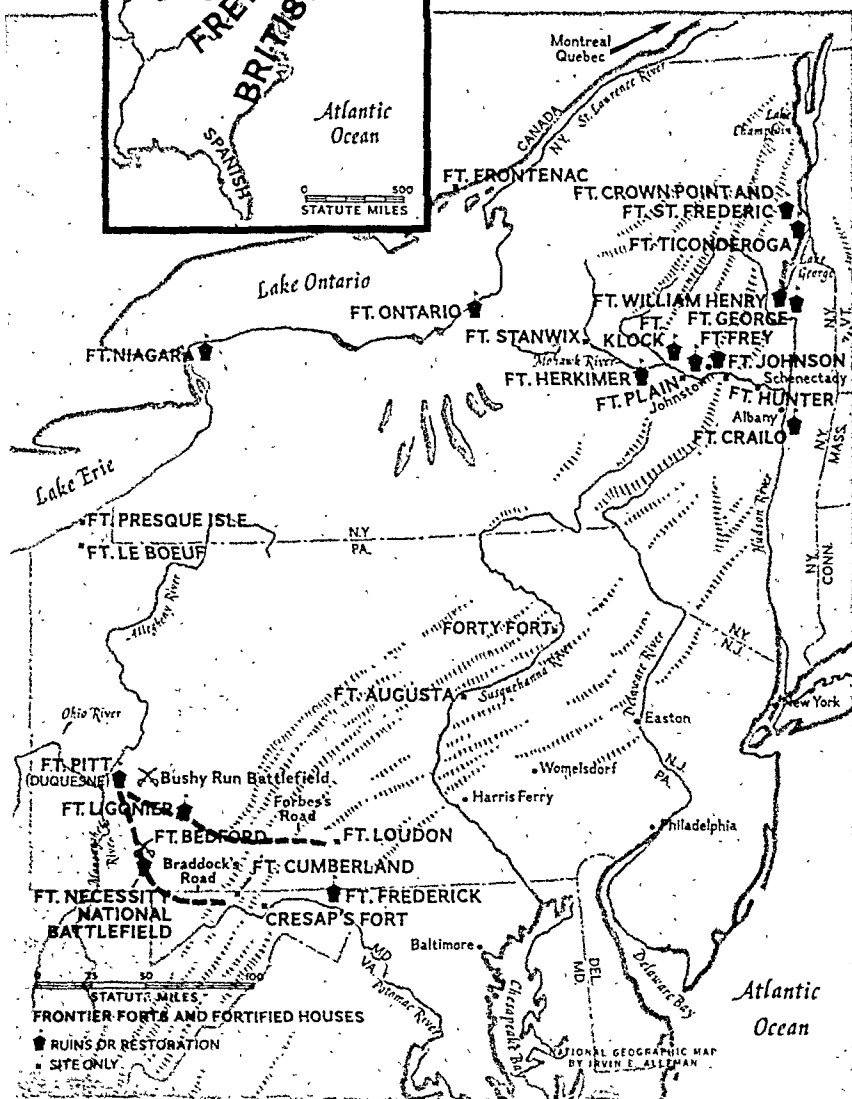
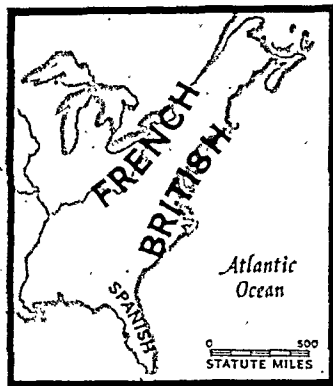
Wormsloe Plantation, Georgia's oldest, dates from 1733. This house was built later on the original tabby foundations. An old mulberry tree, planted to feed silkworms for the colony's ill-fated industry, yet stands.

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR

THREE HUNDRED AXMEN hewed a path. Behind toiled a train of pack horses, wagons, cattle, and cannon. On the flanks red-coated regulars and colonials in blue filed past waterfalls and crags. They forded the Monongahela and entered a ravine. This July afternoon in 1755 Gen. Edward Braddock's army was within seven miles of its objective: French Fort Duquesne, where Pittsburgh now stands.

Suddenly muskets roared under the forest's dense arches. Redcoats dropped. Shouting "God save the King!" the rest volleyed at an unseen enemy. Back came

Strongholds guarding passes and valleys were focal points of conflict along the frontier. Those marked by symbol remain. But sudden battles raged through the wilderness like summer storms. Masters of hit-and-run tactics, Rogers' Rangers, in buckskin and Lincoln green, here skirmish on snowshoes near Lake George.





DAVID S. BOYER AND (BELOW FROM LEFT) MERLE SEVERY AND RALPH GRAY. ALL NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

seesaw struggle for a continent. This stockade near Fort Ticonderoga overlooks Lake Champlain.

Expecting reprisal, Washington erected a "small, palisado'd fort" in Great Meadows. Here he surrendered—the only time. Route 40 travelers visit reconstructed Fort Necessity.



CHARLES WILLSON PEALE, WASHINGTON AND LEE UNIVERSITY



Joseph Brant fought the French. Still loyal to England in the Revolution, the Mohawk chief ravaged his home valley. His sister Molly was the wife of Sir William Johnson, Britain's Superintendent of Indian Affairs.

Catholic Acadians, the British herded more than 6,000 onto transports and dispersed them among the colonies and in Europe. Some struggled on foot to Louisiana, where today their name is shortened to "Cajun." Longfellow's *Evangeline* portrays the sufferings of these peaceful farm folk.

In 1756 General Montcalm took Fort Ontario for France, and a year later destroyed Fort William Henry on Lake George. An aroused England made fiery William Pitt minister of war, and in 1758 he sent General Abercromby with 15,000 men against Montcalm at Ticonderoga. For four hours Abercromby hurled his men against the outnumbered French. The defenders cut the redcoats down, regiment after regiment. Nearly 2,000 fell and the English retreated. Abercromby survived the lesson that Braddock died learning: Parade ground tactics of Blenheim and Ramillies invited disaster in the North American wilderness.

Sir William lived in baronial style at Johnson Hall, now a museum in Johnstown, New York. In councils lik



The Revolution

GEORGE THOMPSON always had taken the militia for granted. Everybody around Pomfret did. "The discipline" was simply one of the chores, without much urgency to it. Indians? Not in northeastern Connecticut in 1775. The French war was over and the frontier far away. Pirates? There hadn't been a pirate in this part of the world since they hanged Tom Tew down in Providence almost a hundred years ago. Anyway, Pomfret was a good fifty miles from the sea. Public order? Well, these were peaceable farm folks. A rough-and-tumble grudge fight behind somebody's barn now and then was about as far as they ever went. They had no habitual criminals and no vagrants.

Yet four times a year George Thompson took his musket down, checked his lead and powder, knapped his flint, and walked two miles to the village to join his company. He'd been doing it since he joined at 16, and it brought none of the thrill of soldiering. After all, this wasn't an honor, only an obligation. It was part of life, like huskings and raisings, like praying, bundling, and soapmaking.

The groups on the village green, wheeling and stamping as men shouted commands, attracted scant attention. The men wore no uniforms, no insignia of rank, and carried the same muskets, of every conceivable size, weight, and caliber, that

they used for rabbit hunting. The officers wore no swords for they might easily be voted back into the ranks. They were not superior beings but men you saw every time you went to town and often enough betweentimes. They called the roll, then inspected the guns—empty, of course, since nobody but a beefwit would appear at drill with a loaded gun that might go off when you slammed the butt to earth.

Lining up, the men heard the same old speech from the officer in charge. Then they marched for a few hours, depending on the weather. The local minister preached to them. Finally came the salute, the best part of the day.

They loaded their muskets, each as he wished, measuring out powder and ramming home wadding instead of balls. They put in real flints, taking out the chunks of wood called "nutmegs" that they used in practice. The discipline called for them to snap their strikers at an imaginary foe, pulling the "trickers" more or less in unison. It was the ambition of their officers to have them one day fire a perfect *feu de joie*, very hard to do, even for regular troops.

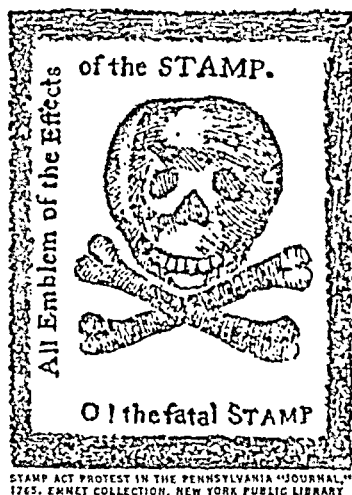
It meant facing one another in double rank, discharging their guns one at a time into the air, from right to left along the front line, then from left to right along the second line. They never did succeed in this fancy French salute. Whether from nervousness, misunderstanding, or just plain high spirits, somebody would shoot out of turn; and then all those who remained loaded would blast away at the sky with a terrific racket, give a cheer, and make for the tavern. The discipline always ended that way, with them sitting over applejack or blackstrap while they cleaned their guns, joshing, and discussing the latest news. They might stay as late as nine o'clock at night. No, it was hard to take the militia seriously. At least it had been hard until a little while ago. Now everything was changed. . . .

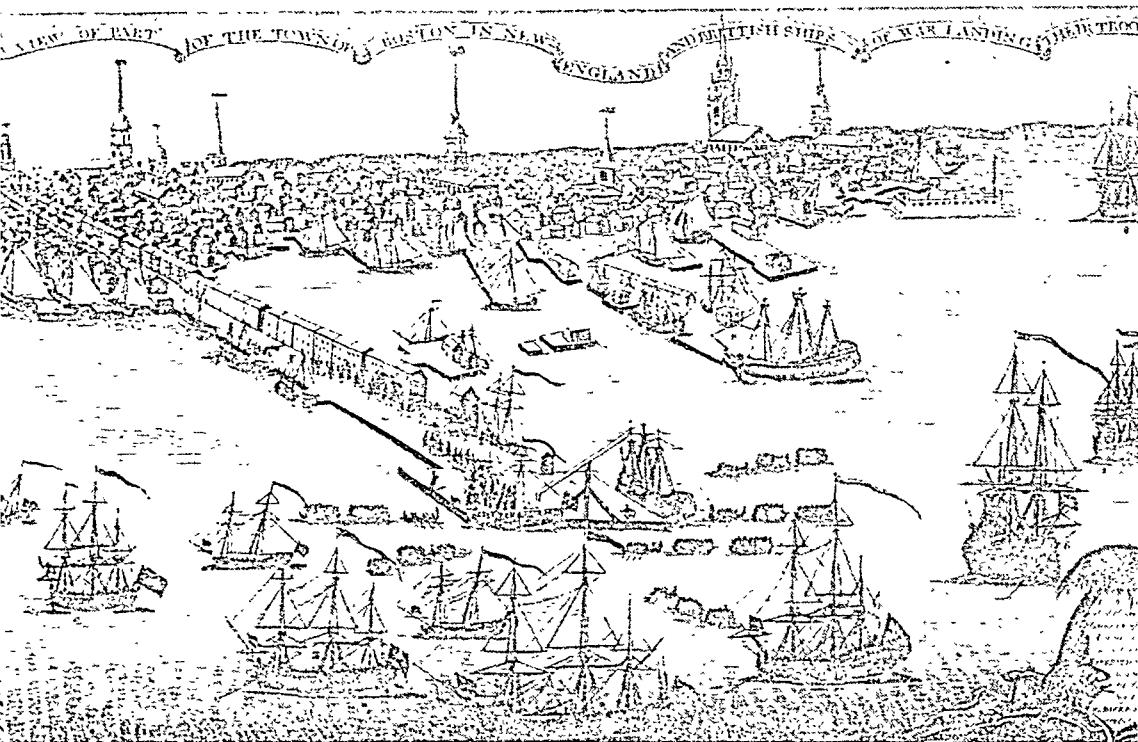
George tugged the ox to a halt and stretched, mopping his face. This was only April, but the winter had been the mildest in memory and it had been followed by an early and very warm spring. To George Thompson, toiling behind a plow, it felt like the middle of July.

A couple of hundred yards away, on the other side of a stone fence, George's neighbor had also paused in his plowing, though not for the same reason. Old Put must have been nigh on to 60, but he seldom took any kind of rest; he stopped now only because a horseman on the road was signaling to him. Old Put

dropped the reins and strode briskly over that way. George watched him admiringly. Now there was a man who *did* take the militia seriously; wore a sword too. Israel Putnam was a colonel, and more than that a hero of the French and Indian War. He was a myth, a man everyone told stories about.

George knew him as a kind and generous neighbor, yet sometimes avoided him. For Old Put, almost triple George's age, made George feel tired with all that furious activity. He was certainly a hard man to keep up with, was Old Put.





ENGRAVED BY PAUL REVERE, 1770. STOKES COLLECTION, NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

Unwelcome soldiers march up Long Wharf "with insolent Parade" toward the Old State House. Third cupola from left is Faneuil Hall. Central spire belongs to Old North Church.

The horseman continued south, and George wondered whether he had brought any news from Boston. George hoped so. All up and down the land men were waiting breathlessly for news from Boston.

Death and taxes, they say, we always have with us, and most people tend to think death the more interesting. Not so George Thompson. He knew all about death, or thought he did, for his minister made it clear that he was predestined for heaven or hell. He had nothing to say about it. With taxes it was different. Taxes were a touchy subject, and George liked to think he had a little control over them.



ERY LITTLE in the house that George Thompson had inherited from his father and grandfather was "boughten." The family had made most of the furniture. The womenfolk had hooked rugs and sewn quilts. Even the cedar shakes had been hand-hewn, as had the timbers, mostly oak and ash. Only the glass in the windows and here and there a few strategically placed nails had been paid for with cash. Virtually every piece of clothing that George and his mother and brother wore was homespun or home-knitted.

George seldom handled money; and the same was true of thousands of his countrymen. But the times when they did were almighty meaningful to them. George had been saving for years to buy a brass knocker to spruce up the front door. He

didn't want to go to Hartford with the coins only to learn that the price had gone up because of some newfangled tax imposed from 3,000 miles away. Not that the British were taxing door knockers, yet. But there was no telling where they would stop.

George was 20, and he could remember the squawk that had gone up—quite properly, he believed—about the Stamp Tax. Well, the British had backed down and repealed the Stamp Tax. They had taken off other more recent taxes too, the ones they called the Townshend duties after the cabinet minister Charles Townshend. These had been removed from paint, glass, wine—everything but tea.

But why had the British kept a tax on tea? Wasn't that just a foot in the door?

George himself couldn't afford tea. Spring water, milk from his own cows, now and then a cup of beverage brewed from raspberry leaves, or coffee made out of parched rye ground up with acorns—these he drank instead. But the principle of the thing disturbed him. A tax on tea today meant taxes tomorrow on goods that George did have to buy, things like salt and potash. Also, assuming that he could ever put enough aside to marry Deliverance Harris, she'd probably like tea.

THE ENGLAND INSISTED that the colonies needed soldiers for their protection, and that they ought to pay for those soldiers. To George Thompson this just didn't make sense. Every man in America had a gun—and knew how to use it. Sure, the militia weren't as smart as the redcoats; but maybe over here they might be more effective. Now that the French had been whipped, there were only the Indians to think of, far to the west along the frontier. What good would those glittering redcoats be against Indians, who could heave their tomahawks to cleave heads while never making a sound or showing an inch of skin? A Mohawk could not tell a redan from a redoubt—George wasn't sure *he* could either—but the Mohawk had the trick of keeping under cover, and he would be fighting on his own ground.

The redcoats weren't needed. And they were not ingratiating. Underpaid, brutally treated, they took their fun where they found it, and they were likely to find it in the wrong place. They were hardly the cream of the nation they had been sent to represent. Many had been dragged from jails and given a choice of joining the army or having their necks stretched. You could feel sorry for the poor devils but you didn't want them living next door. And you certainly did not want to depend on them to protect your home. You could take care of that yourself.

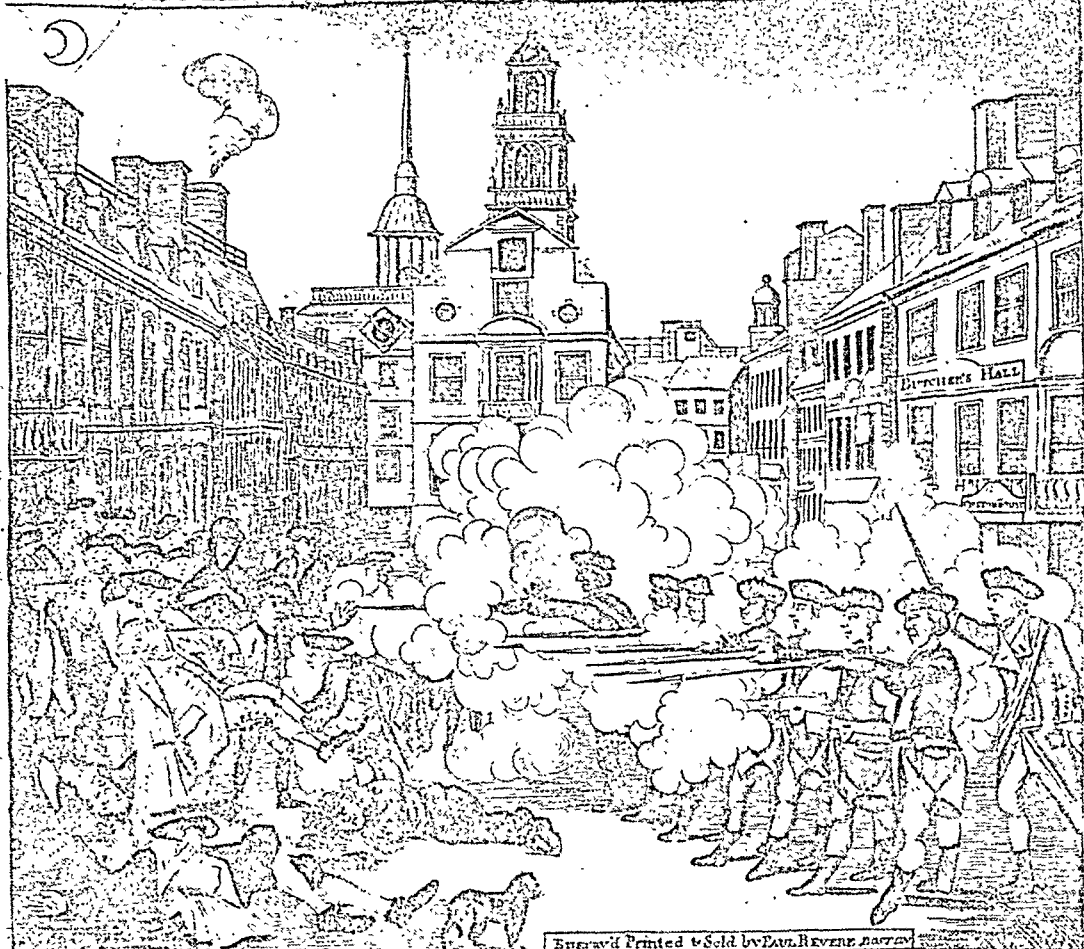
The lobsterbacks, as almost everybody called them, had an unpleasant habit of assembling outside churches and meetinghouses on the Sabbath while service was going on, and roaring bawdy songs. They were particularly fond of a tune called "Yankee Doodle." Nobody knew where it came from—probably Ireland—and nobody was quite certain why any American should be called a Yankee. But "doodle," of course, was a common name for a clown, a stupid lout from the country, a clod—just such a person, George reflected wryly, as himself.

It worked both ways, this rasping of nerves. The lobsterbacks didn't cotton to the Yankees either. Especially they disliked the people of Boston, who jeered and sneered at them and hit them with sticks and snowballs, so that one evening a few years back a British detachment, taunted too hard, got out of hand and opened fire.

This was what everybody called the Massacre, a mighty big name, it seemed to George, to pin on such a brawl; but there was no doubt that it had brought about a heap of hard feeling, even way out here as far as Pomfret, Connecticut.

And then there came the Tea Party. When three ships loaded with tea, the *Dartmouth*, *Eleanor*, and *Beaver*, wouldn't turn back, Committee of Safety members and other patriots dressed like Indians went aboard and dumped the whole cargo—more than 300 chests—into Boston Bay. This had seemed mighty funny to the

The BLOODY MASSACRE perpetrated in King-Street BOSTON on March 6th 1770 by a party of the B^YREG^T



Engraved & Printed & Sold by PAUL REVERE BOSTON

Unhappy Boston! see thy Sons deplore,
Thy hallow'd Walls bein' guard with guiltless Gore,
While faithless P—n and his savage Bands,
With murderous Runcour stretch their bloody Hands:
Like fiend Barbarians grinning o'er their Prey,
Approve the Canage and enjoy the Day.

If falling drops from Ledge from August's Ming,
If speckled's Sarcos lob'ring for a Tongue,
Or if weeping World can ought appease
The plaintive Ghosts of Victims such as these:
The Patriot's copious Tears for ends are shed,
A glorious Tribute which embalms the Dead.

But know, Earth's Sarcophagi to that awful Goal,
Where Justice strips the Murderer of his Soul,
Should vent'ral U—s the Scandal of the Land,
Snatch the relentless Villain from her Hand,
Keen Execrations on this Plate inscrib'd,
Shall reach a JUDGE who never can be brib'd.

The unhappy Sufferers were M^{rs} SAth GRAY SAth MAVERICK, JAM^s CALDWELL, CRISPUS ATTUCKS & PAT^r CARE
Killed 9 Six wounded: two of them (CHRIST^m MONK & JOHN CLARK) Mortally

PAUL REVERE'S DEPICTION OF THE BOSTON MASSACRE FANNED THE FLAMES OF REVOLUTION. AMERICAN ANTIQUARIAN SOCIETY

Yankees, just at first. The tea was worth about £1,000, and that ought to teach the British a lesson. It didn't. Instead of backing down again, the British got tougher. Instead of recalling the redcoats, they sent more. They passed a series of pesky restrictions on colonial trade known as the Intolerable Acts, and they denied all port privileges to Boston until the tea was paid for, thus as good as besieging the city. Many of Boston's 16,000 citizens might have starved had it not been for the generosity of neighbors—and the activity of smugglers.

That was why everyone waited so eagerly for news from Boston. All that was needed now was a spark. It wouldn't even have to be a very big spark to set all New England afire.

George Thompson sighed. He flexed his shoulders and returned to his plow. The horseman, he noted, had galloped away, dust standing thick behind him on the New London road. Old Put was returning to his furrow at a trot.

That might have warned George that something was wrong. No man, not even Israel Putnam, goes back to work with the exuberance of a schoolboy getting out of school. But George was so used to seeing Old Put giving forth energy in all directions that he scarcely noticed now and didn't even wave a hand.

One good sign, George reflected as he started the ox forward again and bent over the handles, was that the other colonies were getting interested in this trouble in New England. According to what he had heard, Massachusetts had made old Artemas Ward commander in chief of her militia "for the defense of this and other American colonies." It wasn't just Massachusetts. They were all writing back and forth to one another—men like John Adams in Boston, and John Dickinson the Quaker and Dr. Franklin the philosopher in Philadelphia. And in Maryland Charles Carroll, a Catholic, the richest man in America, was keeping in touch, making plans.

Meanwhile the Second Continental Congress in Philadelphia stayed in session, ready for any emergency.

It was good to know that you weren't alone, George pondered. Why, even stand-offish Virginia, where they had no use for the "wise men of the East" and didn't mind saying so—even Virginia was involved in this business. Hadn't the House of Burgesses only the other day passed a resolution declaring that "an attack made



PATRIOT TEMPER BOIL IN THE BOSTON TEA PARTY
ON THE NIGHT OF DECEMBER 16, 1773.
CULVER SERVICE

solved that, till time shall be no more, godlike virtue shall blazon our hemisphere." George had heard of Tories being treated to tar and feathers.

He had also heard about the time last fall when the Boston redcoats marched to Charlestown to seize some gunpowder. Within a couple of days thousands of minutemen had come swarming in on Boston from all the towns around, then had drifted off. Tension was so high in Boston that every drunken brawl, indeed every jeering word shouted at a soldier by a street gamin, might bring on bloodshed.

PHEW! PLOWING LAND LIKE THIS was hard work, and soon George was sweating again. He stopped to wipe his neck. Whatever made him glance in the direction of the Putnam farm he was never to know. But when he did he saw only the plow standing alone in its half-completed furrow. Old Put was gone and so was his horse.

While George stared, wondering if there was anything he should do, skinny, stern Hannah, Old Put's cousin, came out of the house and scaled the fence as lightly as any lad. In a moment she was shouting to him. "Israel says that the man came from Boston and there's trouble."

George Thompson looked at her, waiting. The sun felt very hot.

"Big trouble. Killing men right and left. Out in the country too. Place they call Lexington."

George lifted the reins off his neck.

"Israel took the horse so's to get there first," Hannah went on. "He'll have everything laid out."

"I bet he will," said George Thompson.

He left both his plow and his ox standing in the unfinished row. Hezekiah could finish the plowing. He was big enough now.

George met Hez on the road as he neared the house.

"Where're *you* going?" a suddenly frightened younger brother asked.

"To war."

He did not hurry, neither did he hesitate. It had not occurred to him that he might hesitate. He told his mother. She put up something to eat on the way.

"Deliverance will have to wait a mite, I guess," George said.

"She can," his mother replied. "She's used to it by this time."

George took his musket down from over the fireplace, checked the priming, the contents of the horn, and the knapping box where he kept his flints. He pulled his hunting shirt over his head and slipped a copy of the Book into a pocket. He kissed his mother and patted Hezekiah on the head. Then he was gone, heading north toward Boston.

He was not alone. All over New England other George Thompsons were doing the same thing, thousands of them; and within a few days thousands more up and down the Atlantic seaboard would be setting forth on a long road.

Looking at them, a proper general might have said that they weren't ready for war. But generals don't know everything. The waiting was over at last and the decision had been made. In their own hearts the young men thought they were ready. Maybe that is what counted.



KATHLEEN REVIS AND (RIGHT) DAVID S. BOYER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

On Lexington Green this boulder marks where minutemen faced the British regulars. Buckman Tavern nearby still bears the scars of musket balls.

men. Who fired the first shot, no one really knows.

Wood heard Parker order his men to disperse, "every man to take care of himself." As the minutemen scrambled over a stone wall and fled, the British volleyed again. A few Yankees fired back; Jonas Parker, knocked to his knees by a ball, was trying to reload as a redcoat pierced him with bayonet. Jonathan Harrington, blood streaming from his side, crawled toward his house across the road. He died as his wife ran to him.

Maj. John Pitcairn, commanding the light infantry companies, tried to check his men, but they "were so wild they could hear no orders." Seventeen minutemen were cut down before the redcoats returned to ranks and, with one man wounded, marched off toward Concord.

Men at Concord had been busy for hours; muskets, balls, and powder had been hauled from storerooms and hidden in the woods. At Col. James Barrett's farm, a plow had cut deep furrows, and cannon were laid in them and covered.

When news of Lexington reached the men milling around Wright's Tavern, they trudged out to meet the British on the road. Then, as a minuteman re-

called, "we was orded to the about face and march^d before them with our Droms and fifes agoing and also the B[ritish] we had grand musick."

The minutemen marched back through town, swung right, crossed the North Bridge, and climbed a ridge. There they stopped.

They saw the redcoats tramp into their village. Grenadiers tossed flour and musket balls into the millpond, then set fire to entrenching tools they found in the town house. British light infantry made for the North Bridge; four companies crossed it and marched toward Barrett's farm, three stood guard. The Concord

men, joined by con are much afraid of their legs," said Israel Putnam. "If you Bedford, Acton, will fight forever." But as the scarlet regiments lined up below, saw the smoke ris onets, one Yankee fell to his knees and prayed. Others licked Colonel Barrett, and sweat from their palms, counted their bullets.

Barrett said no. outlined his two-pronged attack—grenadiers and marines to at the redoubt, light infantry to trot along a beach, then come men marched down meet this, John Stark set his 800 New Hampshire frontiersmen bridge. Redcoats ng to the beach, and piled rocks across the sand. Stark, veteran across the river; , drove a stake 40 yards out: When those white gaiters pass it, pulling up the bridge v. In the redoubt William Prescott repeated: Aim low; pick off

A minuteman ire till you see the whites of their eyes. membered the ne ndor the King's Regulars strode forward, a steel-tipped tide. "Mager Buttrick sa hey came until you could see the hot, glistening faces and hear all of his mind he the swish of boots in tall grass. Then redoubt and fence erupt- them away from the shoke and a great scythe slashed through the trim ranks and should not tair the rithing, screaming windrows of torn flesh. On the beach whole said we wood go. W infantry crumpled as the New Hampshiremen got in an incred- Loded. we wair all o while the British pressed for that last 40 yards. On the hill be- and had stricked o found themselves standing alone, slipping on bloody grass. fire till they fir oiled, re-formed, advanced, and were slaughtered. Survivors Davis had got 1 Be some their wool tunics, and grimly charged a third time. Two in 15 Rods of t em; then the patriots' powder was gone. The British swept into when they fir... field. Their losses: more than 1,000 men—and the assurance whisled well." grenadier who fought at Bunker Hill ever felt invincible again.

Minutemen shot the smoke cleared redoubt. Two weeks later Washington took command at Cambridge.

"BATTLE OF BUNKER'S HILL" BY JOHN TRUMBULL, 1786, YALE UNIVERSITY ART GALLERY

A third redcoat lay British retreated to started back toward By then minute striding toward Col Chelmsford, Framin bury, Stow, and o They gathered at t house and watched

Irises bloom along t River where blood once North Bridge (rebuilt in Maj. John Buttrick sho fellow soldiers, for God's and his men drove ba coats. A descendant, S trick, raises prize-winn on this land, his family's



TICONDEROGA

Green Mountain Boys catch the garrison napping and seize its prized cannon

THE EXORBITANT COST of Bunker Hill shelved British plans for breaking out of Boston. Now a comic-opera adventure that took place a month before loomed in importance. Because of it, the British would be forced to sail from Boston.

On a drizzling May night some 200 ragged backwoodsmen, mostly from the New Hampshire Grants (now Vermont), huddled on Lake Champlain's east shore awaiting boats to ferry them to Fort Ticonderoga. The old French and Indian War outpost seemed a ripe plum to snatch from the British, and two cocky, impetuous leaders planned to do just that. Ethan Allen and Benedict Arnold, squabbling over the command, managed to get 83 men up to the fort's south gate before dawn.



Fort Ti's guns were floated and dragged down to Albany, then sledged across the snowy Berkshires by the muscle of 80 yoke of oxen and the will power of Washington's artillery chief, Boston bookseller Henry Knox.

In March, 1776, the Americans seized Dorchester Heights and Boston's besieged British came under the muzzles of Ticonderoga's guns. The game was up; the redcoats left.

The restored fort (right) is now a museum.

B. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER
ABOVE: PAINTING BY TOM LOVELL, COURTESY OF DIXON
"TICONDEROGA" PENCIL COLLECTION



With a whoop they plunged inside. A sentry leveled his musket. It misfired and he fled. Another lunged with his bayonet. Allen, "gigantic" in great green coat, yellow breeches, and cocked hat, cracked him with the flat of his sword and demanded the commandant. The sentry pointed to a stairway.

"Come out of there, you damned old rat!" Allen bellowed.

An officer appeared, clutching his breeches. By what authority did Allen demand surrender, he asked, puzzled.

"In the name of the great Jehovah and the Continental Congress!" Allen shouted, according to his own testimony. Others report that his answer was saltier, that he had about as much respect for the great Jehovah as the British did for the Continental Congress. Anyway, the garrison capitulated without a shot, and the Green Mountain Boys happily broke into the liquor supply.

The fort's capture, May 10, 1775, hardly ranks as a battle. But it opened the way to Canada. That fall Gen. Richard Montgomery took Montreal and Arnold besieged Quebec. And in March, 1776, Ticonderoga's cannon drove the British from Boston. The war shifted to New York, and Washington hurried to meet it.





"FORCING THE HUDSON RIVER PASSAGE" BY DOMINIQUE SERRES (1722-93), UNITED STATES NAVAL ACADEMY MUSEUM

Fire from Fort Washington (right) and Fort Lee failed to stop British warships in 1776.

HEARTBREAK AT NEW YORK

Washington proves a master — at retreat

A MONTH AFTER the British sailed from Boston, George Washington reached New York, playing his hunch that Sir William Howe would try to seize the Hudson and split New England from the other colonies. Gradually, Washington marshaled 19,000 raw troops. They came from other colonies besides New England. When they formed on July 9, 1776, to hear the Declaration of Independence, they represented a national army. They cheered the great words mightily, then tore down the gilded statue of George III that stood on Bowling Green.

Over on Staten Island Sir William built up his army to 32,000 and prepared to restore all that the statue stood for. With his redcoats he now had blue-clad mercenaries from Germany to help fight this unpopular war. When Howe landed his professionals on Long Island, Washington gingerly drew up his army in a defensive line and ruefully watched it come apart on August 27 before Howe's perfect tactics and the superb timing of his flank attack. To the wail of bagpipes and the thump and moan of drums and hautboys, Highlanders and Hessians advanced on the American front. Running from those terrible bayonets, patriots blundered into the hard-marching flanking column and were simply swallowed.

The 1776 battle for New York raged over the sites of today's skyscrapers, parks, and avenues

Assembling on Staten Island (1), Howe's army struck across the Narrows, landing unopposed at what is now Dyker Beach Park. Washington sped forces from Manhattan to Long Island, manned crude redoubts at Brooklyn Heights, and formed a battle line (2) through Prospect Park.

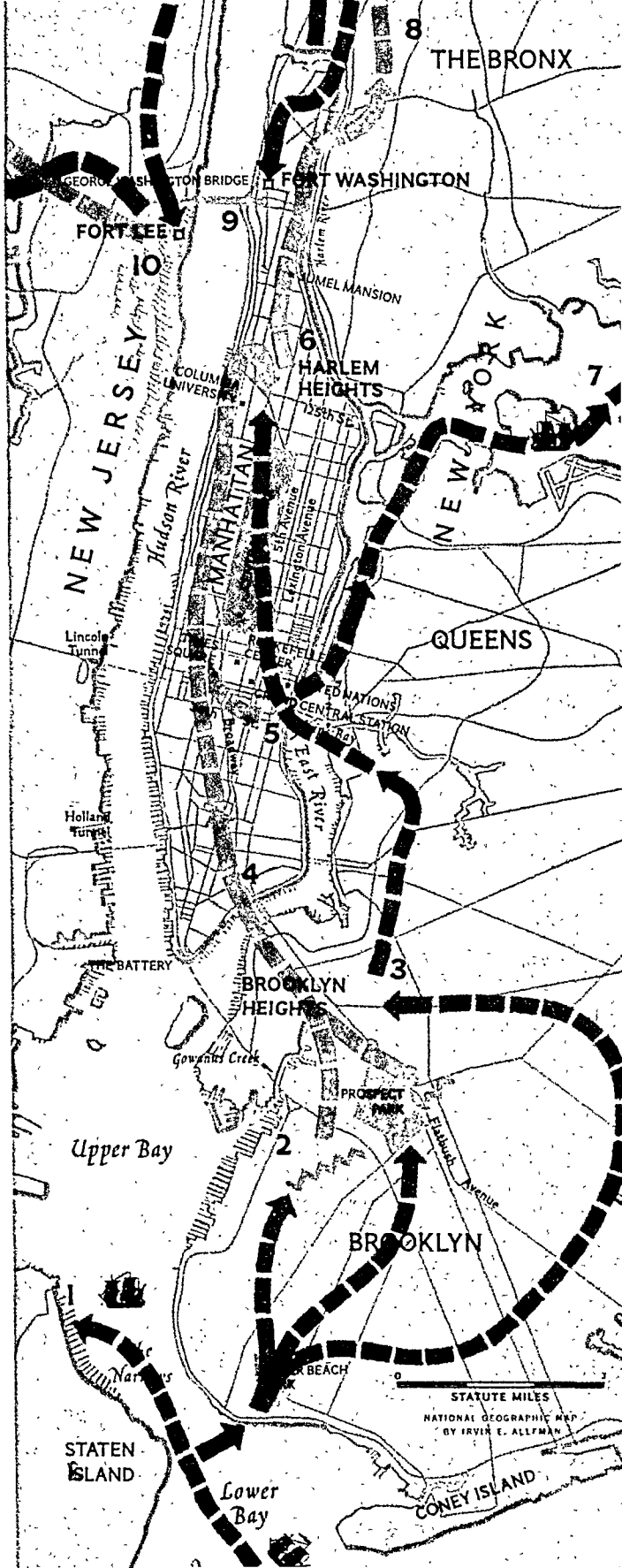
Howe engaged the Americans with two columns and led a third that circled to cut them off from behind. Survivors of the trap retreated to the redoubts on Brooklyn Heights (3). Howe, remembering Bunker Hill, mulled over what a frontal assault might cost.

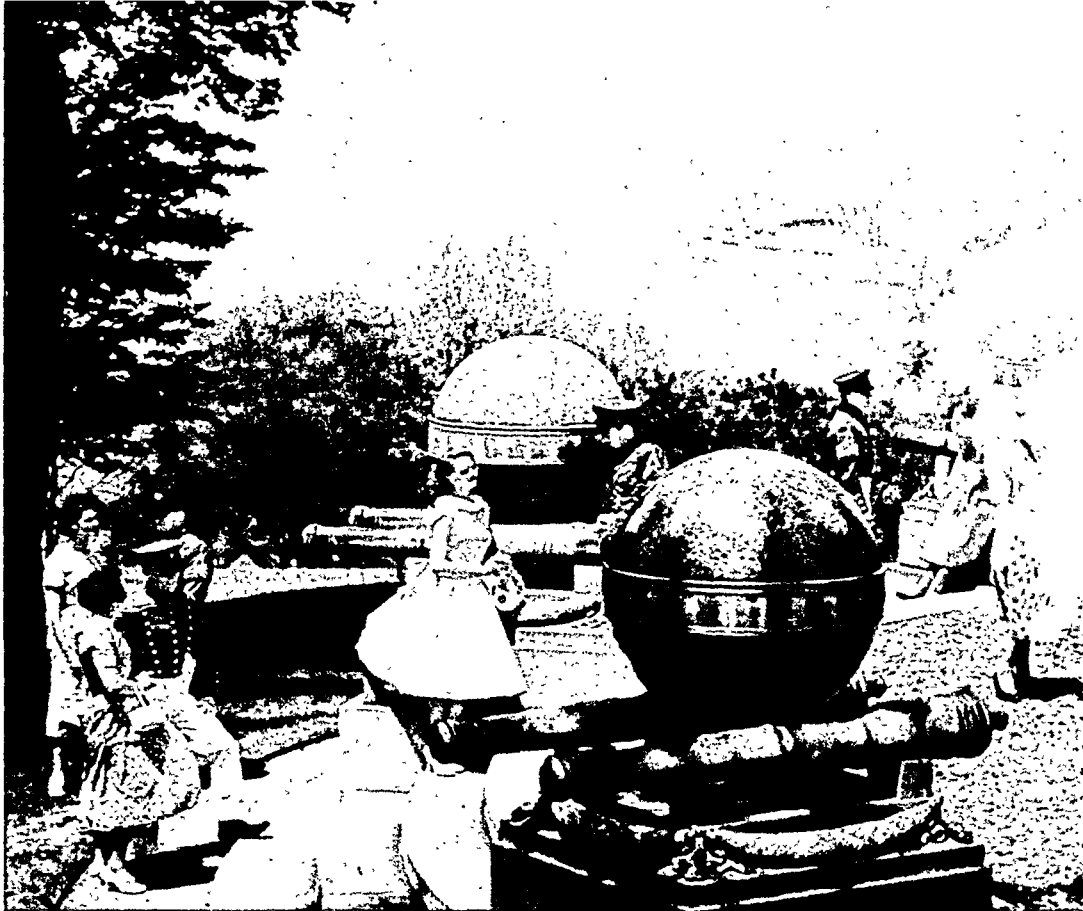
While Howe delayed, a northeaster blew in and kept British warships from patrolling the East River. Washington called for John Glover's Marblehead regiment. These leathery Massachusetts fishermen tirelessly rowed 9,500 Americans back to Manhattan (4). As the wind died, early morning fog screened Washington in the last boat.

The British followed two weeks later. They stormed ashore at Kip's Bay (5) and sent militia scampering from shallow trenches. Hearing the bombardment, Washington galloped along the route of Lexington Avenue to try to rally his fleeing men at a cornfield near Grand Central Station. The Americans finally dug in at Harlem Heights (6), lashed back, and chased the redcoats through the present site of Columbia University.

Howe, deciding against a frontal attack, three weeks later moved up Long Island Sound (7) and landed at Pelham Bay Park for another flank attack. Washington evacuated his headquarters at Jumel Mansion and fell back (8) to White Plains with 13,000 men, leaving 2,000 to garrison Fort Washington and 3,500 to hold Fort Lee.

Washington made a strong stand at White Plains, then melted north. Howe wheeled to engulf the twin forts (9, 10). Collecting remnants of his desertion-ridden army, Washington fled southwest across New Jersey.





B. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER. BELOW: CULVER SERVICE (LEFT) AND LOUIS FROMMAN

West Point became watchdog of the Hudson later in the Revolution. Here Americans stretched a mighty chain, each link 100 to 300 pounds, to bar the river to British ships.



"I only regret that I have but

WHEN Knowlton's Rangers fought the red-coats on Harlem Heights, one of their comrades was missing. Capt. Nathan Hale, entrusted with an espionage mission, was behind the enemy lines.

Disguised as a schoolmaster in frock and broad-brimmed hat and carrying his Yale diploma, the handsome, athletic former teacher crossed to Long Island from Connecticut and worked his way westward among British encampments. They say he got to within a mile of the American lines on Manhattan.

Here his luck ran out. A great fire in New York provoked mass arrests by the British.



one life to lose for my country"

Hale was picked up for questioning. When a search of his person revealed sketches and notes of installations, Hale confessed his mission. At 11 o'clock the following morning the young captain was unceremoniously hanged in an artillery park on Manhattan's East Side. Howe's aide, Capt. John Montresor, transmitted to Americans the familiar last words.

Statues of Hale stand in City Hall Park in New York and at Yale University in New Haven. Nathan Hale Homestead, near South Coventry, Connecticut, has been restored and furnished with his family's possessions.

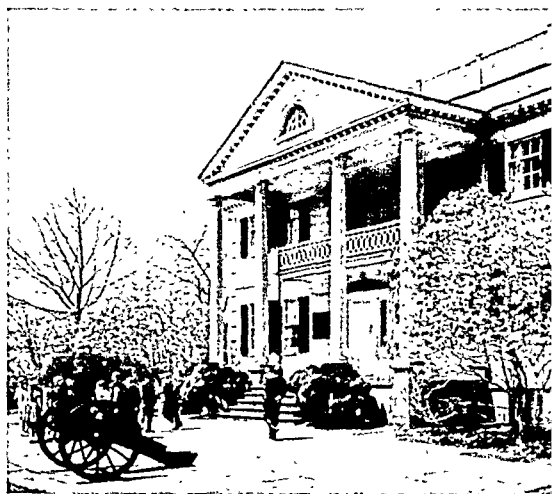
"Rejoice, my friend, that we have given the Rebels a d_____ crush," wrote an exultant British officer.

Not all Americans ran. Cut off and surrounded, Lord Stirling with 250 crack Marylanders "fought like a wolf." Florid and fifty, Stirling was born William Alexander of New Jersey, but claimed a Scottish earldom. He drank and fought with equal vigor. On this day he led six smashing charges on the troops that engulfed him before he surrendered. "What brave fellows I must this day lose," grieved Washington.

He changed his tune at the Kip's Bay rout when the militia panicked before Howe's landing party. They discarded muskets, knapsacks, even clothes. He flung his hat on the ground. "Good God!" he roared, "have I got such troops as those?"

Below Harlem Heights the British sounded a taunting fox-hunt call as they drove back Knowlton's Connecticut Rangers. Stung, the Yankees spun round and sent the famed Black Watch regiment flying. Washington nodded approvingly and called his men off before they engaged the whole British army.

But spirits were to tumble. Howe forced the Americans north and wrenched away Forts Washington and Mifflin and control of the Hudson. Harried through New Jersey in winter, Washington wrote, "I think the game is pretty well up." Still, he had a trick up his sleeve.



Jumel Mansion, built by loyalist Roger Morris in 1765, was Washington's headquarters in 1776. Now it is a museum.

TRENTON AND PRINCETON

Washington slashes back in stunning victory

FOR A MOMENT sleet-laced wind blinded the shivering Hessian sentry, half a mile north of Trenton. Then he peered again up the road and swore in disbelief. Dimly seen in the waking day, a horde of fast-moving scarecrows approached! The German, cued hair sticking out as if from fright, fled back toward his garrison with a shout: "*Der Feind! Heraus!*"

"Der Feind"—the enemy—was supposed to be cringing on the Pennsylvania side of the Delaware River, cowed by Howe's advance units at Trenton and Bordentown. Yet here they came, a spectral army in a ghostly December storm.

To Washington, earlier that month, time had seemed a worse enemy than Howe. Enlistments of all but 1,400 of his troops expired December 31, 1776. The patriot cause appeared doomed. Gambling all on one more battle from his army, Washington decided to strike at Trenton Christmas night, when the Hessian garrison would be celebrating in hearty German fashion. (Puritan scruples kept many Americans from making a festival out of Christmas.) Poring over maps at the Thompson-Neely House, which still stands in Pennsylvania's Washington Crossing State Park, the generals plotted a three-crossing attack. One force would hit to the south as a diversion; a second would cut off Trenton from Bordentown; Washington with the main force would sweep down on Trenton from the north.



ROBERT F. SISSON AND JOHN E. FLETCHER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHERS

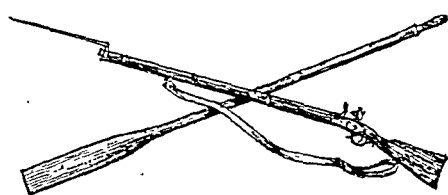
Washington's Durham boats would dwarf this rowboat at the crossing; 40-60 feet long, 8 feet in beam, they were built to transport grain, iron, and whisky. That Christmas night their cargo was men, horses, and cannon.

The ice-choked Delaware stalled the first two crossings. But crushing floes and cutting sleet merely delayed iron-willed Washington. Wrestling the current, John Glover's sea-going soldiers rowed 2,500 men to the Jersey shore. At four A.M. the march began. The shoeless trailed blood on the icy road.

At the edge of town a detachment swung left to block the road to Princeton. Henry Knox's artillery rolled to the head of King and Queen Streets and opened fire. Sleep-drugged after their bouts with Christmas wine, the Hessians stumbled out in confusion. Flitting from house to house like shadows, the Americans picked them off.

Col. Johann Gottlieb Rall, commander of the 1,400-man garrison, had spent the night at cards. He tucked a warning of the attack in his pocket, apparently unread; to him the patriots were "nothing but a lot of farmers."

Now he rode into a hail of lead to group his regiment and send it up King Street against those "farmers." Cannon fire drove it back.



Glover's Marbleheaders

A HANDFUL of crack regiments formed the hard core of the infant army, staying while militia came and went. One was the 14th Continental, mostly Massachusetts mariners who moved fast when a skipper spoke. Under Col. John Glover, merchant and shipowner, they hit the deck whenever Washington needed amphibious troops, or scrappers who wouldn't turn tail.

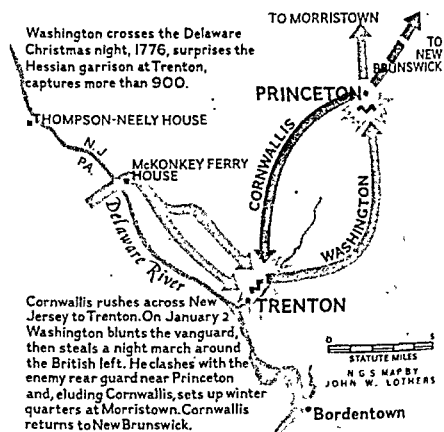
They rescued the army after the Long Island defeat, helped stem the Kip's Bay rout. When Howe landed at Pelham to flank Washington, they lined stone fences and slowed the redcoats. After ferrying the army across the Delaware, they sealed off the last Hessian escape route.

Glover's schooner *Hannah* was, in his words, "the first Armed Vessel, fitted out in the Service of the United States."



THE 1851 PAINTING, ON LOAN FROM THE METROPOLITAN MUSEUM OF ART, HANGS IN THE MEMORIAL BUILDING AT WASHINGTON CROSSING STATE PARK, PENNSYLVANIA

Washington Crossing the Delaware by Emanuel Leutze idealizes the spirit of '76. Delayed in crossing, the chilled, ragged men massed on the New Jersey shore near McKonkey Ferry House, now a state museum.



MEPLE SEVERY (LEFT) AND VOLKMAR WENTZEL (RIGHT)
BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF TOP: U. S. ARMY

PHILADELPHIA

Ben Franklin's fair city proclaims liberty

JULY 1, 1776, Philadelphians awoke to find the air hot and close. Ben Franklin, trudging down Chestnut Street toward the State House, felt the heat rise from the cobblestones. A summer storm to clear the air would be no surprise. Franklin walked slowly; gout and the exertions of 70 years had sapped his strength. But his eyes sparkled behind his spectacles as he drank in the sights of the city he knew so well.

The white steeple of Christ Church towered into the blue sky above all else. In neat brick buildings shopkeepers arranged their wares in windows made of many small panes. By the public water pumps pretty housemaids gossiped in the sun. Merchants in carriages clattered toward dockside warehouses.

It was fitting that the Continental Congress should meet here. Philadelphians, energetic at their trades and in exporting produce from Pennsylvania farms, had made their city the most populous (some 38,000) and richest in America: the "object of every one's wonder and admiration." And here the Congress must decide if the 13 colonies should stand on their own, independent of their motherland.

Franklin may have thought of the day he came to the city. He was 17 then, and Boston born. On Second Street he had bought "three great puffy rolls," tucked one under each arm, and munched on the third. He had made quite a sight, his coat pockets "stuffed out with shirts and stockings," rubbernecking up and down Chestnut and Walnut Streets. But in seven years he owned his own newspaper; and a few years later his *Poor Richard's Almanack* brought him fame and the beginnings of a "sufficient tho' modest fortune." Practical-minded Pennsylvanians relished Poor Richard's proverbs: "Fish and visitors smell in three days"; "Early to bed and early to rise makes a man healthy, wealthy, and wise." Franklin himself was never early to bed. At the *Junto*, a club he organized, he debated "the nature of vapors" and composed jolly drinking songs.

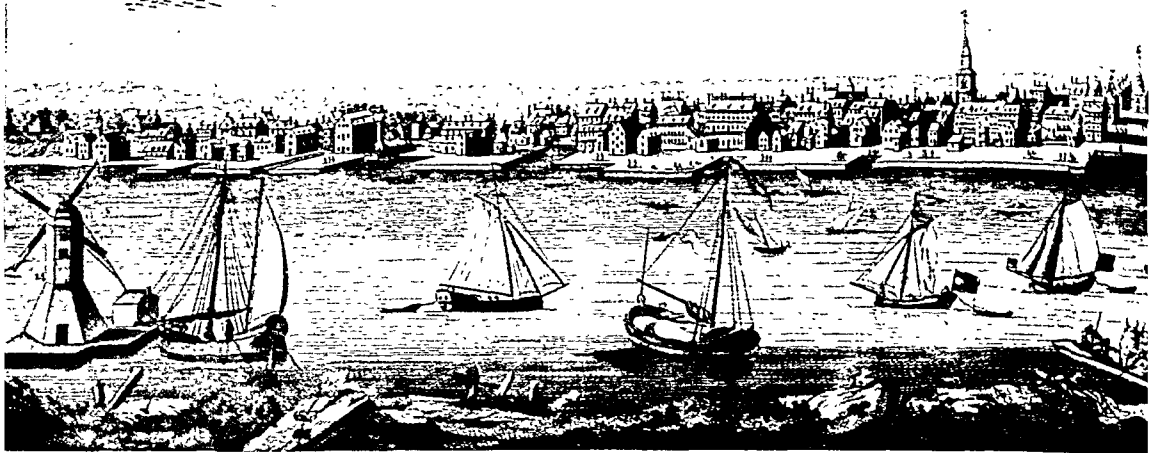
The city itself reflected his civic leadership. Streets were paved; at night constables and lamps made them safe. He helped found a circulating library (America's first), a "noble hospital" (now the Pennsylvania Hospital), an academy (which grew into the University of Pennsylvania), and the American Philosophical Society (which still meets in the brick building he raised funds for). Even the lightning rods sprouting from the roofs were his invention, and all Europe knew of his kite



BENJAMIN FRANKLIN
BY CHARLES WILSON PEALE
HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF PENNSYLVANIA

Declaration of Independence signers dipped their quills in this inkstand made by Franklin's friend, silversmith Philip Syng, and wrote their names in history.

207



America's greatest men gather in
Britain's grandest colonial city to forge
freedom's most formidable document

experiment. Town and farm folk found that the stove he invented gave more heat with less fuel.

Without a doubt, the old gentleman who stepped into the Assembly Room of the State House that July day was the most famous man in America. Half a hundred other delegates, tricorns tucked under their arms, bustled in and took seats. At noon, as they wiped perspiration from their brows and slapped at buzzing horseflies, John Hancock announced they would consider "the resolution concerning independence."

There was a murmur. The proposal offered three weeks earlier by Richard Henry Lee of Virginia was bold: *That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States, that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown....*

John Dickinson of Pennsylvania rose, a lean figure in plum-colored coat and breeches. His voice was



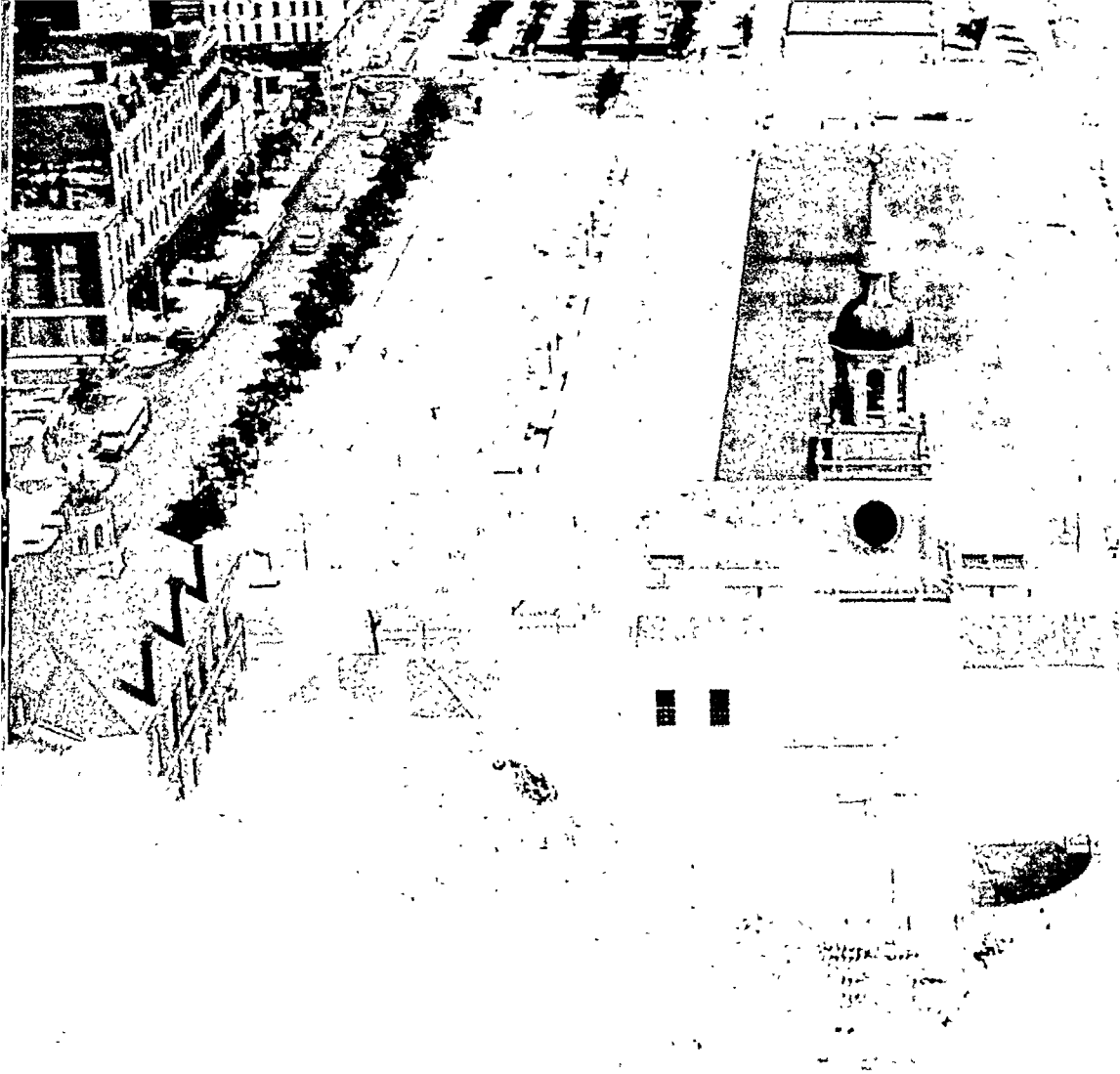
THE GEORGE HEAP VIEW OF PHILADELPHIA, C. 1754, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

"Holes dugged in the Ground, Covered with Earth" sheltered the first Philadelphians. By the 1700's, the bustling port was "Noble and Beautiful" with houses "after the Mode in London." Tallest steeple tops Christ Church, standing to-

day. Spire to the left identifies the State House where John Adams, Roger Sherman, Robert Livingston, Thomas Jefferson, and Benjamin Franklin presented the Declaration of Independence to John Hancock, who presides below,

"THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE" BY JOHN TRUMBULL. U. S. CAPITOL ROTUNDA



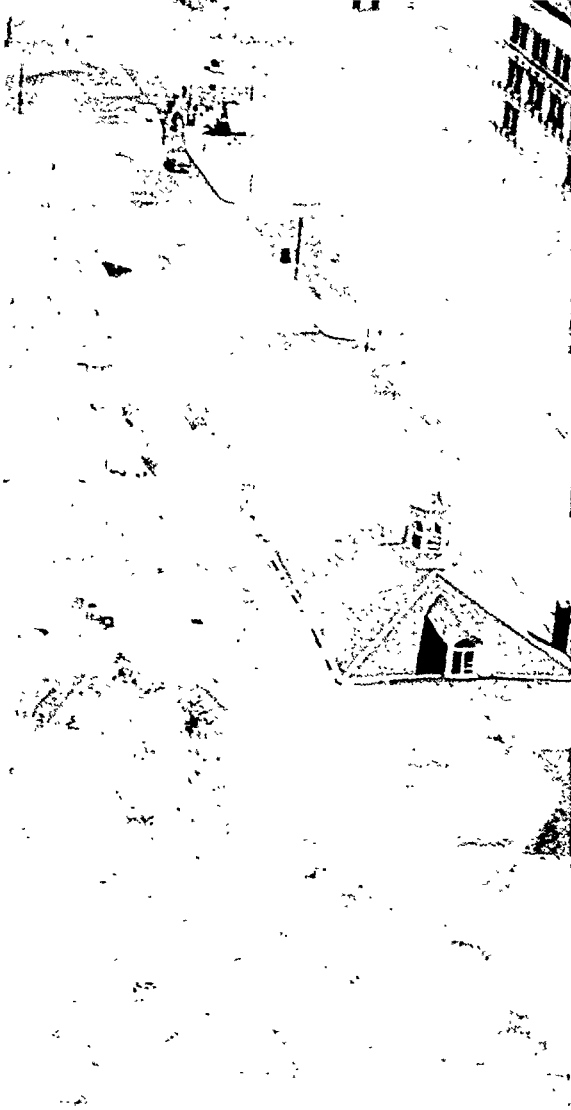


charged with emotion: "To escape from the protection of Britain all unprepared as we are, would be like destroying our house . . . before we have got another shelter." Even a year after Bunker Hill the colonies had as yet formed no union or confederation. True, the British had been driven from Boston. But wouldn't it be wiser to wait to see how things went?

Rain began to beat upon the big windows. Dickinson sat down, a handkerchief to his forehead.

Plump John Adams bounced up, said he wished he had the powers of ancient Greek and Roman orators, then pointed out how useless it was trying to bargain with a British government that simply wouldn't bargain.

As he spoke a door flew open. In it stood three men, booted, spurred, and dripping wet. They brought news: New Jersey had swung to independence. A letter from Annapolis lay on Hancock's desk; it lined up Maryland.



A beacon of liberty, Independence Hall renews the faith of Americans

Here in Pennsylvania's old State House the Founding Fathers adopted the Declaration of Independence and wrote the Federal Constitution. Within these hallowed walls visitors enter the Assembly Room where George Washington was sworn in as commander in chief. They inspect the Liberty Bell, spirited into hiding at Allentown when the British occupied Philadelphia the winter of 1777-8. Young and old come away with a new sense of history (below).

At far left stands Congress Hall, which rang with debates from 1790 to 1800 when Philadelphia was the national capital. In the old City Hall at right the first U. S. Supreme Court met. Nearby Carpenters' Hall dates from 1770; the First Bank of the United States, from 1795. These buildings and more within Independence National Historical Park form an island of early America in the heart of a bustling city.

Other Philadelphia sites include Elfreth's Alley, little changed since Ben Franklin's day, and the home of Betsy Ross, who tradition says made the first Stars and Stripes.

DAVID S. BOYER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF



Candles flickered in the storm-darkened chamber as the chairman polled the delegations. *Massachusetts . . . Rhode Island . . . Pennsylvania.* Franklin rose with John Morton. He felt a pang as three fellow delegates remained seated. His own colony rejected the motion.

The next day Mr. Dickinson stayed away and Franklin led Pennsylvania in voting for the measure. Caesar Rodney of Delaware had ridden 80 miles in darkness and rain to break the tie in his delegation. Edward Rutledge bulled South Carolina into

Souderton

Montgomery County

Lansdale

History Haunts Old Homes

PHILADELPHIA AND VICINITY

FARMILL GROVE

Perkiomen
Creek

MILL GROVE

Here the French artist began to paint the birds of America in the early 1800's

PA. 45

Valley Forge

Chester County

Battle of Paoli, Sept. 20, 1777 *

WAYNESBOROUGH:

Birthplace of Gen. Anthony Wayne.

His father built the main house in 1740.

William Wayne, the general's great-great-great-grandson, occupies it today.

Bryn Mawr

~~Ardmore~~

PONT
READING

Merion

PHI

Delaware County

West Chester

Media

JOHN BARTRAM HOUSE: E

Site of the first outstanding botanical garden in the United States.

Battle of the
Brandywine,
Sept. 11, 1777

GILPIN HOUSE:

General Lafayette's headquarters
before the Battle of the Brandywine,
September 11, 1777.

Chadds Ford

PENNSYLVANIA
DELAWARE

~~Chester~~

Delaware River

Fr. Miffim

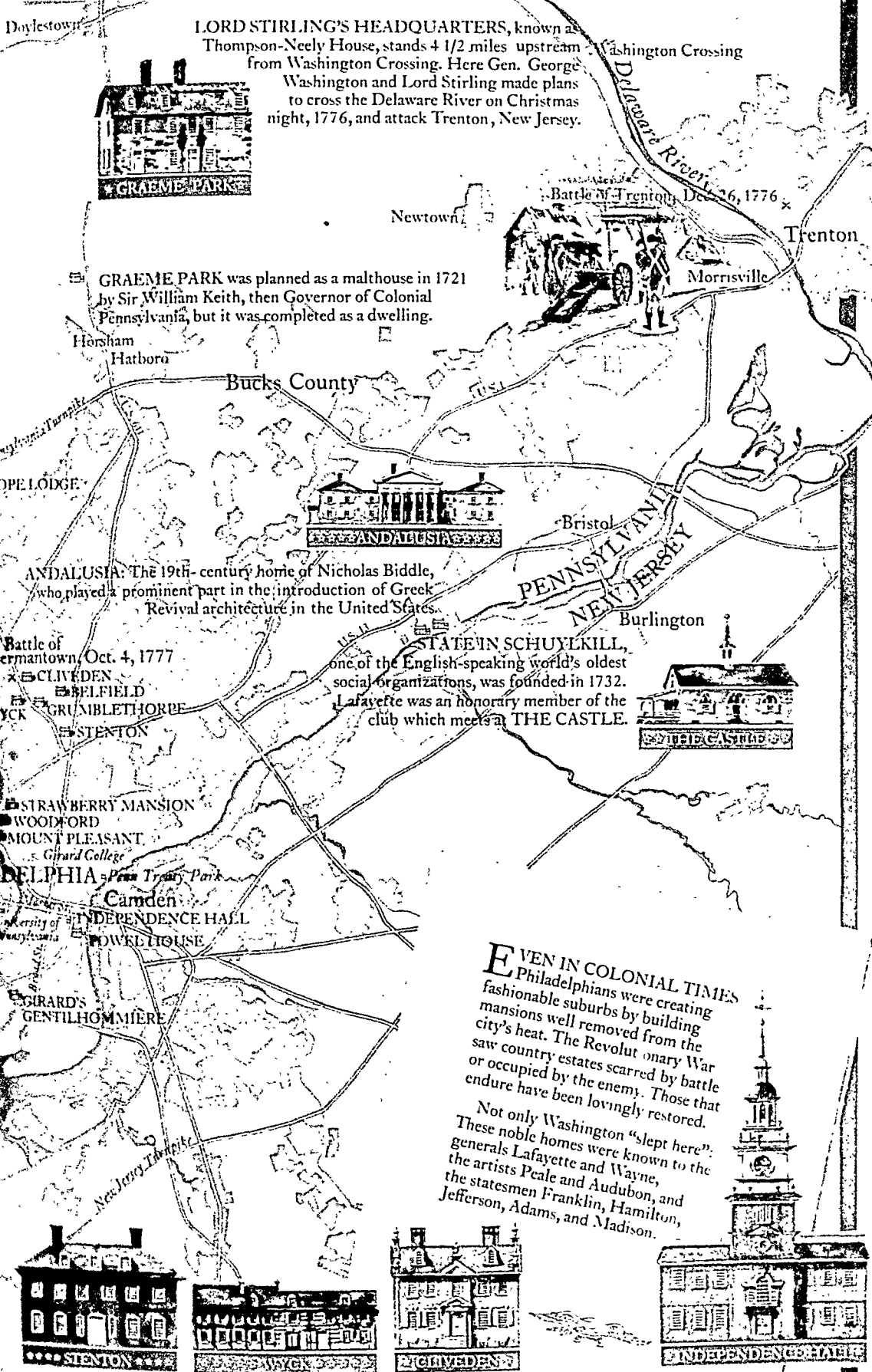
STATUTE MILES

Map by National Geographic Cartographers
W. N. Palmstrom and J. E. Alleman

© N.G.S

Wilmington

EMILIE CASTANET **SPOWELL HOUSE**



LORD STIRLING'S HEADQUARTERS, known as Thompson-Neely House, stands 4 1/2 miles upstream from Washington Crossing. Here Gen. George Washington and Lord Stirling made plans to cross the Delaware River on Christmas night, 1776, and attack Trenton, New Jersey.



GRAEME PARK was planned as a malthouse in 1721 by Sir William Keith, then Governor of Colonial Pennsylvania, but it was completed as a dwelling.



Battle of Trenton, Dec. 26, 1776

Bucks County



ANDALUSIA: The 19th-century home of Nicholas Biddle, who played a prominent part in the introduction of Greek Revival architecture in the United States.

Bristol
PENNSYLVANIA
NEW JERSEY

Burlington



STATE IN SCHUYLKILL, one of the English-speaking world's oldest social organizations, was founded in 1732. Lafayette was an honorary member of the club which meets at **THE CASTLE**.

Battle of Red Bank, Oct. 4, 1777
CLIVEDEN
BELFIELD
GRUMBLETHORPE
STANTON

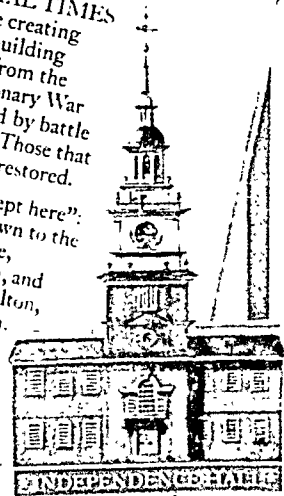
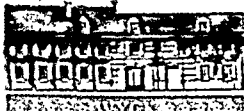
STRAWBERRY MANSION
WOODFORD
MOUNT PLEASANT

PHILADELPHIA
Camden
INDEPENDENCE HALL
POWELL HOUSE

GIRARD'S GENTILHOMMIERE

EVEN IN COLONIAL TIMES Philadelphians were creating fashionable suburbs by building mansions well removed from the city's heat. The Revolutionary War saw country estates scarred by battle or occupied by the enemy. Those that endure have been lovingly restored.

Not only Washington "slept here": generals Lafayette and Wayne, the artists Peale and Audubon, and the statesmen Franklin, Hamilton, Jefferson, Adams, and Madison.



line. The New Yorkers, informed the day before that a British fleet approached Long Island, still balked. But they promised their vote.

The will of the Congress had spoken. In formal session "the thing was done."

Three weeks earlier a young red-haired Virginian had begun composing a declaration, should it be needed. On July 4 Thomas Jefferson winced as the Congress changed a word here, a phrase there. A paragraph he cherished—condemning slavery—was stricken in deference to plantation owners. At day's end the body adopted the magnificent paper which began:

When in the Course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another. . . .

FROM Savannah to Boston patriots cheered and cannon boomed at the news. Now, as John Adams wrote, "Nothing will remain but war."

Redcoats seized New York, were hit hard at Trenton and Princeton. In August, 1777, General Howe sailed with a powerful army up Chesapeake Bay. Washington met him at Chadds Ford on the Brandywine, was outflanked by Cornwallis, and withdrew. Congress fled to Lancaster, then to York.

On September 26, British dragoons and Hessians paraded into Philadelphia amid band music and "the acclamation of some thousands of the inhabitants, mostly women and children."

Desperately, Washington struck the main British camp at Germantown. For

Benedict Arnold bought Mount Pleasant for his bride, but betrayed his country before they could move in. The Philadelphia Museum of Art has refurnished the 1761 home with Chippendale by cabinetmakers of the city.

DAVID S. BOYER AND (LEFT) THOMAS NEBBIA,
BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

Hospitality glows in the Powel House, welcoming all to elegant rooms where Washington and other notables wined, dined, and danced.





THOMAS NEBBIA, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

Waynesborough was ransacked by British. They even bayoneted the boxwood, the story goes. But the owner, Gen. Anthony Wayne, was away at Paoli, where redcoats routed his troops. A descendant of "Mad Anthony" owns the 1724 house.

Hope Lodge sheltered soldiers wounded at Germantown. Visitors now find war echoes faint amid the graceful furnishings, carved moldings, and Delft tile fireplace fronts in this stately Georgian home. Buying it in 1746, Samuel Morris reportedly quipped to friends, "I've got the pen; all I want now is the sow!" His betrothed swiftly broke off their engagement.

hours the battle hung in the balance; then the Americans were forced into retreat. Howe's officers settled snugly for the winter in Philadelphia's fine houses.

Many of those old homes still stand, where visitors recapture the luxury and drama of days when our nation was born. Enter the Powel House and ascend to the great drawing room upstairs with its gilded mirrors, Chippendale furnishings, and carved mantel. Here Mayor Samuel Powel entertained the city's elite. Guest John Adams relished a "most sinful feast . . . curds and creams, jellies, sweetmeats of various sorts, twenty sorts of tarts, fools, trifles, floating islands, whipped sillibubs &c. &c." When the British took over, patriot Powel and his family had to move into the back portion, but their charm parried other reprisals.

In some houses the British were welcomed. At Woodford candlelight shone on officers in scarlet sipping tea with Tory ladies. Rebecca Woodford was a belle of the *Mischianza* honoring General Howe.

For that spring pageant, staged by Capt. John André on the banks of the Schuylkill, "fourteen young ladies were dressed alike: white Poland dresses of Mantua with long sleeves, a gauze turban spangled, and sashes around the waists." Officers in knightly attire jousting for their favor. Wrote one happy girl to a friend in the country, "You'd have an opportunity of raking as much as you choose. . . I've been but three evenings alone since we moved to town."

Mount Pleasant opened British eyes with its pedimented door beneath a Palladian window, its hand-tooled cornices, pilasters, and recessed china cupboards. No wonder ambitious Benedict Arnold plunged himself even deeper in debt to buy the house in 1779 for his bride Peggy Shippen. It stands in Fairmount Park

acre reserve to its original condition as a military camp. Log cabins copy those built by Continental troops. Each follows Washington's specifications for 900 12-man "hutts." The reconstructed hospital is a small one-room log structure with a rustic operating table at its center. Surgeons had to amputate frozen, gangrenous limbs without benefit of anesthesia.

Park guides say that the question most commonly asked is, "Where was the Battle of Valley Forge fought?" There was none, of course. But sickness, privation, exposure killed more than 3,000 men. Many were buried where they died.

With one unmarked grave goes a sad little story about a soldier who persistently stole chickens from a neighboring farm. The owner appealed to Gen. Anthony Wayne, who seemed too preoccupied to give attention.

"What am I to do?" the farmer asked impatiently.

"Shoot him," snapped Wayne.

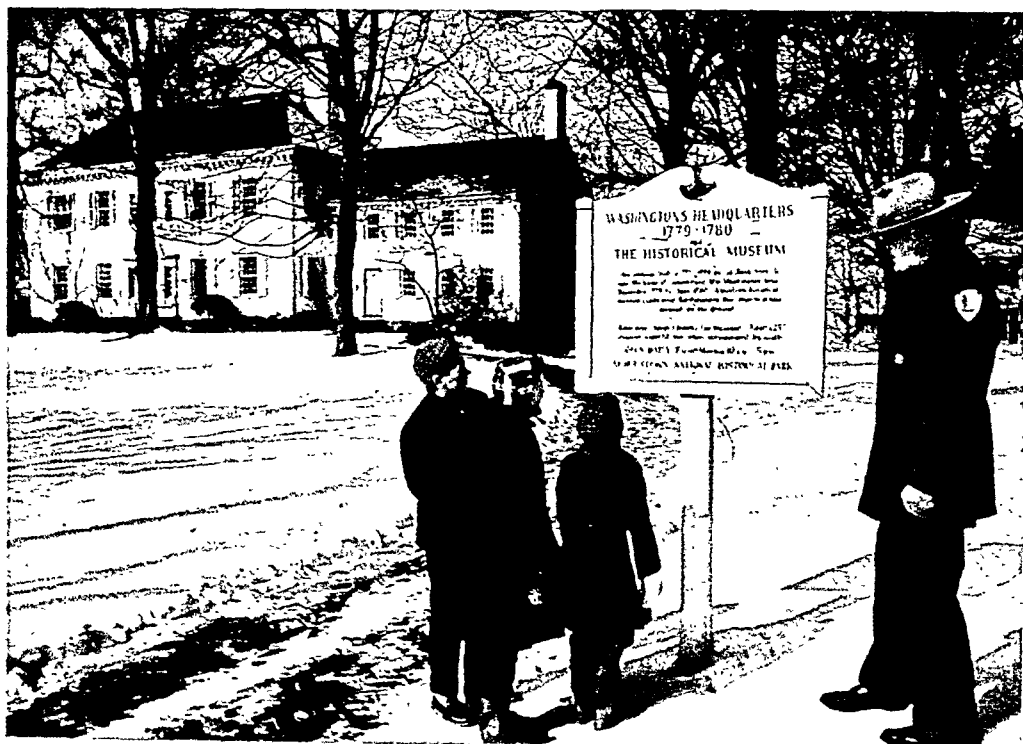
The farmer did.

Tracing old fortifications around the cantonment, visitors come upon memorials to regiments recruited in the 13 colonies, and to Europeans who helped America win independence: Steuben, Pulaski, and De Kalb. Others from overseas served at Valley Forge. And a party of Oneida Indians contributed their scouting talent.

Washington's headquarters, a two-story stone farmhouse, looks today as it did when he lived there. Martha Washington joined him for his 46th birthday, watched his health, and won hearts by referring to him as "the old man."

With spring came the miracle of dogwood blossoms—they still come out on some 50,000 trees. A run of shad right up to Pawling's Ford filled empty bellies with fish. Troops played rounders, forerunner of baseball. Best of all was Washington's momentous announcement: France had joined the war on America's side, thanks to the great victory at Saratoga.

HOWELL WALKER



SARATOGA—THE TURNING POINT

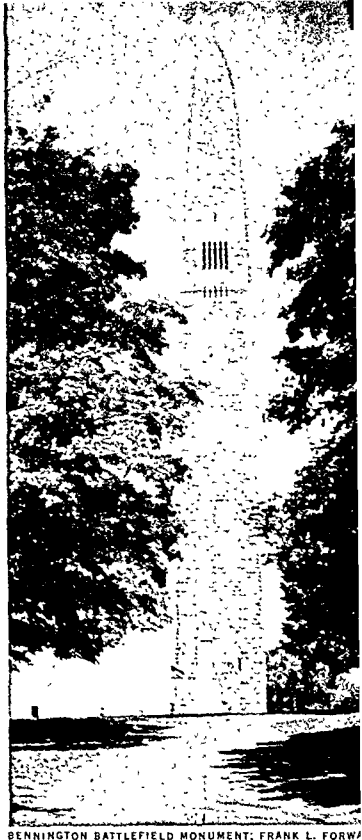
Gentleman Johnny comes a cropper

WASHINGTON, soon to move toward Valley Forge in late 1777, heard news from the north that gave him hope in the face of hardship. A drama had been enacted on the bright autumnal stage of the Hudson Valley. A likely British triumph had been rewritten to give America a smash hit.

The plot was familiar: The British were to push down from Canada and cut off New England. It had been tried before and had failed when Benedict Arnold patched together a fleet of small vessels on Lake Champlain and hurled them against the British at Valcour Bay. This time British hopes rode with Gen. John Burgoyne, an elegant, amusing amateur dramatist beloved by his men, who called him "Gentleman Johnny." He started south with a light heart and 8,000 troops, hoping to join at Albany with Howe coming up the Hudson from New York, and Col. Barry St. Leger sweeping through the Mohawk Valley from the west.

Burgoyne's flotilla slipped down Lake Champlain, a glittering pageant—British in scarlet, Hessians in blue, rangers in green, and redskins leading the way in canoes. Fort Ticonderoga's homespun garrison took off before them. But instead of dispersing, the rebels tore up bridges, burned crops, and felled trees across the





trails. Axmen chopped a road for the General's baggage wagons. Unmounted Hessian dragoons limped in their high, tight boots. The supply line stretched thin. Worst of all, Howe sent word that he would head for Philadelphia, not Albany.

There was still St. Leger. He came down the Mohawk as scheduled and paraded his redskins before Fort Stanwix. The rebels refused to panic. Nicholas Herkimer's militia marched to the rescue. In a ravine near Oriskany, St. Leger's Indians led by Joseph Brant ambushed the force and shot Herkimer from his horse. The tough old Indian fighter propped himself against a tree and coolly directed his men as they fought out of the trap.

General Arnold scented battle and stormed off to relieve Fort Stanwix. He sent a false rumor ahead that overwhelming American forces were on the way. The Indians swallowed the tale and vanished like wraiths into the forest. St. Leger could only give up his plans and retreat. He too would miss the reunion at Albany.

Gentleman Johnny was having troubles on his eastern flank. He had sent a detachment, mostly Hessians, to scour the country for horses and food. As they moved toward Bennington (now in Vermont), John Stark, hero of Bunker Hill, met them with 2,000 shirt-sleeved Yankees. "We'll beat them before night," cried he,

"Post two men behind each tree!" Herkimer orders at Oriskany. Seeing that the Indians would rush a man before he could reload, the wounded general told his troops to fight in pairs.



IDEALIZED PAINTING BY JOHN TRUMBULL, U.S. CAPITOL ROTUNDA

"The fortune of war, General Gates, has made me your prisoner," said General Burgoyne, tendering his sword in the final act of the Saratoga drama. Colonel Morgan stands at right.

"or Molly Stark will be a widow!" And his farmers rose and mowed down the Germans like ripe wheat.

Far from lighthearted now, Burgoyne urged his weakened army southward, crossing the Hudson near Saratoga (now Schuylerville). Ahead stood Bemis Heights, lined with increasing numbers of well-fed, well-armed country boys spoiling for a fight. They blocked the way.

September 19 dawned clear and crisp. Drums rolled in the British camp. Men lined up and swung off toward Bemis Heights. They didn't know that high in distant trees, hidden by yellowing leaves, American scouts watched every move. The main column of redcoats reached a clearing, Freeman's Farm. Pickets moved into the open, feeling their way across. Suddenly the silence was ripped by the ugly, flat cracking of Pennsylvania rifles. Men dropped in soggy bundles, the rest high-tailed it back to the main force. After them came a buckskin horde led by a towering Virginia teamster, Dan Morgan.

Frantically, the British regulars aligned and sent a crashing volley. The riflemen reeled back, but rallied at the gobble of a wild turkey—Morgan's call. Lead whistled across Freeman's Farm as the battle swayed. Then fire-eating Arnold flung New Hampshire Continentals at a gap in the ragged red line. The king's men wavered, came close to cracking, but Arnold's momentum was spent. He got no help from the cautious American commander, Horatio Gates. As darkness closed in, artillery gave the Yankees "a whiff of grapeshot" at close range. They melted into the forest. Burgoyne held the field—but he had been stopped cold.

Help must come from New York if he was to continue the campaign. But Howe had gone south to Philadelphia. Clinton, his replacement, offered merely to "try something . . . of use."

Burgoyne's last act began October 7 on a tragic note. All that his hungry men had left was courage. He called on it, sending them once more against Bemis Heights. And again Arnold battered them back. Although Arnold had been relieved of command after a quarrel with Gates, he led the Continentals to victory, riding at one point right across the field of fire, a reckless blur in a hail of bullets. He dropped, wounded, as the British and Hessians caved in.

Clinton, at last on the move, seized two forts up the Hudson and wrote Burgoyne: "I sincerely hope this little success of ours may facilitate your operations."

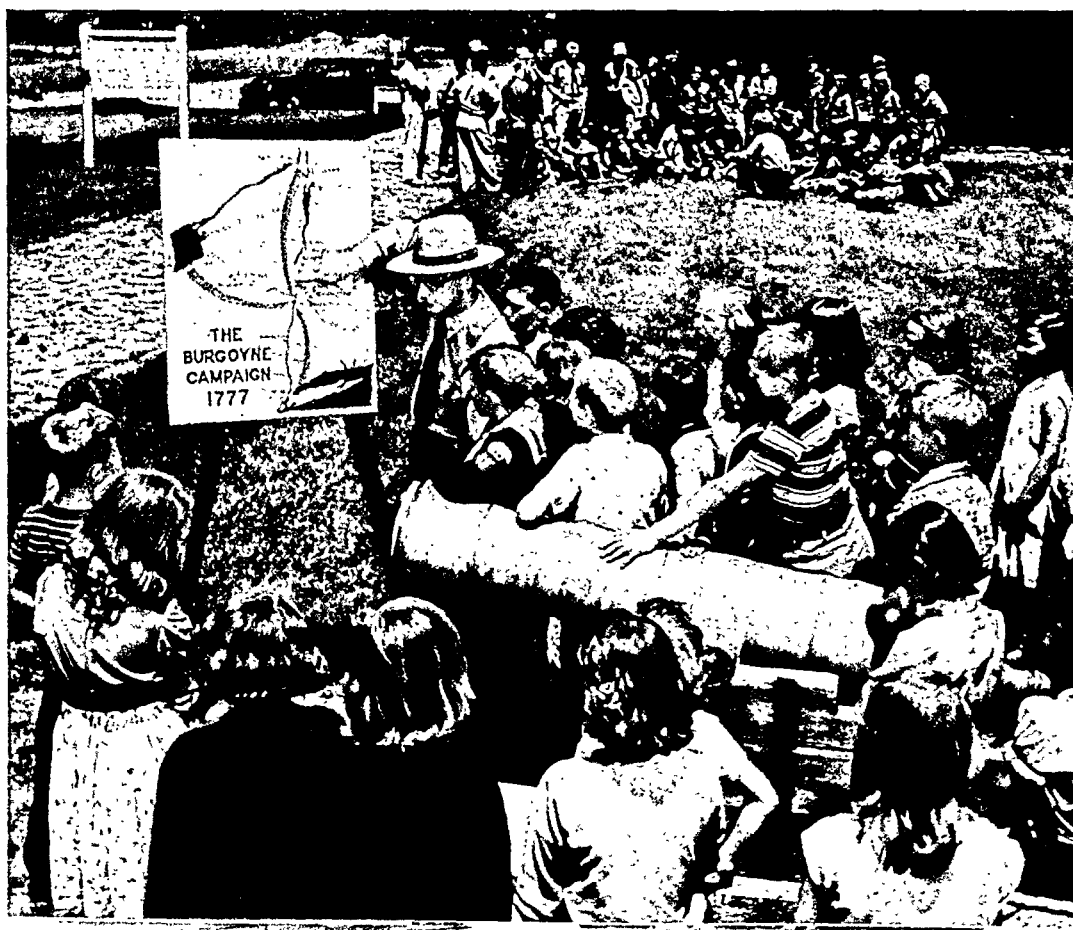
But the curtain was falling for playwright Burgoyne. On October 17 he surrendered at Saratoga.

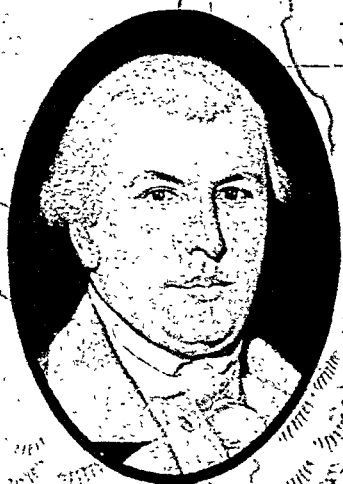
France had been waiting for just such a victory. She declared herself an ally. ROSS BENNETT



ROBERT F. SISSON, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

A stone boot honors Benedict Arnold the Saratoga hero, not the West Point traitor. It bears epaulets but no name. A bullet smashed his leg as he led Americans to victory on this field, now a national historical park (below).





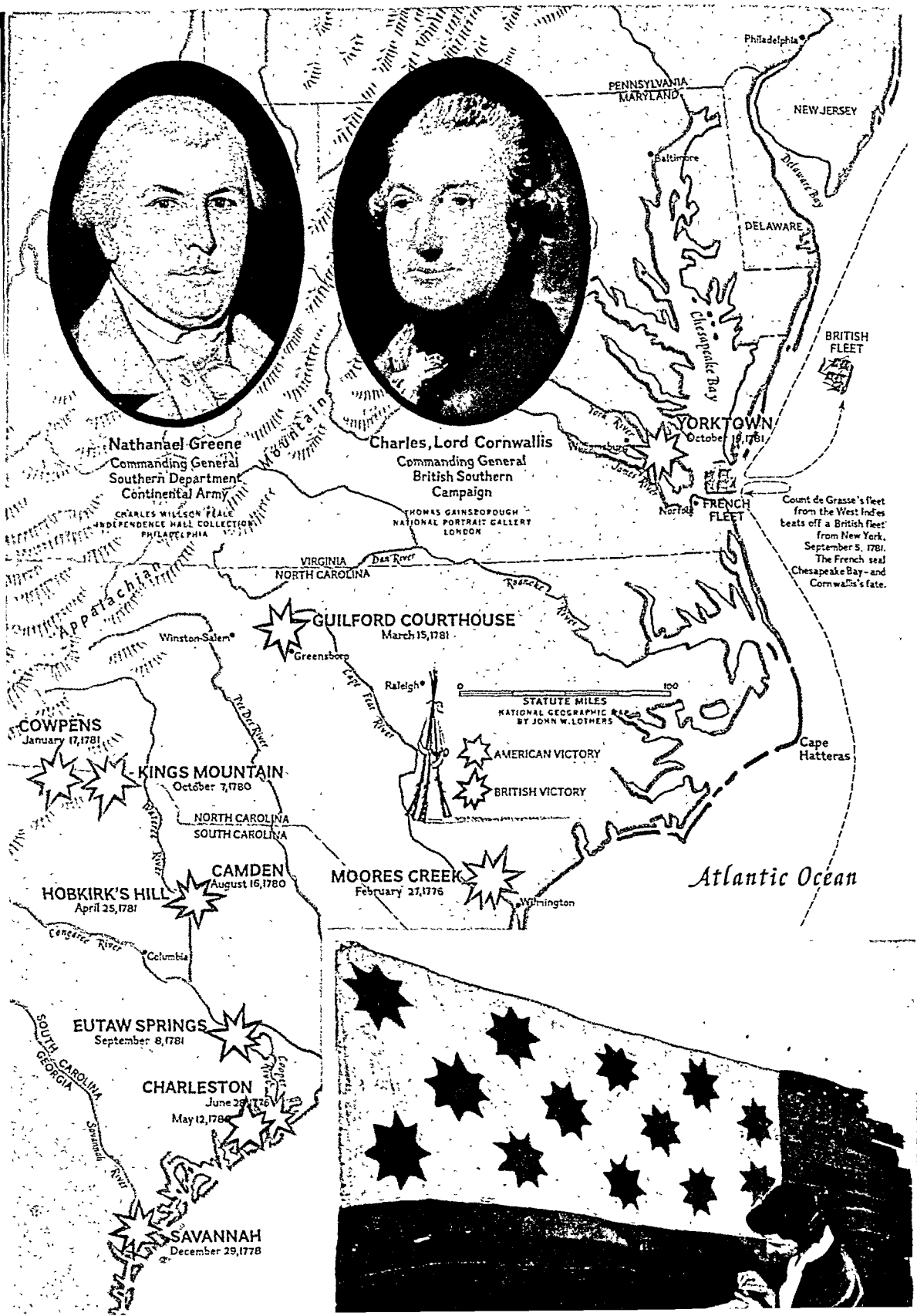
Nathanael Greene
Commanding General
Southern Department
Continental Army

CHARLES WILLSON FOLEY
INDEPENDENCE HALL COLLECTION
PHILADELPHIA



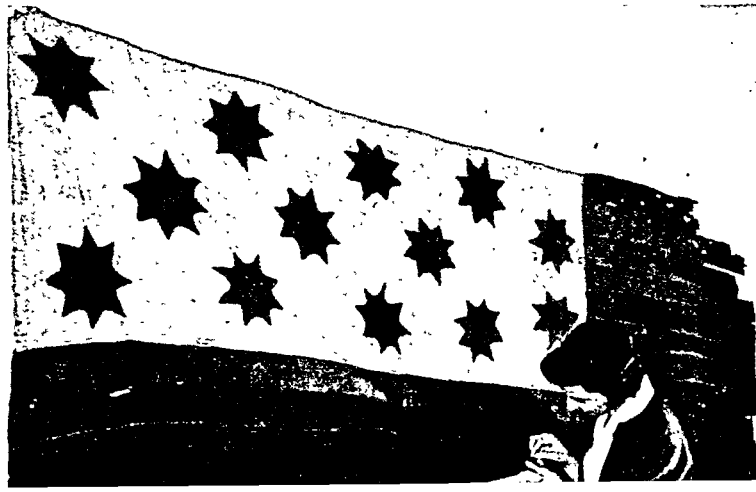
Charles, Lord Cornwallis
Commanding General
British Southern
Campaign

THOMAS GAINSFORTH
NATIONAL PORTRAIT GALLERY
LONDON



Count de Grasse's fleet
from the West Indies
beats off a British fleet
from New York,
September 5, 1781.
The French seal
Chesapeake Bay—and
Cornwallis's fate.

Atlantic Ocean



WAR IN THE SOUTH

"We fight, get beat, rise and fight again"

REDCOATS MARCH almost at will through the pine forests. But guerrillas boil up behind them like a ship's wake and the land is never really conquered. . . . Patriots battle loyalist forces which haven't a British soldier in them. A young militia officer binds his father so the old Tory can't help the enemy. . . . Hunger, disease stalk the ravaged countryside. . . .

This is the war in the South: sometimes army against army, sometimes patriot against loyalist neighbor in savage civil war. It matched British Col. Banastre Tarleton, who butchered militia even after they raised the white flag, against Francis Marion, the "Swamp Fox," who struck like lightning, then vanished.

Counting on strong loyalist support, General Clinton had tried to invade the South in 1776. But Carolina patriots whipped his Tory allies at Moores Creek and drove his fleet from Charleston. Stalemate in the North brought the British back. They took Savannah late in 1778 and overran Georgia. In 1780 Clinton captured Charleston in America's worst defeat of the war, and left Cornwallis to hold "this miserable country."

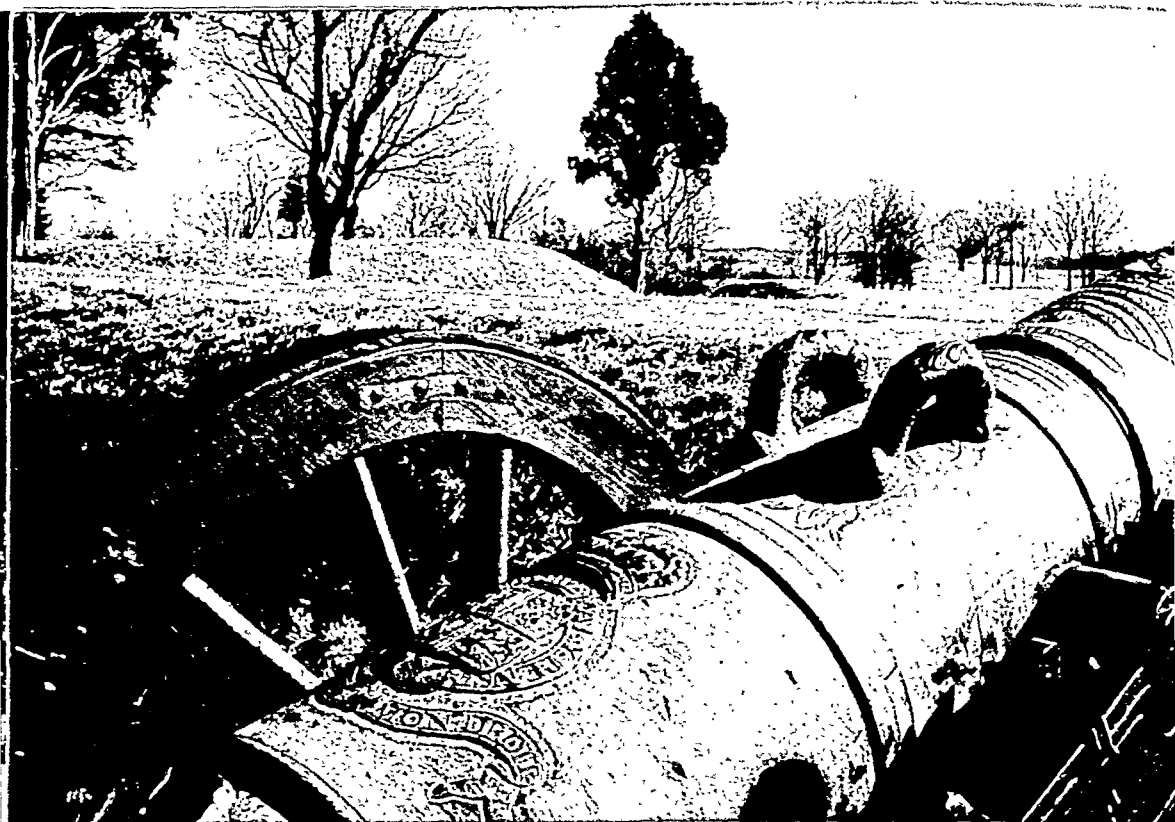
Moving north, Cornwallis clashed with the Americans at Camden. Continentals fought stubbornly, but militia ran "like a Torrent." The way clear for his invasion of North Carolina, Cornwallis sent Patrick Ferguson and a flanking force northward in the shadow of the Appalachians. Major Ferguson had invented a breech-loading "rifle gun" that fired five times as fast as a muzzle-loading rifle. Had it been adopted, it might have put a quick end to the war. Certainly it would have helped Ferguson now, trapped on Kings Mountain. Ferguson was everywhere, his silver whistle piercing the din as he rallied his troops for bayonet charges. Then death stilled the whistle. Frontiersmen with long rifles overwhelmed his entire force, then drifted back across the misty mountains.

Washington sent Nathanael Greene, a superb strategist, to take command in the South. With fewer than 1,500 men "wretched beyond description," the mild-mannered Rhode Island ironmaster sparred with the disciplined legions of Lord Cornwallis. He placed part of his force under Daniel Morgan, who made a stand at Cowpens against Tarleton's dragoons. The "Old Wagoner" moved among his nervous militia, joking with them, telling them he'd crack his whip over Ban Tarleton. When the dragoons charged, the militia shattered them.

Stung, Cornwallis pushed forward. But Greene escaped across the swollen Dan River into Virginia. He gathered reinforcements, then struck south to harass the British, now far from supplies in country asworn with guerrillas. At Guilford Courthouse, Hobkirk's Hill, and Eutaw Springs Greene lost the field but tore red-coat ranks to ribbons. "We fight, get beat, rise and fight again," he reported.

Thus the tireless general, the Continentals, the guerrillas, and drifting militia pushed the British back on Charleston and Savannah. Meanwhile Cornwallis, who had withdrawn to Wilmington, marched north to meet destiny at Yorktown.

These blue stars and stripes saw battle at Guilford Courthouse. A national military park marks the site of Cornwallis's costly victory.



CLIMAX AT YORKTOWN

BY INTELLIGENCE which I have this day received," wrote Gen. Henry Clinton on September 2, 1781, "it would seem that Mr. Washington is moving an army to the southward [and] expects the co-operation of a considerable French armament." Bland words to introduce the thundering last act of the Revolution!

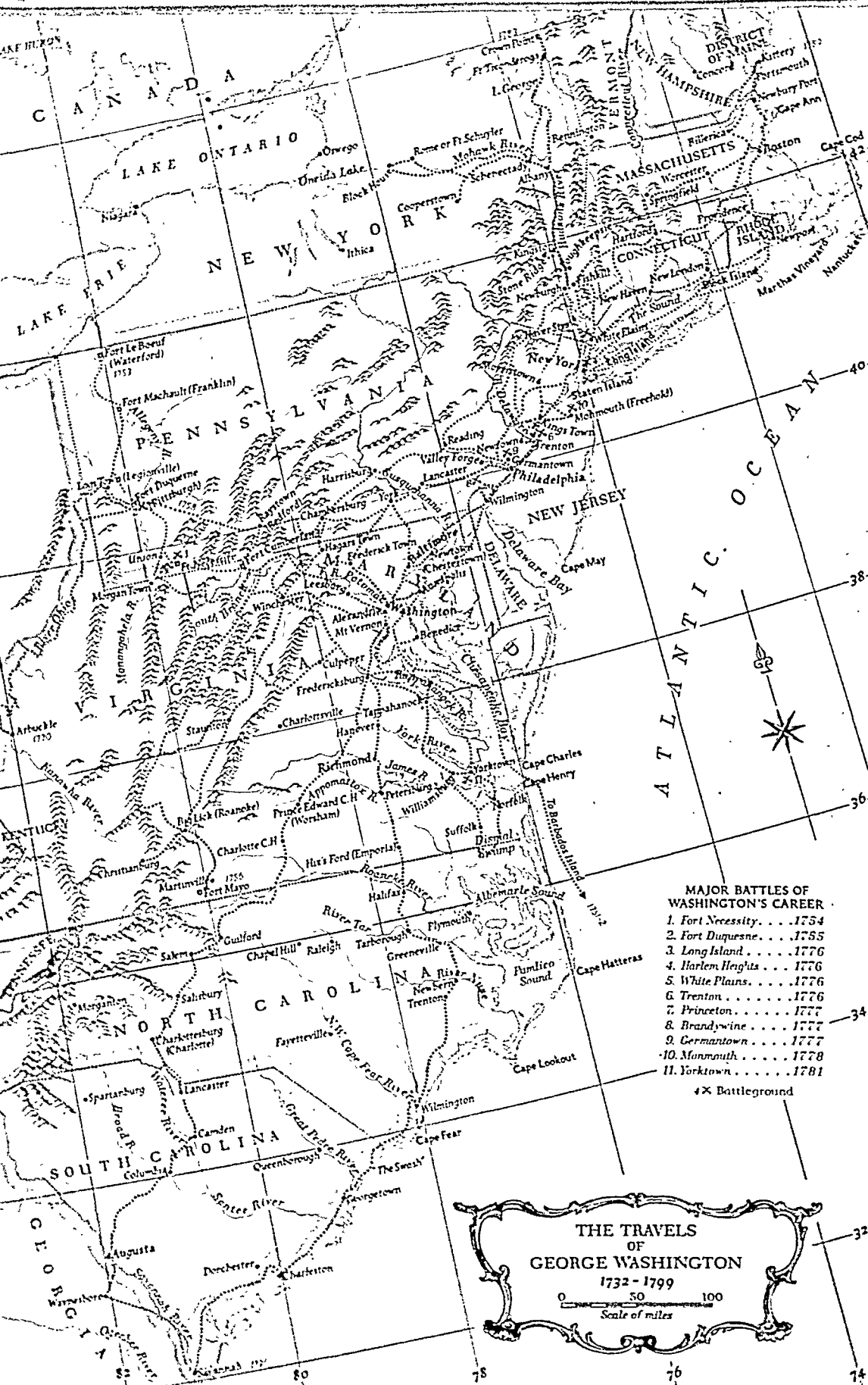
In "impenetrable secrecy" Washington and Count de Rochambeau marched to Chesapeake Bay, which De Grasse's French fleet controlled. In Virginia, Americans under Lafayette thinly straddled the peninsula between the James and York rivers. Inside this still fragile net Cornwallis with 7,500 men dug in at Yorktown and waited to be reinforced by sea.

Continental and militia streamed into Williamsburg. On September 28 the allied army, now 16,000, pressed down the peninsula. Assured by Clinton that "the joint exertions of the navy and army" would soon relieve him, Cornwallis abandoned his outer redoubts to tighten defenses about the port.

Washington's troops shoveled furiously on their first siege line. October 9, French and American batteries opened fire. Day and night they pounded the British. A defender's diary tells of "the



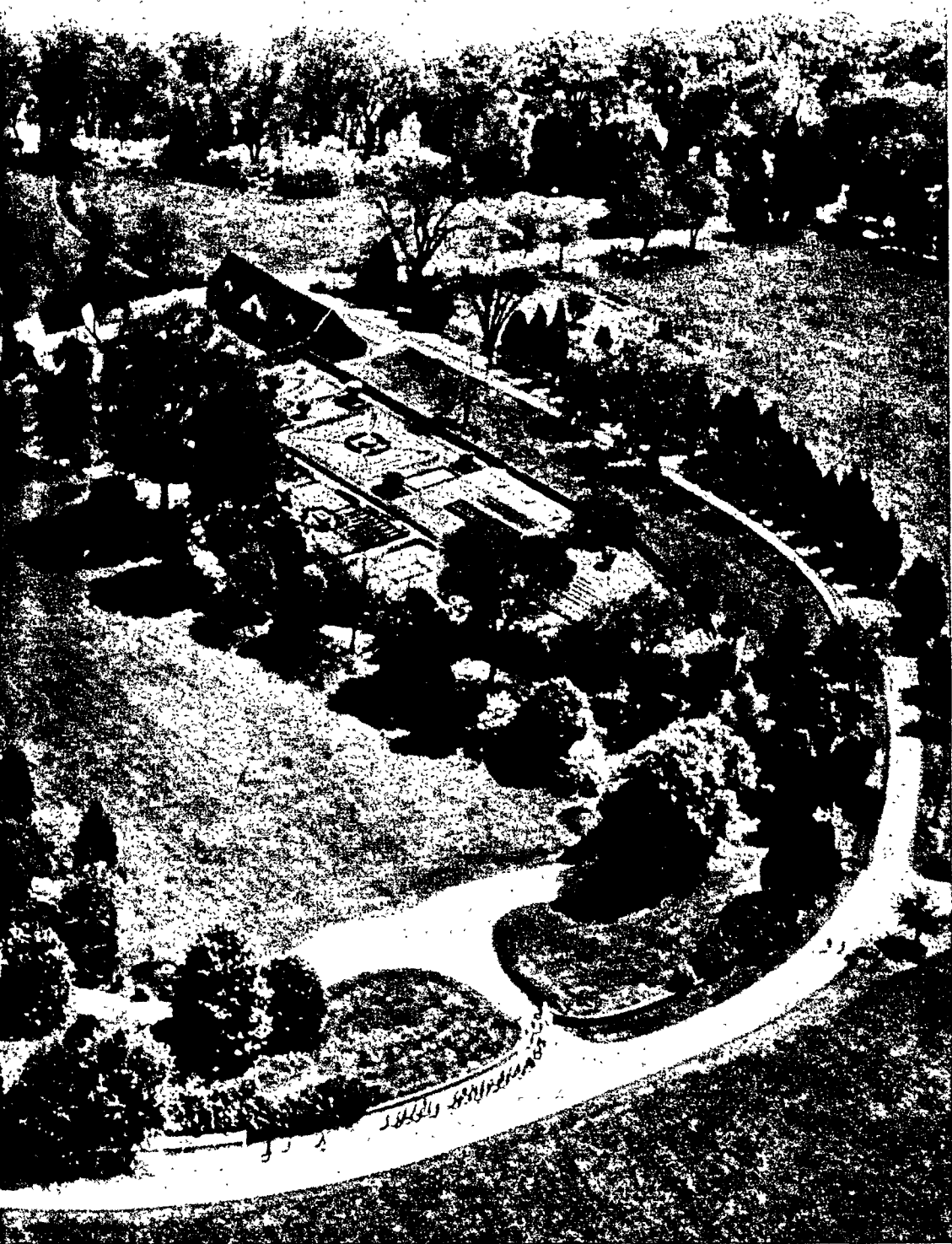
THIS CARTRIDGE BOX PLATE
FROM HESSIAN REGIMENT VON ROSE
WAS FOUND AT PEDDUST NO. 9
ON YORKTOWN BATTLEFIELD





Washington's love affair with Mount Vernon began during his youthful visits

Whether he was fighting Indians, holding his ragged revolutionary army together, or serving as President, his thoughts returned to these beloved acres. "No estate in United America is



JOHN E. FLETCHER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

more pleasantly situated than this," he proudly wrote. Constantly improving it, the General tripled its acreage and efficiently grouped out-buildings and gardens to flank the main house,

which he doubled in size. Yet simplicity marked his life here, "free from the bustle of a camp and the intrigues of a court." The road at upper right leads to his grave. Martha lies beside him.



Mount Vernon's veranda is cooled by Potomac breezes. Washington relaxed here with his family on summer evenings and entertained the horde of callers who turned his home, he wryly remarked, into "a well resorted tavern." A most welcome guest was Lafayette (right), in 1784. Seeing Washington, the Marquis "threw himself into the arms of his adoptive father."



before they arrived, "and Were you to make Fires in the Rooms below it w'd Air them."

Besides expanding and beautifying his home, managing family properties, and joining in land-development ventures, Washington took his seat in the House of Burgesses at Williamsburg. A fellow member saw him, "Straight as an Indian, measuring 6 feet 2 inches in his stockings. . . . A pleasing and benevolent tho a commanding countenance, dark brown hair which he wears in a cue."

He was also a contented man. "I am now I believe fixd at this Seat with an agreeable Consort for Life," he wrote to a friend, as he contemplated his future as a planter.

But the Burgess of Mount Vernon was hardly "fixd." As resistance to the Crown heightened, Virginia demanded more and more of this quiet, modest, sensible man, "in action cool, like a Bishop at his prayers." He served as a delegate at both First and Second Continental Congresses, led the colonies to victory, presided over the Constitutional Convention, and was unanimously elected first President of the Republic—the highest gift his countrymen could bestow.

Through it all, Mount Vernon remained the

243



LOUIS MIGNOT AND THOMAS ROSSITER, METROPOLITAN MUSEUM OF ART. LEFT: KATHLEEN REVIS AND (UPPER) WALTER NEAYERS EDWARDS AND JOHN E. FLETCHER, ALL NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF





hearthstone of George Washington's world. At the end of the Revolution he bade farewell to his officers, resigned his commission, and wrote his comrade Lafayette, "I am retiring within myself and shall tread the paths of private life with heartfelt satisfaction."

Called away as President, he confessed, "I had rather be at Mount Vernon with a friend or two about me, than to be attended at the Seat of Government by the Officers of State . . . of every Power in Europe."

TODAY, more than a million people a year visit the painstakingly restored show-place that was Washington's pride and joy.

With groups of adults and children—and once with Queen Juliana of the Netherlands paying respect to the American shrine—I walked the shaded lawns and admired relics and reconstructions of those vanished days.

Here is a villagelike 18th century plantation with service buildings clustered about the mansion home. Housekeepers look in vain for a kitchen in the family dwelling. They find it in an annex at the end of an arcade. Its iron skillets, the tubs in the wash-house, looms in the spinning house—even stage-prop hams in the smokehouse—stand ready for ghostly hands to use. Mouths water at Martha's "Grate cake" recipe preserved in the museum. It starts out, "Take 40 eggs . . . work four pounds of butter."

Boxwood-edged flower beds and kitchen gardens bloom, as when Washington gave notice of his coming: "Tell the Gardener I shall expect everything that a Garden ought to produce, in the most ample manner."

Inside the mansion each room and object has its own story. A card table, a set of blue

Tasteful, not sumptuous, rooms typify Mount Vernon. Gift of Lafayette, a key to the Bastille hangs in the central hall (above) between spare bedroom and dining room. In his library Washington balanced accounts, studied crop reports, and wrote letters that shaped history. The globe, telescope, riding crop, and shotgun were his.

dishes, white dimity curtains festooned with green all help re-create scenes that Washington knew.

"Too elegant... I fear for my... republican stile," he wrote of the elaborate marble mantel in the Banquet Hall. It reached Mount Vernon through the courtesy of a pirate crew. Starting from England respectably enough, this gift was seized by pirates, so the story goes. When the buccaneers noted the famous addressee, they risked hanging by shipping it on to Mount Vernon.

At the handsome secretary-desk in the library, the General and President answered endless letters from friends and favor seekers, and kept meticulous accounts.

From the hall I looked into the music room where the family and neighbors gathered for singing and dancing. Washington loved to dance, but admitted he could "neither sing one of the songs nor raise a single note on any instrument."

The old harpsichord standing open in the room was a gift from Washington to Martha's granddaughter, Nelly Custis. After Nelly married Washington's nephew, Lawrence Lewis, they took it to nearby Woodlawn, built on Mount Vernon land Uncle George bequeathed to them. When the Mount Vernon Ladies' Association was formed in 1853 to save the deteriorating estate and collect its

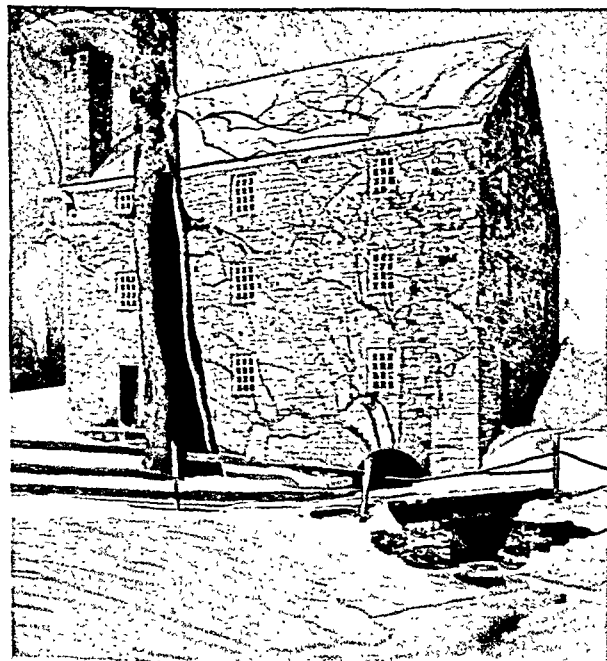
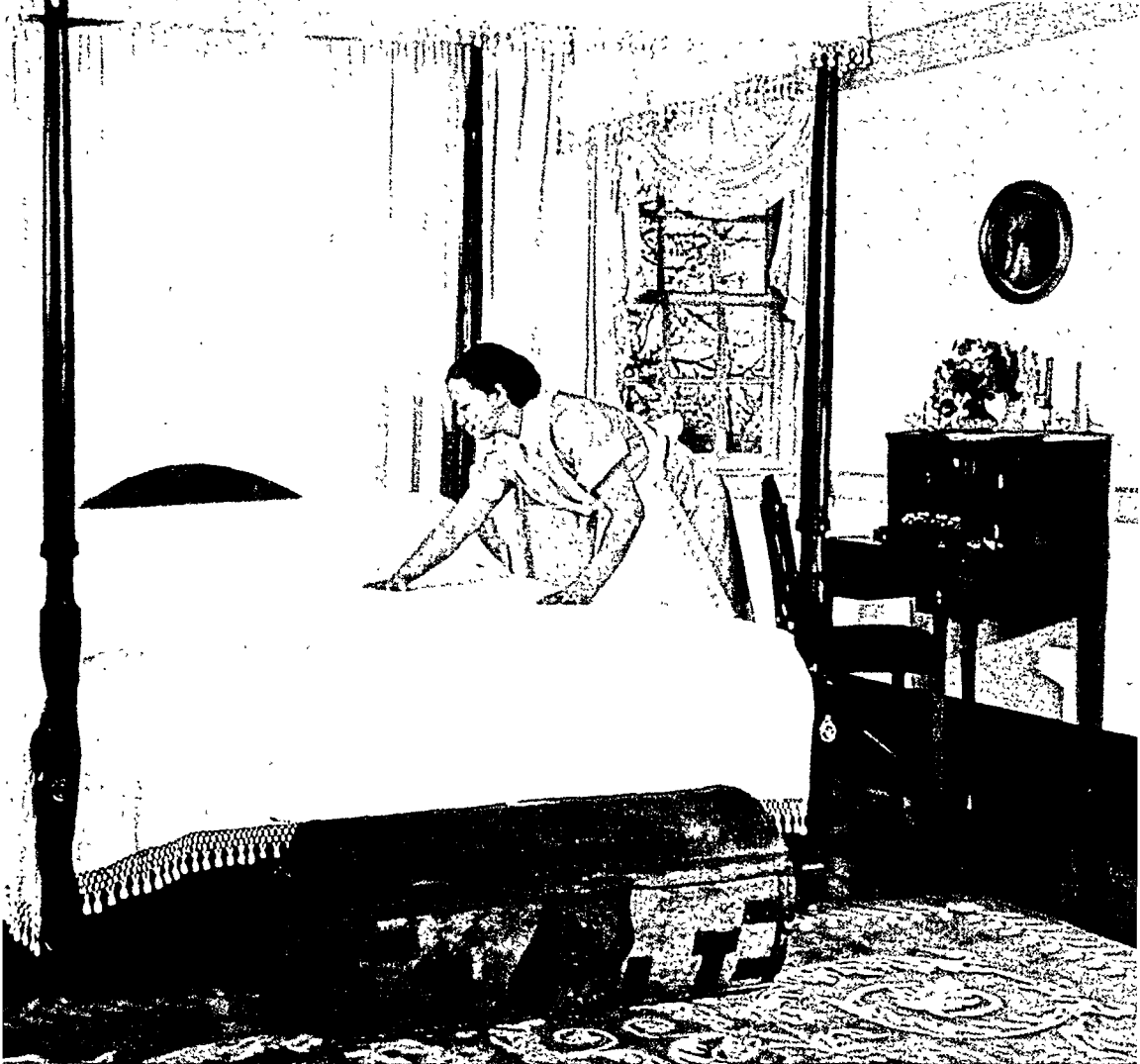
Washington's day began in this room; from it he and Martha could look down on the Potomac glimmering in the morning sun. And in this four-poster the master of Mount Vernon ended his days. His trunk still rests at its foot.

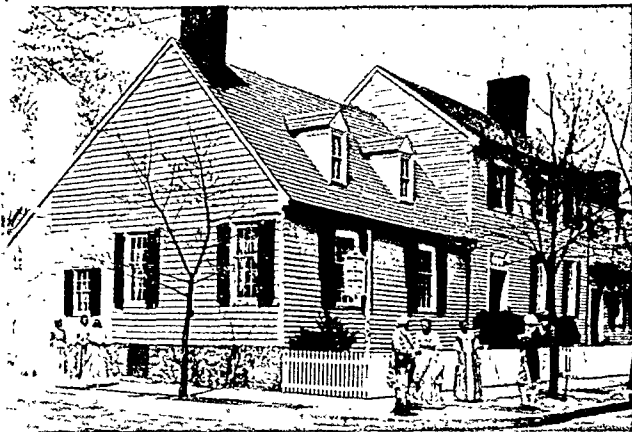
His rounds included the greenhouse. Rebuilt, it grows oranges as it did then. He prized his grist mill: "I work two pair of Stones, one part of which are French burr." Visitors see wooden gears and a 16-foot water wheel, both restored.

Come Sunday the General would ride to Pohick Church, where it was "not the custom for Gentlemen to go into Church til Service is beginning, when they enter in a Body, in the same manner as they come out." A parish vestryman for 22 years, Washington also served from time to time as "overseer of the poor."



FROM LEFT: B. ANTHONY STEWART AND JOHN E. FLETCHER, DAVID S. BOYER, MERLE SEVERY, ALL NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF





Mary Washington's home in Fredericksburg was a gift from her son. His sister Betty lived in nearby Kenmore.



Woodlawn Plantation, near Mount Vernon, welcomes visitors as it did when Nelly Custis Lewis was hostess here.



Cobbled Prince Street in Alexandria rang to carriage wheels when Washington frequented the thriving port.

scattered belongings, the harpsichord was the first piece to return.

The most precious possession is the mahogany four-poster in which Washington died, December 14, 1799, after exposure to sleet and snow while making his plantation rounds. The moment his life ebbed away, 10:20 P.M., was recorded for history by one of three attending physicians, Dr. Elisha C. Dick. Tradition says he stopped the mantelclock by cutting its weight cord.

By reconstruction, gift, purchase, and loan, the association has now restored Mount Vernon as it must have looked in its prime. But work is never done. "We are always learning more, and adding details to our scene settings," said Resident Director Charles C. Wall, who has devoted more than 30 years to the restoration.

"In 1956 we acquired our biggest collection of personal and household articles. It came from a descendant and included a charming miniature of Martha Washington believed to have been painted at Mount Vernon in 1772 by Charles Willson Peale."

To protect the mansion and its priceless furnishings, structural reinforcements and fire-fighting equipment have been installed. Guards and watchdogs patrol; searchlights play over the grounds. Engineers, maids, cooks, gardeners, secretaries, stablemen, curators, and librarians maintain this working exhibit that boasts its own cattle, sheep, horses, even beehives.

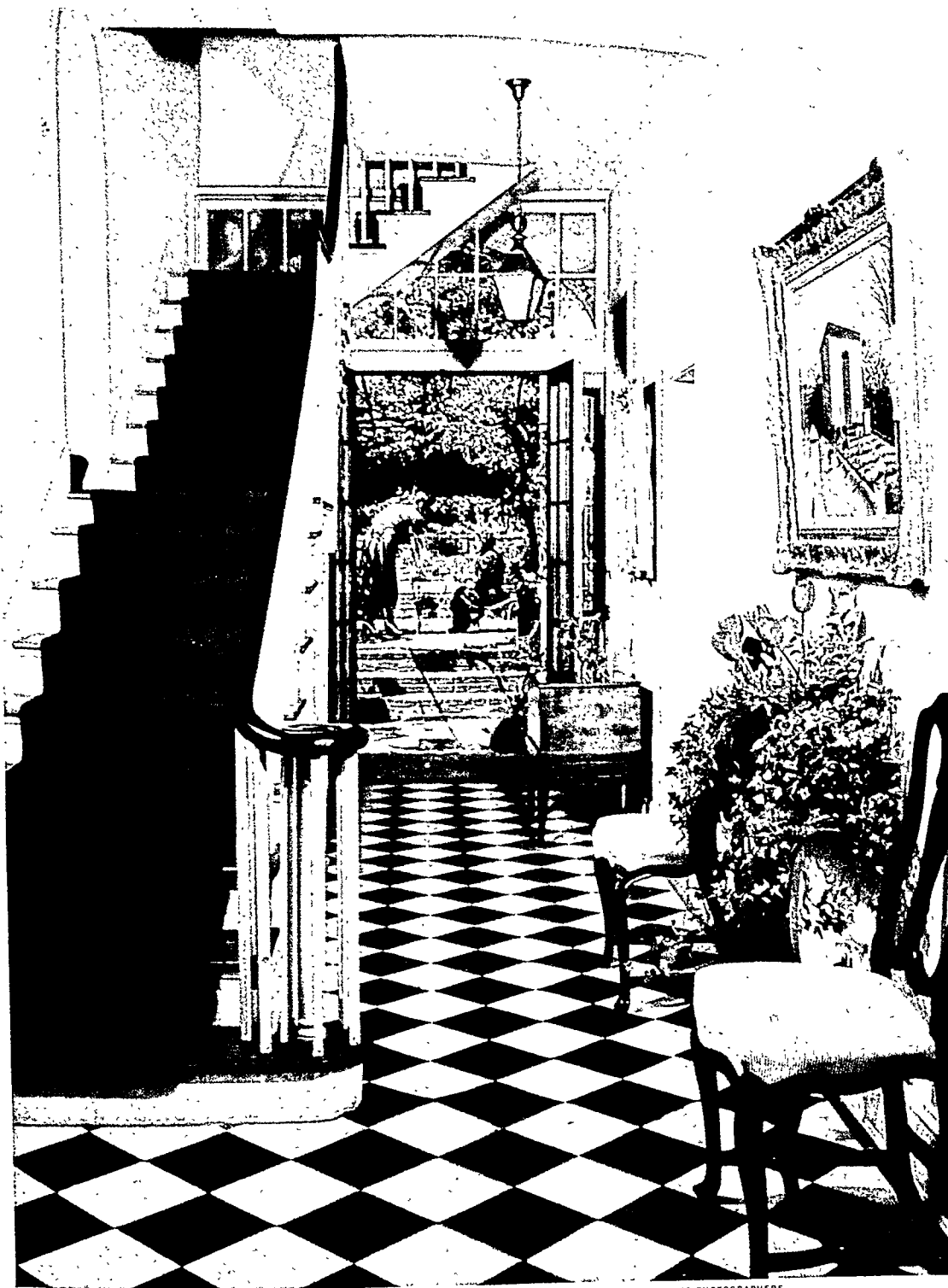
Ann Cunningham of South Carolina, the association's founder, summed up: "Though we slay our forests . . . pull down our churches, remove from home to home, till the hearthstone seems to have no resting place in America, let them see that we know how to care for the home of our hero."



ROBERT F. SISSON AND DONALD MCBAIN BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

Alexandria was George Washington's home town. In parlors like this at Lord Fairfax House, or at Gadsby's Tavern, he would have felt at ease with these clay pipes and cards.

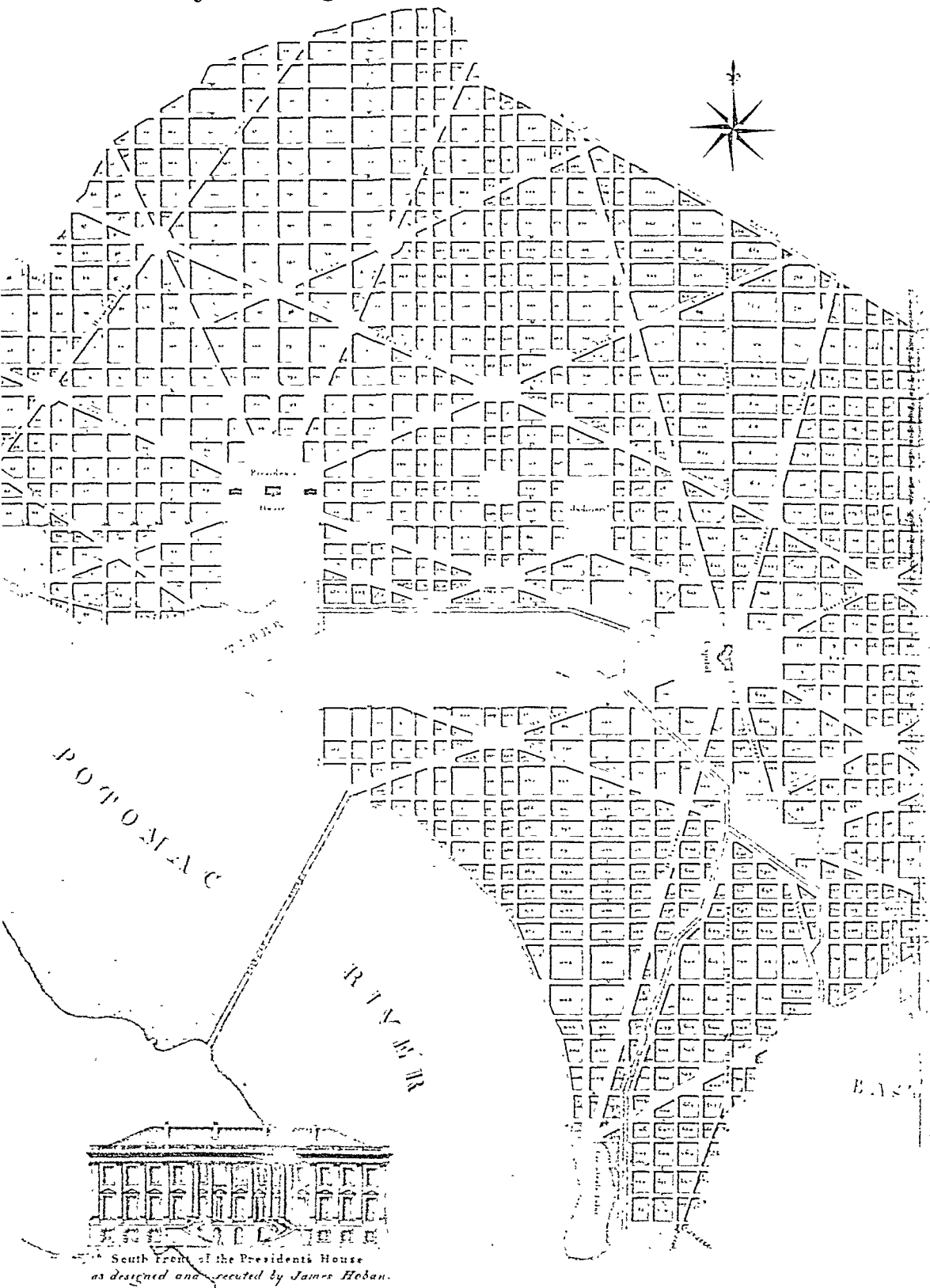




B. ANTHONY STEWART AND JOHN E. FLETCHER NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHERS

Georgetown homes, like these on old Gay Street (left), played host to the General. He may have known the Yellow Tavern, with its stately hall, where merchants and political notables gathered. It is now a 33d Street residence. Today a beautifully restored part of the nation's capital, Georgetown was a proud port before Washington's city was even a plan.

L'Enfant designs a magnificent capital city



BY EDWARD T. A. F. C. 1796. MEEHIN COLLECTION, NATIONAL GALLERY OF ART. L. EN. ANT. PLAN IN AN EARLY VERSION, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

Washington and his family at Mount Vernon study plans for a federal city on the Potomac

New York was the capital when the General was inaugurated on April 30, 1789. Earlier the seat of government had shuttled among Philadelphia, Baltimore, New York, Princeton, Annapolis, and Trenton. In April 1790 the perambulating legislators returned to Philadelphia to remain ten more years.

Seeking a permanent site between the Potomac and South, Washington chose what is now the District of Columbia and appointed Maj. Pierre Charles L'Enfant, a French Revolutionary War engineer, to draw up plans for a city centered streets around a mall from Potomac to Capitol Hill (1793). The President's House (started a year earlier) was a setback. In 1800 the government and all its employees, some 11,000, moved in.

The city reflects L'Enfant's design that grew whimsically at times. When the Treasury burned, President Jackson, out for a stroll, was asked where it should be rebuilt. "Right here!" said he, banging his cane. There it was put, breaking the proposed sweep of Pennsylvania Avenue from Capitol to White House.

East Front of the Capital of the United States

as originally designed by William Thornton and adopted by General Washington, President of the United States

MR. JEFFERSON *of Monticello*

LAZILY swinging in a hammock, I watched the cloud shadows race across Carter's Mountain, rearing its green head beyond the whitewashed fences. What stories it could tell of the days of Thomas Jefferson and his friends who early appreciated its beauty and built their homes on its flanks!

I reflected how the spell of "Mr. Jefferson," as local people respectfully refer to him, still lingers about the Charlottesville region of Virginia. At every turn some link suggests this extraordinary man, our country's third President and author of its Declaration of Independence.

Just around the corner of Carter's Mountain perches Monticello, his hilltop home. Through his telescope he could watch the building of his beloved university far below in Charlottesville. Across a vale, spicy boxwood hedges lead to Ash Lawn, the "cabin castle" he built for his friend James Monroe.

Redlands, Carter family stronghold still, scans the countryside from the far end of this ridge granted to John Carter about 1730 by King George II. And beside the James River stands Bremond, another storied house that reveals Jefferson touches.

With all these reminders about me, I set forth to explore Monticello. Up a wooded road I wound until Jefferson's "sea view" burst upon me, a misty line stretching along the horizon as far as the eye could see. Across hills, valleys, fields, and woods I traced the Rivanna River meandering to Shadwell, Jefferson's birthplace. Left fatherless at 14, Tom inherited "Little Mountain," which he

Thomas Jefferson, statesman, sage, architect
of American ideals as well as noble
buildings, assumed towering stature when
his country most needed giants.

Yet near Charlottesville he lived, and
lingers, as a gentle and kindly neighbor.
He groomed himself for greatness, studying
half the night at William and Mary,
but finding time to play the violin with
the royal governor, meet a distant relative,
Col. George Washington, and match wits
with a gay, aspiring lawyer, Patrick Henry.

He wished to have inscribed on his
simple grave marker at Monticello, not that
he had held great offices, but that he was
author of the Declaration of Independence and
the Virginia statute for religious freedom, and
father of the University of Virginia.

Jefferson's own words best capture the
essence of his character: "I have sworn upon
the altar of god eternal hostility against every
form of tyranny over the mind of man."

JEFFERSON SAT FOR SCULPTOR JEAN ANTOINE HOUDON
IN 1789 WHILE U.S. MINISTER TO FRANCE. THE
MARBLE BUST IS IN THE MUSEUM OF FINE ARTS, BOSTON



The Surge of Freedom

THOMAS JEFFERSON in his first inaugural address asserted that the country had "room enough for our descendants to the hundredth and thousandth generation." He had in mind that uncharted vastness sprawling from the Appalachians to the Mississippi. In Jefferson's day population had dammed up on the Piedmont of Virginia and the Carolinas, in the valleys of Pennsylvania and New York, and in the back country of New England. Few settlers had ventured past the Appalachians. But geography has always yielded to the pioneer spirit. Mountains could not hold back freedom-struck Americans.

Beyond the Blue Ridge, beyond the Alleghenies lay mysterious *Ken-ta-ke*—"prairie" or "meadow land." It teemed with deer, buffalo, bear, and wild turkey; was the hunting ground of the Cherokee, Shawnee, Seneca, and Catawba.

One of the first white men to explore this region was Thomas Walker. This Virginia physician and surveyor discovered Cumberland Gap in 1750. The next year Christopher Gist, agent of the Ohio Company, surveyed as far as the Falls of the Ohio (Louisville), returning by Walker's route. Gist's vivid journal inspired adventurers known as Long Hunters (because of their long absence from home) to trek into Kentucky. They hungered, not for new homes, but for the excitement of the chase and the profit in pelts. The greatest Long Hunter was Daniel Boone.

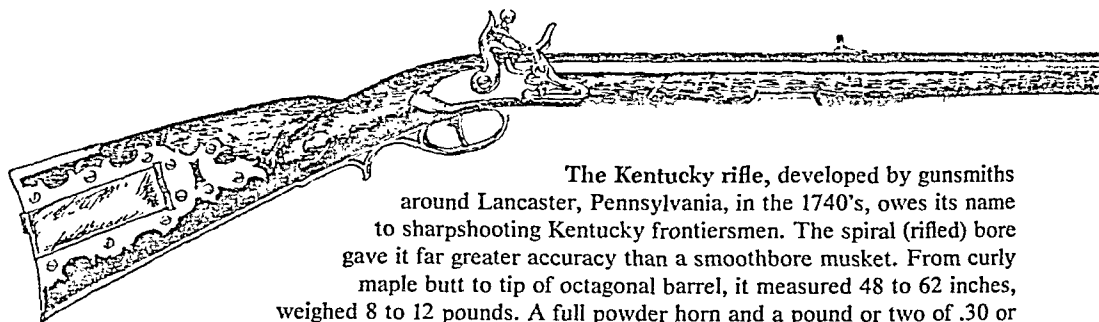
Boone was a restless soul who loved to roam the wilderness. It taught him three things infinitely well: hunting, exploring, and Indian psychology. He had little formal education, wrote with an audacious scrawl, was a hopeless speller. "Let girls do the spelling," said his father, Squire. "Daniel will do the shooting."

DANIEL KEPT HIS FINGER on the trigger of his Kentucky rifle most of his life. When Squire moved the family from their homestead (now restored) near Reading, Pennsylvania, to the Yadkin Valley of North Carolina in 1750, he and Daniel killed so many bears that a stream near the cabin became known as Bear Creek. Proud of his prowess, young Boone recorded it on many a beech tree: "D. Boon Cilled A. Bar." He'd range the forest early in the morning when dew had softened the crackle of autumn leaves, or at moonrise when the deer were feeding. In a fair season he took about 400 deerskins.

During these years Daniel grew to that romantic figure every schoolboy knows. He was broad-shouldered, hard-muscled, with dark hair and a ruddy complexion. His blue eyes reflected courage, his tight lips determination. Such was Boone in 1756 when he married Rebecca Bryan, "whose brow had been fanned by the breezes of seventeen summers." All a man needed to enjoy happiness, he said, was "a good gun, a good horse, and a good wife." Now Boone had all three.

In the next few years he roamed many miles from home. Sometimes he threaded deep into the North Carolina wilderness where the mountains wax misty gray to clear amethyst, depending on mood of day or time of year. In spring the hollows flame with azaleas while mountain laurel and rhododendron, all white and pink, lick at the higher slopes. Boone saw Blowing Rock towering over primeval forest, saw Mount Mitchell's hood of snow. He saw the Grandfather, one of the oldest mountains on earth, and Pilot Mountain, guide to Indians in their ceaseless wanderings. At Linville he watched the shimmering cataract leap into the gorge. The promise of free land lured Boone to Florida. But he found game scarce.

Boone was home in 1768 when John Finley drove a scraggy horse and wagon down Yadkin Valley. The two men had not seen each other since Braddock's campaign more than ten years before. Sitting by the fire in Boone's cabin, Finley unfolded tales of Kentucky—*there* was the paradise for the hunter!



The Kentucky rifle, developed by gunsmiths around Lancaster, Pennsylvania, in the 1740's, owes its name to sharpshooting Kentucky frontiersmen. The spiral (rifled) bore gave it far greater accuracy than a smoothbore musket. From curly maple butt to tip of octagonal barrel, it measured 48 to 62 inches, weighed 8 to 12 pounds. A full powder horn and a pound or two of .30 or .45 caliber bullets would last Daniel Boone a month. He could "bark" a squirrel from the highest tree (shattering the bark under it), and hit a deer at 400 paces. Asked if he had ever been lost while hunting in the wilderness, Boone replied: "No, I can't say as ever I was lost, but I was *bewildered* once for three days."

That very next spring Boone pushed through Cumberland Gap and began his Kentucky adventures. Shawnee warriors robbed him and his brother-in-law John Stuart, and took them prisoner. They fled, were recaptured, escaped again. Then Stuart disappeared while hunting. (Daniel would find his remains five years later.)

The following spring Boone ranged alone to the Ohio River. He came to Big Bone Lick where lay fabulous tusks of mammoths and mastodons, and saw the Blue Licks where thousands of bellowing buffalo rumbled over the salt earth. While Boone stood on a cliff drinking in Kentucky's grandeur, Indians closed in. He got away by leaping over the brink into a maple tree below.

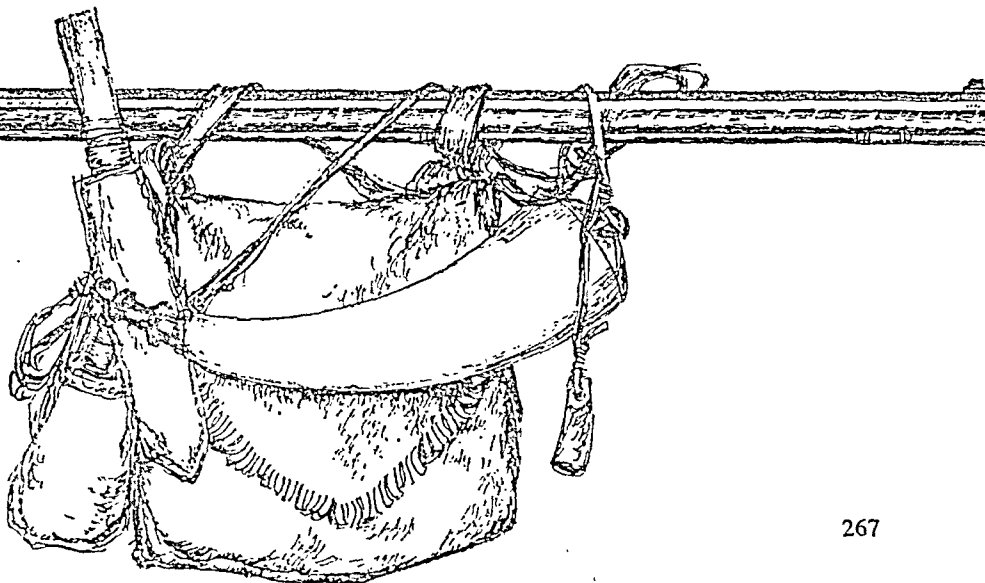
Daniel, now joined by his brother Squire, hunted another year. In the spring of 1771, their pack horses burdened with pelts, they set out for home. Near Cumberland Gap Indians swooped down and stripped them of their possessions.

But Boone had seen Kentucky!

Fired by Boone's glowing descriptions, Judge Richard Henderson and eight associates, envisioning themselves lords proprietors of a frontier colony, formed the Transylvania Company. They sought to purchase from the Cherokee a tract of land comprising most of Kentucky and part of Tennessee. In 1775 Chief Little Carpenter sold out for £10,000 in goods and baubles despite warnings from his son Dragging Canoe that it would turn Kentucky into "the Dark and Bloody Ground."

WHEN THIS TREATY OF SYCAMORE SHOALS was signed, Daniel Boone was not present. Henderson had sent him to blaze the Wilderness Road. Across the Clinch and Powell rivers trudged Boone and 30 men, the Cumberland Mountains rising before them. They pushed through the gap, pursued the Warriors' Path, forded the Cumberland River, then picked up a buffalo trace. Axes and hatchets swung. Through scrub and bramble the men inched to Rockcastle River. For 30 miles more they chopped and slashed through cane and reed. At last the mountains parted.

"Perhaps no Adventureor Since the days of donquicksotte [Don Quixote] or before ever felt So Cheerful & Ilated," wrote young Felix Walker, one of Boone's choppers. "As the Cain ceased, we began to discover the pleasing & Rapturous appearance of the plains of Kentucky, a New Sky & Strange Earth." Walker soon





changed his tune, for he suffered a nasty wound when Indians struck, killing two men. Boone urged defiance. In a valley studded with sycamores he built Boonesboro.

Kentucky frontiersmen, though beyond the clarion call of Philadelphia's patriots, displayed spirit of their own in 1777. In that year of the "bloody sevens," the Shawnee under Chief Blackfish crossed the Ohio, besieged Boonesboro and Harrodsburg, killed settlers, and burned cabins and crops.

At Harrodsburg, first settlement in Kentucky (where pioneer days live on in restored Fort Harrod), George Rogers Clark and his backwoods militia fought stubbornly.

At Boonesboro settlers had barely finished their fort when Blackfish struck. Boone was shot in the ankle and probably would have lost his scalp had not his friend Simon Kenton clubbed an onrushing Indian.

Early 1778 found Boone on his feet leading a party to the Blue Licks for salt. Indians captured him and took him to their camp. Around a huge fire squatted more than 100 Shawnee in war paint, eager to assault Boonesboro. Boone persuaded Blackfish the fort could not be taken, but he had to surrender the men at the salt springs.

At the Shawnee capital, north of the Ohio, he and 16 companions were adopted into the tribe. Boone became Big Turtle, son of Blackfish, and played the role so well he gained the Indians' trust. In June he broke away and, in four days,

George Rogers Clark's "Big Knives" won Vincennes by crossing "Drowned Cuntrey in the Debth of Wintor."

PAUL R. HOFFMASTER

raced some 160 miles through wilderness to Boonesboro. His wife Rebecca, believing him dead, had returned to the Yadkin. Boone roused the townsfolk to strengthen their defenses. When Blackfish came, demanding Boonesboro's surrender, the settlers resolved to fight to the last. "I'll die with the rest," spoke Boone.

The siege lasted two months. Boone's fighters frustrated Blackfish's efforts to trick them into the open, doused his attempts to burn them out, and dug a trench across his path when he tried to tunnel in. When a heavy rain collapsed his mine, Blackfish and his disgusted braves withdrew. The settlers opened the fort and turned their starving cattle out to pasture.

The settlement soon became too tame for Daniel Boone. He wandered on, ever the pathfinder, ever the hunter. At 65, the gleam of adventure still in his eyes, he moved to Missouri, where two young men—Lewis and Clark—were soon to set out to blaze a trail of their own. It is said that Boone hunted in Yellowstone when he was 80 and dreamed of visiting California until death cut him down at 86.

He had carved his own monument, the Wilderness Road. Over it streamed pioneers with pans and plows, dogs and sheep, books and even the printing press.

IMMIGRANTS first settled the over-mountain country: Germans, English, Highlanders, Irish, Welsh, Scotch-Irish. New England stock seasoned the mixture. Dominant were the Scotch-Irish, defiant and aggressive, who seldom neglected an opportunity to better themselves. They had undying confidence in their manhood, were as bold as the Romans, and as Indian fighters won even the Shawnee's admiration. They were Presbyterians, though in the wilderness many turned Baptist or Methodist. They believed in freedom and equality, resented class distinction and the leisurely life. They "preferred the useful to the beautiful and even required the beautiful to be useful." They contributed mightily to the democratization of the United States.

Of Scotch-Irish stock was James Robertson, who founded a settlement (the site of present Elizabethton, Tennessee) on the banks of the Watauga River. For mutual protection against Indians and outlaws, the Wataugans in 1772 formed the first independent government established by white men west of the Appalachians. During the Revolution they placed themselves under the mantle of North Carolina, but had to beat off attack after attack by England's Indian allies.

In 1779 Robertson, acting for the indomitable Judge Henderson, recruited a party and led them down the frozen Cumberland River. On snow-covered bluffs they founded Nashboro (Nashville). Leadership of the Wataugans fell to "Nolichucky Jack" Sevier, handsome Huguenot who lived beside the Nolichucky River. Sevier led the frontiersmen to victory over the British at Kings Mountain.

After the war the Wataugans' Scotch-Irish blood boiled because North Carolina continued to ignore their needs, indeed referred to the settlers as "off-scourings of the earth." In 1784 the Wataugans resolved to break away, "forming ourselves into a separate government." The State of Franklin (see map, page 275), named after Ben Franklin, elected Sevier governor and offered him \$1,000 a year—in beaver skins. Financially distressed, Franklin tottered four years, then fell. Sevier, ready to clutch any helping hand, accepted Spain's offer of aid, and North

Carolina arrested him for high treason. Wataugans seethed with indignation. They would rescue their leader if they had to burn Morganton, where he was held. The story goes that during the trial one of Sevier's friends asked the judge if he was through with the man. At this point 'Chucky Jack bolted out the door, sprang on a horse, and sped away. In the courthouse an old man crowed, "I'll be damned if you ain't through with him!" and slapped his knee.

North Carolina made no further attempt to prosecute Sevier. In fact, he was pardoned and recommissioned brigadier general.

Sevier's life was tumultuous even by frontier standards. He won 35 battles against Indians, fathered 17 or 18 children—some by benefit of clergy—and after the Franklin episode, served as governor of Tennessee and United States senator.



RIBES OF THE OLD NORTHWEST believed the Great Spirit made the Ohio country for the Indian, not the white man. They were determined the Ohio River should separate them forever. Frontiersmen, on the other hand, regarded the river not as a border, but as a broad avenue to new lands. Defiantly they traveled it to hunt and to settle.

Shots rang out along the Ohio in the spring of 1774. Near present Steubenville, border ruffians murdered eight Indians, including relatives of the Mingo chief, Logan. Long a friend to the white man, Logan now thirsted for blood. He led forays against unsuspecting families. The Shawnee joined him. Terrorized settlers deserted their cabins and fled eastward. In Williamsburg, Lord Dunmore, governor of Virginia, called out militia.

Lord Dunmore's War reached its climax October 10, 1774, at Point Pleasant, West Virginia, where the Great Kanawha empties into the Ohio. In dense forest frontiersmen and Indians—more than 1,000 on each side—fitted among trees, firing, grappling with knives and tomahawks. "Be strong," thundered Cornstalk, fiery chief of the Shawnee. "Lie close; shoot well; drive the white dogs in!"

But inch by inch the Indians were pushed back. As the sun sank, the braves took to their canoes and made for the Ohio shore. Darkness fell with a dreadful silence, and the living buried the dead.

Cornstalk made peace, but one chief refused to bow. "I am a warrior, not a councilor," said Logan. "I have killed many; I have fully glutted my revenge. For my country, I rejoice at the beams of peace. But do not harbor the thought that mine is the joy of fear. Logan never felt fear. He will never turn on his heel to save his life. Who is there to mourn for Logan? Not one."

A young captain of militia, George Rogers Clark, heard these words repeated. One day he would borrow some of Chief Logan's eloquence. Clark had left home in Albemarle County, Virginia, in 1772 to seek his fortune on the frontier. A gangling youth with blue eyes and red hair, he went down the Ohio, surveyed for settlers, and explored in Kentucky for lands of his own.

After Dunmore's War he learned that Judge Henderson's Transylvania Company was fleecing settlers by raising the price of land while keeping the best acres for itself. Clark contested Henderson's claims and, with the help of Thomas Jefferson, won his case. Early in 1777 most of Transylvania became Kentucky

County, Virginia—roughly the same as the present State of Kentucky. But while the Revolution raged, it lay defenseless.

Clark declared that “if a Cuntrey was not worth protecting it was not worth Claiming.” Virginia took the hint and gave him 500 pounds of powder to defend Kentucky. After leading the defense of Harrodsburg, Clark hurried to Williamsburg with plans for a bold offensive. In December, 1777, sporting a new coat and linen shirt, he called on Gov. Patrick Henry. His plan: knife deep into the Illinois country, relieving pressure on Kentucky by British-incited Indians. The Governor ordered Clark to “attack the British post at Kaskaskia.”

Clark and 180 frontiersmen rowed down the Ohio to the mouth of the Tennessee, then struck off through wilderness. They marched on moccasined feet, their coonskin caps and flintlock rifles bobbing in the shadows. The long butcher knives they carried earned them the Indian nickname “Big Knives.”

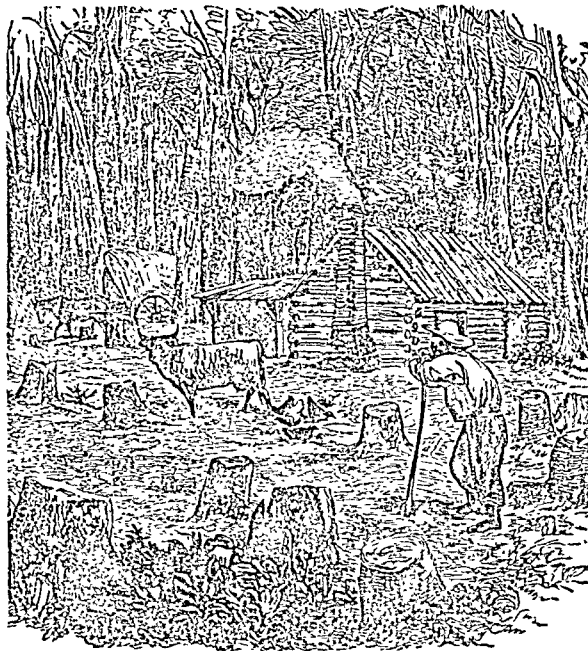
On the night of July 4, 1778, the Big Knives seized Kaskaskia, on the Mississippi. Here Clark found British dispatches urging the Indians to attack the Americans and offering rewards for scalps. Clark sent word to the French trading posts of Cahokia and Vincennes that France had entered the war on the side of the United States. Within days these settlements declared for Clark.

Winning the red man required sterner tactics. At Cahokia, Indians from all over the region gathered for a powwow with Clark. “I am a man and a warrior,” he thundered, “and not a councilor. I carry in my right hand war and peace in my left...” The Indians accepted peace.

But Henry Hamilton, British commander at Detroit whom the Indians dubbed the “Hair Buyer General,” launched a drive on Vincennes, and its French garrison surrendered. Clark learned that Hamilton contemplated no offensive until spring. Believing that “a good soldier never ought to be afraid of his life when there was a probability of his doing service by venturing it,” Clark resolved to strike first.

In February, 1779, he led his men on the heroic march against Vincennes. Heavy rains had turned much of the 180-mile route into a shallow lake. At night the men dried out by huge campfires and sang of love and war. Reaching the Little Wabash, they found its two branches flooded into a single channel five miles wide. They built a canoe and ferried across. On a spongy hillock they huddled through a drizzly night, now so close to Vincennes that they could hear the morning gun.

Bedraggled and hungry, they waded on, sometimes up to their arm-



CULVER SERVICE

Settlers brought crude tools and New England experience to farm the Ohio country.

pits. At one dangerously deep place Clark blackened his face with gunpowder, gave a war whoop, and lunged ahead. The men followed, and at their leader's command burst into song. The last six miles were hardest—inch-thick ice and chest-high water. The half-frozen men lurched from tree to tree, floated on logs, slogged on to within sight of their prize.

Realizing that he was heavily outnumbered, Clark resorted to stratagem. He marched his men back and forth, drums beating, colors flying, to give the impression of a large force. When darkness fell, his frontiersmen closed in and poured blistering volleys into the fort. Two days later, February 25, Hamilton surrendered.

Clark wanted to march on Detroit, but Virginia couldn't supply him. In 1782 he burned several Indian villages in retaliation for attacks on settlers. Next summer he resigned command, two months prior to the Treaty of Paris in which Great Britain ceded the Old Northwest to the United States. Stripped of his holdings by creditors (for supplies he had bought for his soldiers), Clark retired to a cabin near the Falls of the Ohio. One leg amputated after an accident, his mind crippled by alcohol, "the mighty oak of the forest" fell in 1818.

IN THE WAKE OF BOONE, Sevier, and Clark came "lean, tough Yankee settlers, tough as gutta-percha, with most occult, unsubduable fire in their belly." Typically, the settler lived with his wife and a cabinful of children on a tract of wooded land. He rarely cleared more than 40 acres. He girded trees to kill them and let sunlight reach the soil. He planted his garden among the dead trees. Later he would burn them and dig out the stumps. In early spring he set fire to dry grass so that green shoots could grow for his cattle. He broke the ground with his crude moldboard plow and sowed grain by hand.

The pioneer woman worked as hard as her husband. She cooked, churned, fed and milked the cows, hoed corn, dried beans, chopped wood, carried water, spun clothing, and made clay lamps whose wicks floated in bear grease. Not "a doll to carry silks and jewels," she was dedicated to a life of hardship.

Settlers sought the comforts of religion—often a passionate gospel of hell-fire and salvation. Circuit preachers roamed every corner of the frontier. Their zeal and courage, their defiance of wind and rain inspired the pioneer proverb: "There is nothing out today but crows and Methodist preachers." And Johnny Appleseed.

Born John Chapman in Massachusetts, he was first seen in the Middle West around 1800, drifting down the Ohio on two canoes lashed together and filled with rotting apples. He planted apple trees throughout the wilderness and traveled hundreds of miles to prune his orchards. His price for an apple sapling was a "fippenny bit," but Johnny Appleseed would take a promissory note—and never collect. He quoted Scripture to anyone who would listen. Lying on the floor and rolling forth denunciations in tones of thunder, he was considered a frontier saint. He was known for his quixotic kindness to animals, even insects and snakes.

The Dan'l Boones, the Johnny Appleseeds, the farmers and fighters, surveyors and speculators symbolize America's pioneer spirit. Afoot and on horseback, by Conestoga wagon and flatboat, they rolled back the frontier. They dug canals and built turnpikes. And in a twinkling, it somehow seems, they tamed a wilderness.

A trip on the C & O Canal

A TEAM OF MULES pulled me into a bygone era. With each tug, as the glassy water rippled below, Washington, D. C., slipped farther behind. I was riding the *Canal Clipper*, a flat-bottom craft that carries sightseers up a stretch of the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal along the Potomac River.

Floating between fern-clothed cliffs, in the depths of a dark wood, or past a sun-drenched pasture, you capture the feel of a vanished age. Birds in gaunt pines and towering tulip trees cease their chatter. Then the wind rustles the treetops. A gray squirrel scolds from a sycamore. A turtle plunges off his log solarium. And you think: This is how it was on a spring day a century ago.

My imagination stirs, and around a bend come plodding mules. A barge glides into view. On its bow the skipper cups hands to lips for a singsong cry, the locktender's cue to open the gates.

"Hey-y-y-y-y lock!"

The captain and his family lived aft in the cabin. In a stable forward rode the relief mules, heads craning through tiny windows. On sunny days the family wash fluttered from lines strung above-deck. Children, tethered lest they fall overboard, played about the cabin. Dogs and cats dozed on the planking.

Old-timers vividly recall the era. O. P. Matthews, who grew up in western Maryland, could see the canal twisting through the bright-boughed hills.

Towing a sightseeing barge, mules clop across a spillway of the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal at Washington, D. C. The waterway hugged the Potomac for 185 miles.

"I'd lie abed at night," he told me, "and watch the barges inch their way up and down. The light from their bow lamps shone on the water and flashed in the trees. I could hear the music of fiddles, and people singing and laughing in the cabins."

Raleigh S. Bender, retired canalman of Sharpsburg, Maryland, conjured up a tableau of lazy waters and slow-moving boats. "All day long you'd be trying to make time, beat someone else's record for the trip downstream or up. Come dark, you'd put the feed trough out on the banks and let the mules graze or doze. You'd sit around for a spell, smoking and talking, then hit the hay to be up with the dawn for an early start. Sometimes you'd drive the mules through the night." He sat back and the rush of words slowed. "I'll never forget those old canal days."

But for George Washington the C & O might never have been. At Great Falls, ten miles above the capital, the Potomac is a wild creature, crashing through gorges





artisans and artists from Paris and Lyons, “carvers and gilders to the king, coachmakers, friseurs and perukemakers” who came expecting a paradise, and found only raw wilderness, hardship, and fever.

German Separatists found haven in Zoar village. Their leader’s home, Number One House, remains. Franklinton (Columbus), Dayton, Cleaveland (they say a newspaper dropped an *a* to save space), and other land-company towns grew almost as fast as the 100-pound pumpkins and yard-long cucumbers that sprang from Ohio’s deep, rich soil.

The Indians, alarmed at the tide of settlement, fought for their homeland as furiously as Concord minutemen. They hacked to pieces the army of territorial governor Arthur St. Clair in 1791. Drunk with victory, they scorned peace talks: “Restore to us our country, and we shall be enemies no longer.”

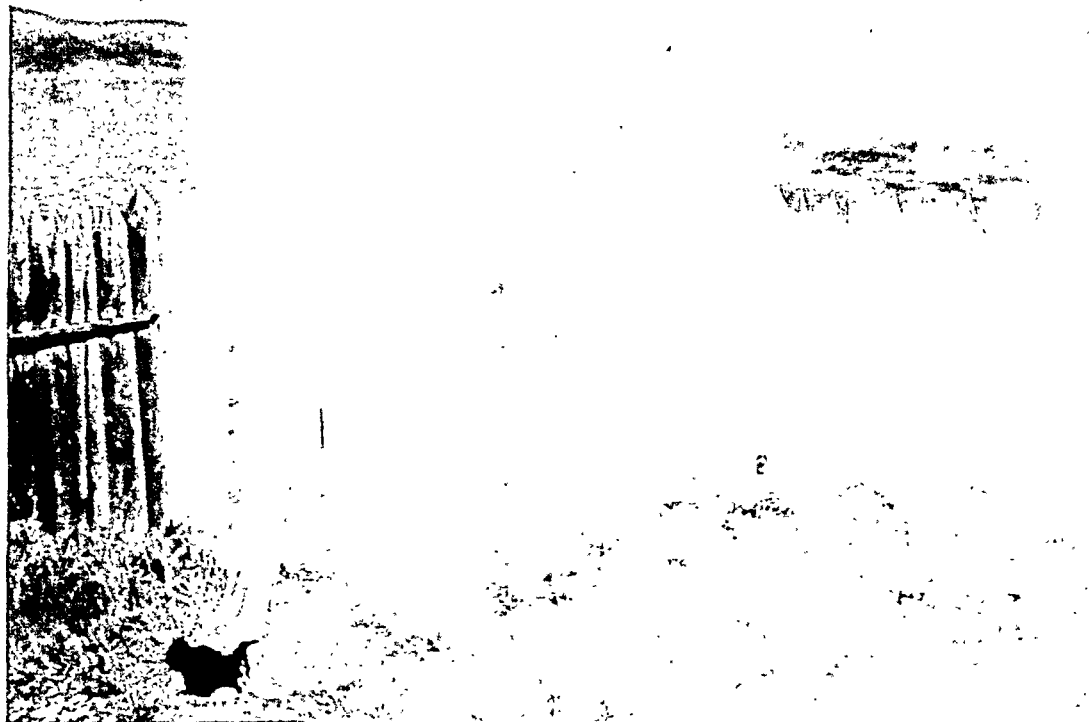
Instead, President Washington ordered Gen. Anthony Wayne to regain control of the territory. For



Schoenbrunn’s log cabins stand as a memorial to Ohio’s first settlers. Here Moravians lived simply, died simply.

MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF





RALPH GRAY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF RIGHT "TRAPPEUR," LITHOGRAPH BY LEMERCIER, THE OLD PRINT SHOP

his heroics at Stony Point, New York, Wayne's Revolutionary War comrades had dubbed him "Mad Anthony." He hated defeat as he did the gout that plagued him. Now he drilled his troops to Spartan toughness and made them masters of the bayonet. In 1794 he built Fort Recovery on the site of St. Clair's defeat, shattered Indian assaults, then moved north to the Maumee River to build Fort Defiance. "I defy the English, Indians, and all the devils in hell to take it," Wayne proclaimed, and warned the redskins he would strike on August 17.

Knowing these tribes fasted before a battle, Wayne let them starve three days more, then swept down on their tree-strewn refuge—aftermath of a tornado—near present Toledo. Years later another soldier, Theodore Roosevelt, described how Wayne's Legion "dashed forward with bloodcurdling yells, pitchforked the enemy from behind entangled logs, shot them down as they fled."

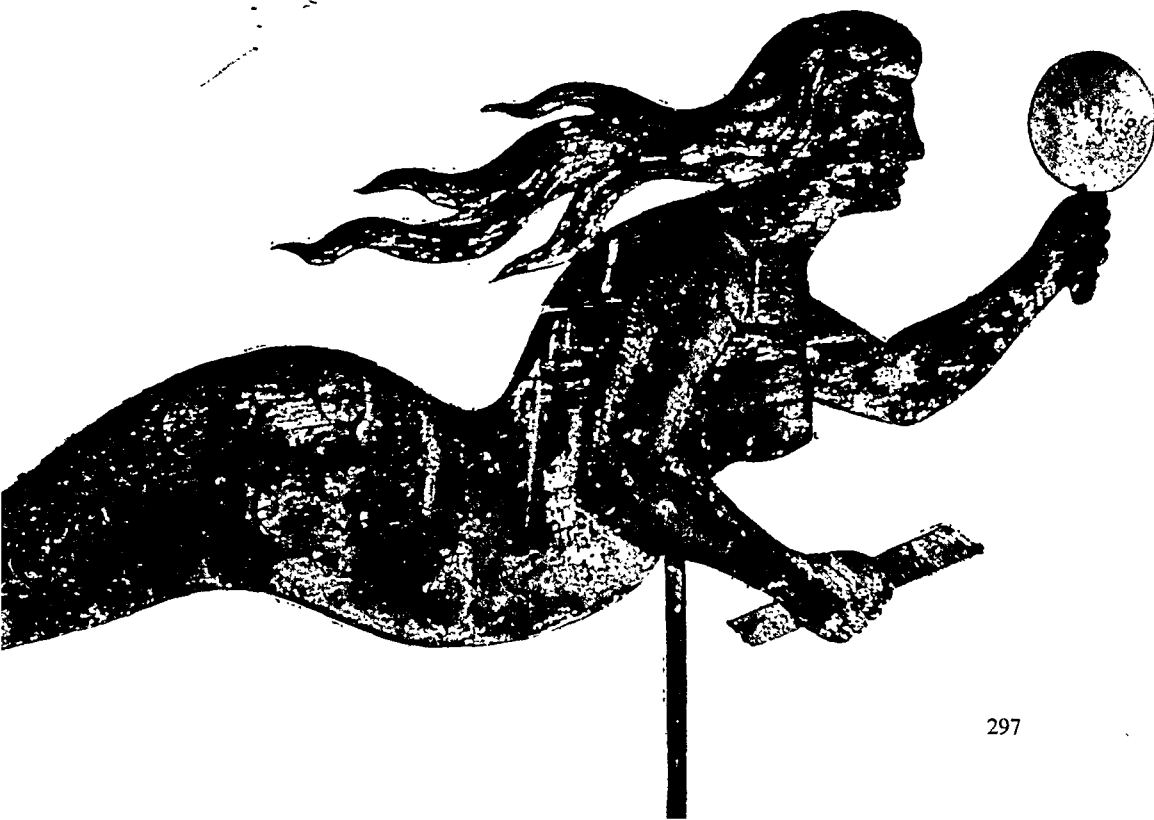
The Battle of Fallen Timbers crushed Ohio's Indians. In July, 1795, Wayne dictated terms at Fort Green Ville and announced, "all the country, south of the great lakes, has been given up to America."

Peace came to Ohio, and in 1803 it became the first state carved out of the Old Northwest. Settlers pushed into Indiana Territory where a man could buy a



MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF
 RIGHT: WALTER H. MILLER. BELOW: EINARS MENGIS,
 SHELBURNE MUSEUM, VERMONT

Weaving and other exhibits at Cooperstown and Old Sturbridge (above) show daily life on the farm frontier. Frugal villagers wore homespun until threadbare, then used it for patching. From leather they made leggings, aprons, even petticoats.





A gimcrack of grandpa's day, this vending hen gives an egg and a cackle for a nickel. The more than 100,000 items at Shelburne range from wind-up toys and stagecoaches to a side-wheel steamer.

country." Leatherstocking yeomen walked behind plows in surrounding fields. Here Natty Bumppo came to life.

Cooperstown, with its Village Crossroads and Farmers' Museum, is a page out of the past - illustrated with rustic crafts and folk art. Weather vanes and cigar-store Indians call to mind the whittling Yankee who, caught without a stick, might carve up the back of his chair.

Images of barn raisings, quilting parties, and husking bees haunt Shelburne Museum, nestled among Vermont's hills. Its old buildings were dismantled at original sites and re-erected timber by timber, brick by brick. A stone's throw from the Charlotte Meeting House and next door to Tuckaway's Barn sits the General Store. Summer visitors,



Manifest Destiny

THERE NEVER WAS another American quite like the mountain man. You might see him—if you were an Indian in the 1820's or '30's—jogging along on his shaggy horse beneath snowy peaks, past crystal streams, across sagebrush plains. His big-bored rifle lies crosswise on his saddle; pistol, knife, and tomahawk are tucked in his belt. Beneath a wide felt hat his long hair falls to his shoulders. His stiff leather shirt and pantaloons are fringed with thongs, grease-smeared from numberless campfires.

His crinkled eyes have seen great bear and thundering herds of buffalo, have followed the trails of unnamed tribes. His elbows and knees may ache, for he spends much of his life in icy water hunting beaver. In the evening twilight of fall and spring he wades the mountain creeks searching out good sets for his traps. These he places under water in the animal's runway near the entrance to its lodge. At dawn he returns, reaching armpit deep to retrieve trap and drowned beaver.

His bones ache, and maybe his heart too. He's lived in the mountains for years; family, civilization are a dim memory. He shares a campfire with other mountain men, maybe takes a squaw. In early summer his lonely trail knits briefly with a hundred others at the rendezvous. Here in some isolated valley he meets the

traders and their mule trains from St. Louis and swaps his pelts for raw alcohol, wool shirts, and year-old news. Then back into the mountains, where an Indian may lift his scalp if he doesn't take the Indian's first. And should he be killed his only epitaph will be the mountain man's lament: "Poor hoss. Out of luck."

A cruel life. Yet in that vast emptiness lying between the Missouri River and the tiny settlements of California, the mountain man is his own master. He savors the clean, bold lines of the untracked land, the free sweep of the wind in high valleys. The West is an itch under his skin. So had it been to others before him. Spaniards... Russians... Englishmen. All came in turn to stake their claim in the West. The first to know the land were the Spanish.

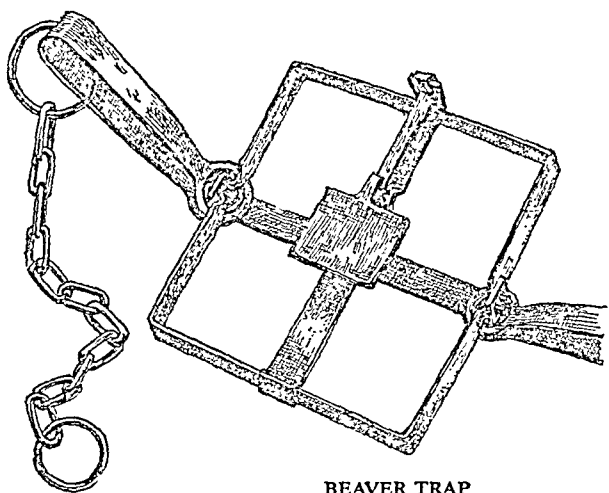
In 1528 a party of some 240 adventurers found themselves stranded on the coast of western Florida. Stitching together crude boats of horsehide, they sailed for Mexico. Miraculously they bobbed as far as Texas before a storm wrecked them. Half the men drowned. Then starvation, the lash of winter rains, and the horrors of Indian captivity carried off all but five. Toughest of these was Alvar Nuñez

Cabeza de Vaca. Weary of the menial toil forced on him by his Indian captors, he persuaded them to let him serve as a trader, carrying into the interior "pieces of sea-snails, conches used for cutting, and a fruit like a bean." He brought back "skins, ochre, ... hard canes of which to make arrows."

After six years of this life Cabeza de Vaca and three companions managed to escape and stumble west. They lived by fashioning combs, bows, and arrows to trade with Indians along the way, and by scraping and soften-

ing hides. They performed cures they had seen wrought by medicine men among their captors, and awed tribe after tribe. As many as 4,000 Indians clamored around them at a time. For nearly two years the men walked across southern Texas and northern Mexico to the Gulf of California. Then one day, sun-blackened and accompanied by several hundred worshipers, they met Spaniards from a Mexican settlement out hunting Indians for slaves. They "stared at me speechless, such was their surprise," Cabeza de Vaca wrote.

Taken to the City of Mexico, he unfolded an exciting story. He had fingered cloth woven of native cotton by the Indians; he had gaped at arrowheads made of "emerald" (probably malachite); he had gazed on "hump backed cows" (buffalo). What's more, he had heard of inland cities with dwellings four and five stories high. These were the pueblos of New Mexico. But in Spanish minds the "big-



BEAVER TRAP

house towns" became the fabled "Seven Cities of Cibola."

The ancient civilizations of Peru and Mexico had yielded their treasures to conquistadores. Were there not more civilizations, more riches to the north?

To find out, Spanish officials sent a party headed by Fray Marcos de Niza. He took along Esteban, a Moorish Negro who had shared Cabeza de Vaca's adventure.

Esteban, with bells tinkling on his arms and ankles, was first to approach the Zuni pueblo of Hawikuh in western New Mexico. The Pueblo Indians killed him. Fray Marcos pressed close enough to glimpse the village, then returned to report it "larger than the City of Mexico."

That was enough for handsome Francisco Vásquez de Coronado. He donned his golden armor and in 1540 led an eager force north from Mexico (see map in back of book). They found Hawikuh, but to their disgust it was "a little crowded village, looking as if it had been crumpled all up together." The Indians resisted. Coronado was knocked unconscious by a stone.

But the defenders could not stand against Spanish armor and horses. Coronado seized food, then marched east to winter among the pueblos in the Rio Grande Valley.

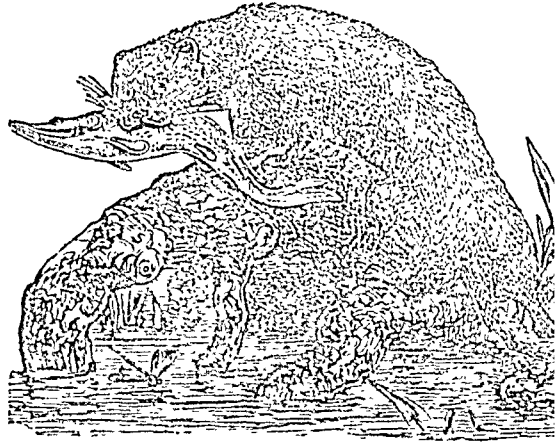
There the bearded invaders watched young Indian men weave blankets to give to maidens as proposal presents; saw chattering groups grind corn to the tune of a fife; noted "cocks with great hanging chins" (turkeys); and learned something of the religious ceremonies in the underground kivas.

They found neither gold nor emeralds. Never mind. *Mas allá*—there is more beyond. Perhaps in golden Quivira.

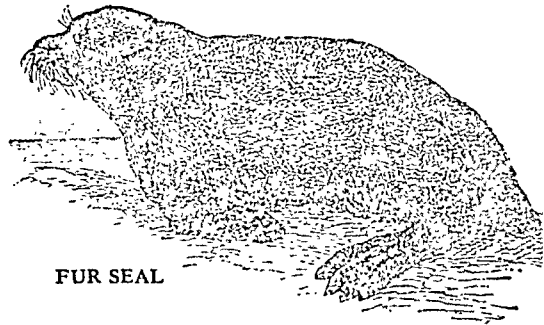
Quivira was the invention of a shrewd Pawnee captive of the Pueblos who wanted to get home. The Spaniards called him *El Turco*, the Turk, because he wore a cloth headband. Following him, they trooped across parts of Texas and Oklahoma.



BEAVER



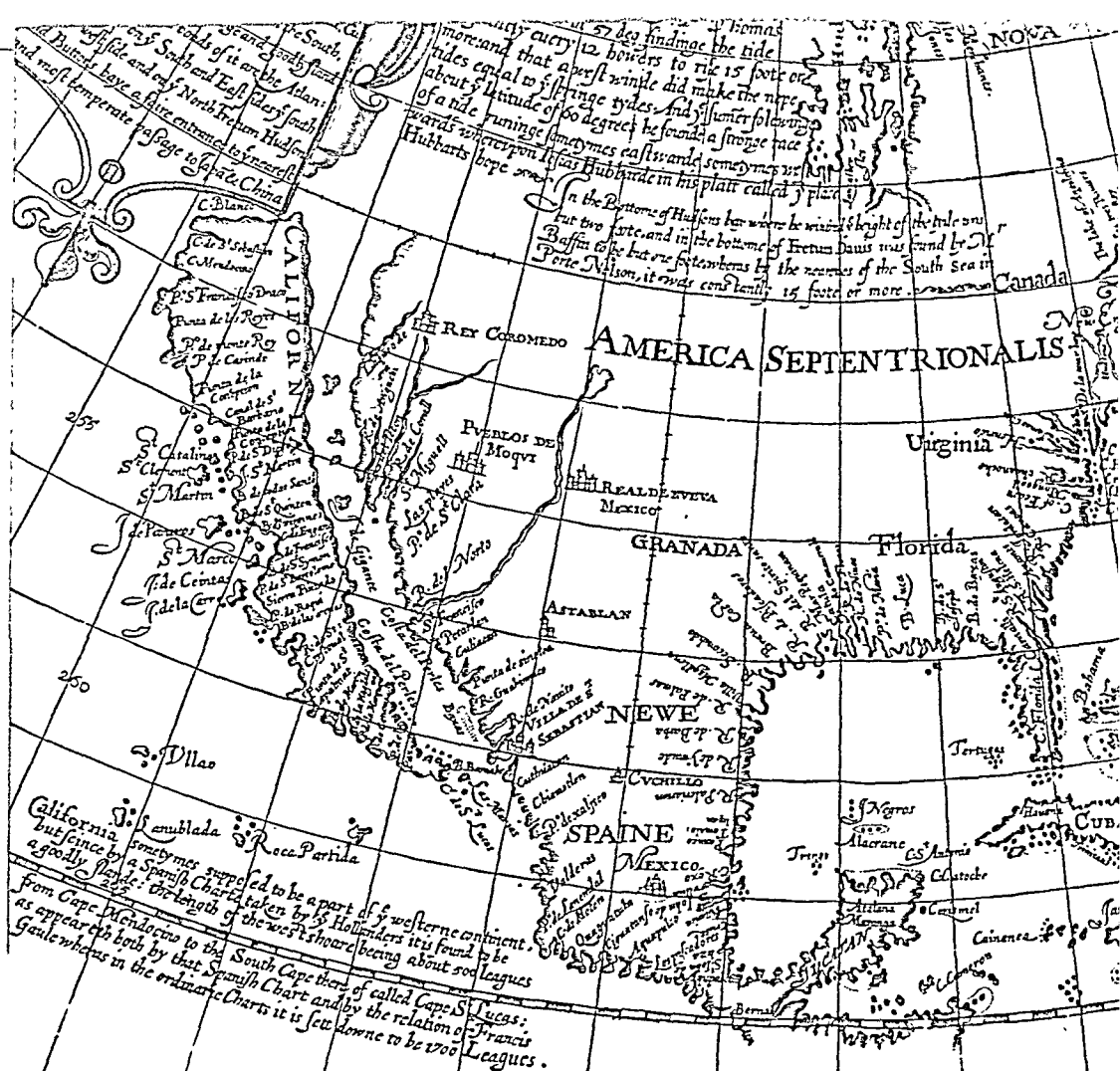
OTTER



FUR SEAL

The fur trade spurred the conquest of the continent. Beaver lured trappers west into the Rocky Mountains and on to the Pacific. The soft inner hair was made into costly felt hats, a status symbol in London and Paris. Seaborne hunters and traders flocked to the Pacific Northwest, harvested lustrous pelts worth fortunes, and nearly exterminated sea otter and fur seal.

BEAVER AND FUR SEAL, CULVER SERVICE. OTTER, BETTMANN ARCHIVE. TRAP BY PAUL R. HOFFMASTER



FROM A TREATISE ON THE NORTHWEST PASSAGE BY ENGLISH MATHEMATICIAN HENRY BRIGGS IN "PURCHAS HIS PILGRIMES," LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

"California . . . a goodly Ilande," reports this 1625 chart. The popular theory was disproved in the early 1700's by Father Kino, a Spanish missionary. But young George Washington in a school copybook dutifully listed "Calofornia" as one of North America's "Chief Islands."


Such featureless immensities! The springy grass left no sign of their passing. Gray wolves howled everywhere. Huge jack rabbits stared without fear at the strange horses. Incredible herds of buffalo darkened the plains. Following them came Indian nomads, their goods heaped on travois dragged by snarling dogs.

Some of Coronado's captains explored far afield. One found the Grand Canyon and tried for three days to reach its bottom. He failed. Another saw the village of Acoma, in New Mexico, perched on a white mesa so tall that "it was a very good musket that could throw a ball as high."

Coronado himself reached central Kansas. He found no golden Quivira, only the grass-thatched lodges of a few Wichita Indians. El Turco had lied. The Spaniard put a rope around his neck, twisted it until he died, then began the bitter return. As they did so, another Spaniard was pushing north by sea.

Juan Rodríguez Cabrillo had heard that California was an island inhabited by lusty black Amazons. More tantalizing was his dream of finding a waterway leading from the Pacific through North America to the Atlantic. Geographers were sure there was such a passage and had even named it the Strait of Anian (later such an idea would be called the Northwest Passage). In 1542-3 Cabrillo's ships poked along the coast as far north as Oregon. They failed to find Anian.

Yet the myth persisted and 36 years later seemed proved when English swash-buckler Francis Drake swept up the west coast and vanished into the fog-shrouded north. Spaniards nodded in agreement: he had returned to the Atlantic by the Strait of Anian (actually, from Drake Bay on the coast of northern California he had sailed his *Golden Hind* west across the Pacific, then round Africa to England).

AGER TO SEIZE THE STRAIT and lured by the promise of "great veins of silver," Spain began the colonization of New Mexico in 1598. Haughty Juan de Oñate spent a fortune outfitting his expedition in Old Mexico. Officers in glittering armor rode blooded horses and brought along gorgeous clothing, even solid silver dinner services. Behind them trudged several hundred soldier-colonists, their families and slaves, and missionaries. Livestock brayed and bleated; the broad wheels of baggage carts rasped in the sand.

Oñate stopped at a place he called San Juan, close to where Santa Fe would be founded 11 years later. His colonists dug irrigation ditches, introduced the cultivation of wheat, barley, and apricots, and built the first church in the Southwest. But their horses made the most telling imprint on the land. Spread by barter and theft, horses drastically changed the lives of the Plains and Rocky Mountain Indians. Mounted, the Indians could chase the buffalo far afield, could swoop down on enemies, could transport their tepee villages easier.

Oñate's dream, like that of Coronado, faded in the trackless land that yielded few riches. Missionaries strove to plant the seed of the Holy Faith, but tribesmen brooded over forced labor, whippings, hangings, the suppression of their ancient religion. Organized by a medicine man named Popé, the Indians revolted in 1680. They fell on settlements and farms, slaughtering 400 Spaniards. Survivors gathered at Santa Fe, broke through their besiegers, and fled south across the blinding sands of the *Jornada del Muerto* (Journey of Death).

Popé pushed Spain's New World border back to Old Mexico and worked feverishly to erase the alien culture that had been laid over his people. But 12 years later the dons returned to stay.

Redoubtable priests in quest of souls and knowledge helped Spain roll back the frontier. Eusebio Francisco Kino founded eight missions in Arizona and, alone or with only a few Indian guides, made more than 50 overland journeys of several hundred miles each. Father Kino dreamed of a land route from Arizona to the Pacific. And although such a discovery fell to others years later, he did traverse the fiery *Camino del Diablo* (Devil's Highway) between northwestern Mexico and the junction of the Gila and lower Colorado rivers in Arizona. He climbed the sun-blasted peaks, scanned the horizon with his telescope, and "discovered with all minute certainty and evidence that California is not an island."

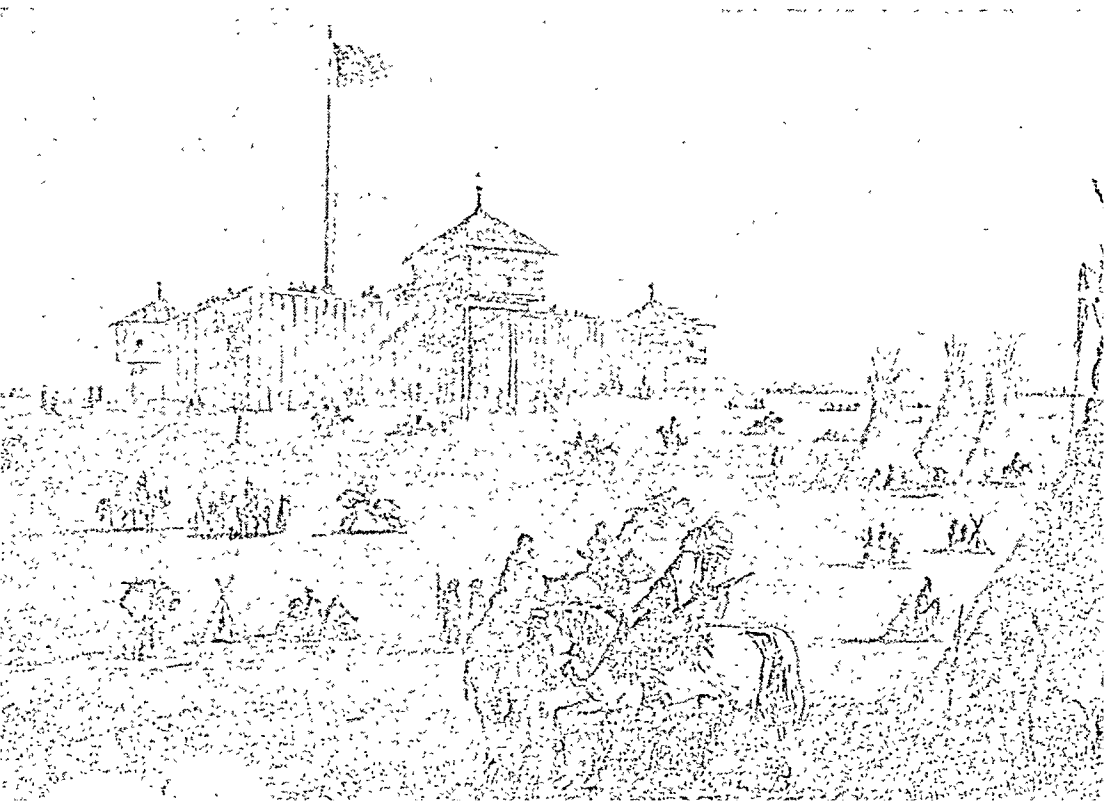
Other padres and soldiers pushed into Texas, founding a mission (the Alamo) and a town (the beginnings of San Antonio) in 1718. Fifty years later the mission of San Diego de Alcalá and the town of Monterey rose along the California coast, soon followed by San Francisco and El Pueblo de Nuestra Señora, la Reina de los Angeles del Río de Porciúncula (Los Angeles). Braving sun-glazed deserts, gaunt mountains, and fierce Apaches, missionary-explorers sought a trail from New Mexico to the Pacific. Spurring the Spanish colonization of California was a threat that came from the north like a chilling wind—Russians!

PETER THE GREAT, the czar who westernized Russia, was fascinated by reports of a land bridge between Asia and America, and by the possibility that his nonseafaring nation might find the elusive Northwest Passage before the great maritime nations did. He sent Vitus Bering from St. Petersburg across the almost trackless wastes of Siberia to build a ship on the Pacific and explore toward America.

Twice Bering sailed from Kamchatka Peninsula, the finger of land that drops down from easternmost Russia. On his second voyage, in 1741, he detected through an opening in the clouds an incredible snow peak towering above a wonderland of islands, forests, inlets, and glistening icebergs. To this giant mountain on the underbelly of Alaska he gave the name it still bears, Saint Elias.

But weakened by his toils and depressed by the first stages of scurvy, Bering allowed his scientists only a few precious hours ashore before he weighed anchor. Fog shrouded his ship as it crept westward along the uncharted Aleutian Islands.

ALFRED JACOB MILLER SKETCHED "LARAMIE'S FORT" IN 1837. WALTERS ART GALLERY, BALTIMORE, © 1951 UNIVERSITY OF OKLAHOMA PRESS



The sea seemed ghostlike; strange animal and bird voices wailed. Rain turned to sleet. A storm tossed the ship on an island that now bears the explorer's name. The men built huts of driftwood, sailcloth, and hides. Some survived the winter, but not Bering. The remainder built a clumsy boat, calked it with the tallow of sea cows, and sailed back to Kamchatka. With them they took the sea otter furs they had gathered to keep themselves from freezing.

Peter the Great had died, and his successors were indifferent to Bering's scientific discoveries. But the otter pelts triggered a stampede. Chinese merchants were willing to pay fortunes for the fur of *bobri morski*, as the Russians called the web-toed animal.

Promyshleniki (Siberian mountain men) rushed for Bering Island in flat-bottom river barges. Moving on to the Aleutians, they hopped from island to island, stripping each of fur. They offered trinkets and held Aleut women as hostages to get the Aleut men to chase the otter through tumults of white water onto barren reefs, and there club the animals to death.

Edging farther and farther south along the coast of Alaska, the Russians established their headquarters at Sitka on Baranof Island. Then in 1812 they built Fort Ross (*Rossiia*, or Russia) just 60 miles north of San Francisco.

But the Russians were not to enjoy the Pacific Northwest by themselves. In 1778 two British ships hove to in Nootka Sound on Vancouver Island. Aboard was the explorer, Capt. James Cook, come to find the Northwest Passage.

Cook watched as Indians clad in blankets woven from dog hair and cedar bark paddled out in high-prowed canoes, flinging out red dust and bursts of oratory. Their bodies were daubed with red clay and whale oil, their long black hair was streaked with fish oil and the white down of birds. The Nootkas had broad faces, small black eyes, and legs misshapen by lives spent crouching in their seatless canoes. Bits of metal dangled from their ears. But most exciting, many had draped over their shoulders, almost carelessly, priceless robes of sea otter and fox.

Cook's men traded briskly: "Whole suits of clothes were stripped of every button . . . copper kettles, tin canisters, candlesticks and the like, all went."

When the ships reached China the furs brought huge profits. Word spread and soon other ships were poking into the coves along America's northwest coast.

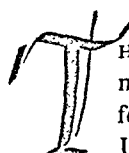
Yet England's strongest bid for the Pacific Northwest came overland—from the fur trading posts in central Canada. Two giant rivals, the Hudson's Bay Company and the North West Company, raced west. A doughty Scot, Alexander Mackenzie, struck out for the Pacific, took a wrong river, and ended up at the Arctic Ocean. Trying again, he breached the Rocky Mountains, floated down the Bella Coola River, and reached the coast of British Columbia. Others followed his path.

Fort Laramie, Wyoming outpost of the American Fur Company, raised the U.S. flag 800 miles west of St. Louis. It swarmed with Indians and mountain men, later supplied Oregon Trail travelers.

Last to enter the contest for the West was the infant United States. Her people had long known the pull of the West, the unfathomable urge to follow the setting sun over distant, blue-hazed mountains. George Washington had not yet been inaugurated as President when the author of a popular school geography wrote: "The period is not far distant, when the AMERICAN EMPIRE will comprehend millions of souls, west of the Mississippi."

Yankees first probed the Pacific Northwest when Boston merchants, hearing of Captain Cook's voyage, sent out two ships, one commanded by Robert Gray. In 1792 the young mariner discovered a mighty river flooding out of the forest.

For years there had been rumors of a great river flowing west. The "Oregon," one credulous Great Lakes traveler called it in his book, and another magic name entered our geography. Theorists speculated that the headwaters of the rumored Oregon, interlocking with those of the Missouri, would furnish the long-sought water route to the Pacific. Now Captain Gray proved the Great River of the West to be a fact. He named it the Columbia, after his ship, and the discovery gave the United States a claim on the Pacific shore.

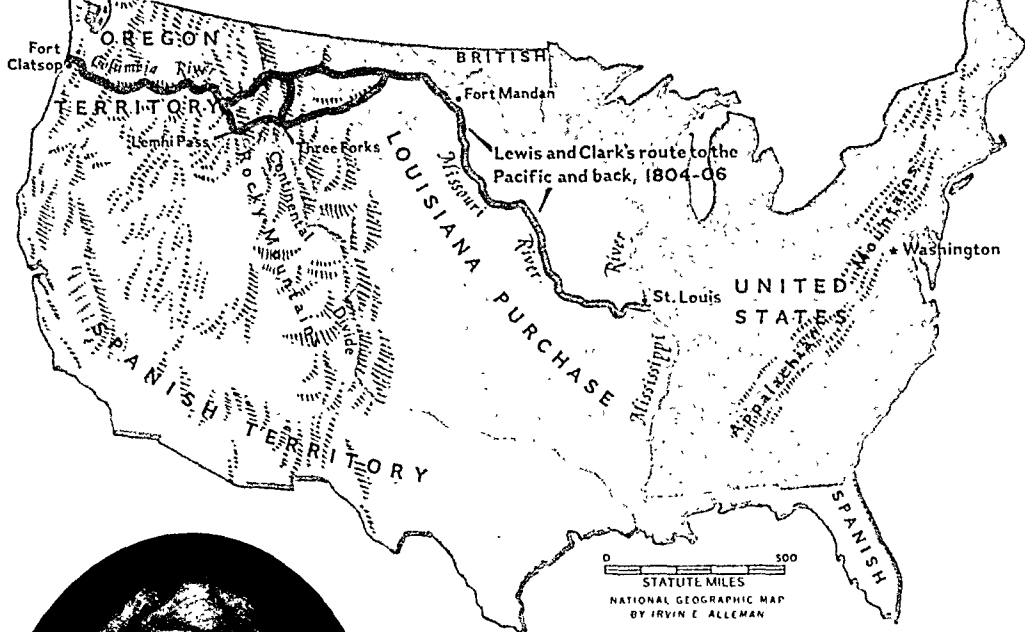
HE TURN OF THE CENTURY brought fresh encouragement to the young nation. Spain yielded the vast territory of Louisiana to Napoleon. Pressed for money to finance his wars, he sold the 909,130 square miles to the United States for \$15,000,000 (2½ cents an acre!). And suddenly the U. S. border leaped from the Mississippi to the Rocky Mountains.

But boundaries on maps didn't hold back fur traders. In 1810 Andrew Henry built in Idaho the first American post west of the Great Divide. That same year New York's John Jacob Astor sent his men around Cape Horn to establish Fort Astoria on the Columbia. Soon fur brigades roamed both sides of the Rockies.

The British forced Astor out. And to keep the Yankees out of the Oregon Territory, as the Northwest was coming to be called, the Hudson's Bay Company established Fort Vancouver on the Columbia, and sent trappers deep into Idaho and Montana to strip the country of beaver. But what the British government never gauged was man's hunger, not for gold or fur, but for *land* he could call his own.

This was the fulfillment the West offered Americans. Fired by its promise, sturdy homeseekers would move inexorably westward along trails blazed by trappers and traders. They would carry a conviction that it was their duty to fill the land with American culture and all its blessings. A New York editor would sum up the belief, writing that it was "our manifest destiny to overspread and to possess the whole of the continent which Providence has given us for the development of the great experiment of liberty and federated self-government."

Manifest Destiny! A new name for an old yearning. But it could never have been fulfilled if a continental awareness had not stirred the imagination of the people. This awareness in large measure grew from the expedition headed by Lewis and Clark that at last linked the shores of the continent by pushing up the Missouri farther than Frenchmen, Spaniards, or Englishmen had ever been able to go, crossing between the peaks of the Shining Mountains, and so reaching the headwaters of the giant river of the West, the Columbia.



RALPH GRA



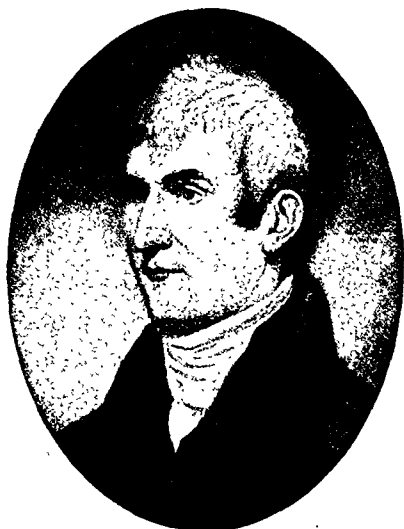
WILLIAM CLARK

FOLLOWING THE TRAIL OF LEWIS AND CLARK

EXPLORE the Missouri river, & such principal stream of it, as . . . may offer the most direct . . . communication across this continent." Penned by President Thomas Jefferson in 1803, those instructions launched the Lewis and Clark Expedition that opened American eyes to the marvels of a vast western domain.

Reading Jefferson's words, I grew eager to see for myself "the soil & face of the country." And what better way to show my three children—Judith, Mary Ellen, and Will—the wealth and splendor of their native land?

My hopes sprang to life one June day in Washington, D. C., when my wife and I, with about equal parts of help and hindrance from our youngsters, packed our station wagon with



MERIWETHER LEWIS

camp gear, toys, cameras, and clothing. In a corner I installed a compact library featuring a set of the Lewis and Clark journals, our ready-made guidebooks. On top of the car we lashed our canoe *Trout*.

Jefferson, who bought the huge Louisiana Territory from Napoleon in 1803, chose his 28-year-old private secretary, Meriwether Lewis, to lead a small Army detachment up the Missouri to its unknown source, cross the Rockies, and descend the almost legendary Columbia to the Pacific. Captain Lewis asked William Clark, youngest brother of George Rogers Clark, to serve as co-captain in the trip's "fatigues, it's dangers and it's honors." Clark jumped at the chance.

For five months the party outfitted at Wood River, 15 miles north of St. Louis, where the shifting Mississippi then received the Missouri. On the afternoon of May 14, 1804, the "robust helthy hardy young men" of the Corps of Discovery set out in a keelboat and two pirogues "and proceeded on under a jentle brease up the Missourie." They would not return until September, 1806. Lewis and Clark's initial appropriation by Congress for the three-year expedition was \$2,500. Traveling frugally, our "expedition" — my wife, our children, and I — spent slightly more than that in three months following the party's trail.

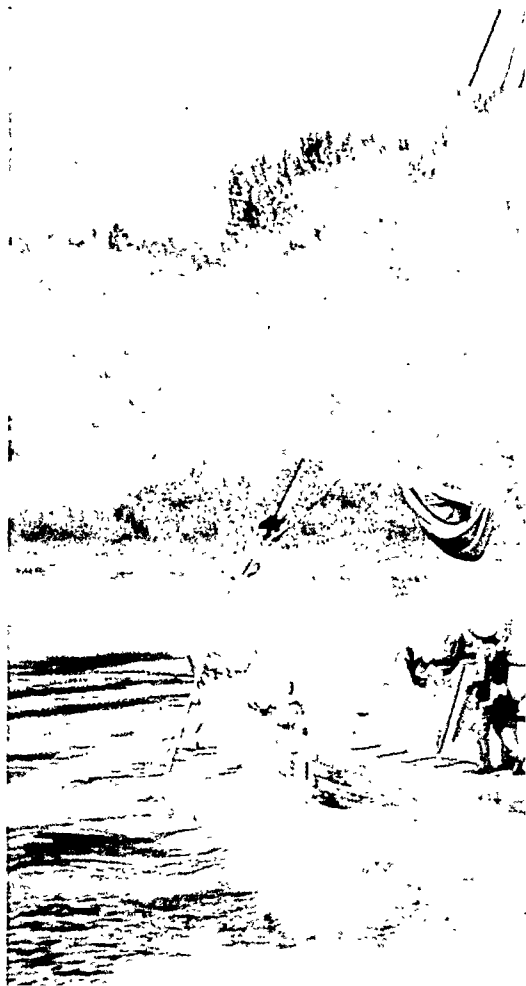
The swirling milk-chocolate waters of "Big Muddy" led us west and north through Missouri, Mother of the West; wheat-growing Kansas; corn-belt Iowa and Nebraska; and the Dakotas, where farms gave way to range. We realized that a summer was none too long for following Lewis and Clark. We were always in a hurry. "When it comes to eating, you don't think of Duncan Hines," my wife reproached me. "You think of dunkin' doughnuts."

At Sioux City, Iowa, we paid homage at the grave of the first American soldier to die west of the Mississippi. Sgt. Charles Floyd was "taken verry bad all at once with a Biliose Chork-lick" (bilious colic) and "Died with a great deal of Composure." He was the only fatality of the expedition.

The explorers sighted buffalo, prairie dogs, and pronghorns. Called goats by the captains, pronghorns were unknown to science. The plains teemed with game. The land was as

A 55-foot keelboat with a square sail carried the explorers halfway up the Missouri. If wind failed, they poled it like a Nile barge, rowed it like a Greek galley, or towed it from the bank like a Yangtze junk. They averaged ten miles a day against the strong current.

KEELBOAT FROM THE MOVIE "THE BIG SKEW", TOM KISSKILA



friendly as the river was hostile. Lewis and Clark quickly learned, as do those who live along the Missouri today, that it is a "devil-river" at war with humanity. Its current bore down upon them with unrelenting force. Its mud banks sloughed off, nearly swamping their canoes. Its eddies devoured sand-bar islands as the men camped on them. In their 15-month uphill push against this river, the explorers covered 3,096 miles, by their count. The "Orange Crate" (Judith's nickname for our station wagon) drove the same distance in a few weeks.

In the Dakotas the children quickly learned to spot the dimples that indicate earth lodge sites of the Arikara, Minnetaree, and Mandan Indians. In Fort Abraham Lincoln State Park near Bismarck we saw five restored lodges rising like earthen bubbles under the green sod. One of them was completely furnished, with bunks around the edge, fire pit in the center, cache pits in the floor, and grinding basins for corn. A buffalo skull on a stick made a family altar.

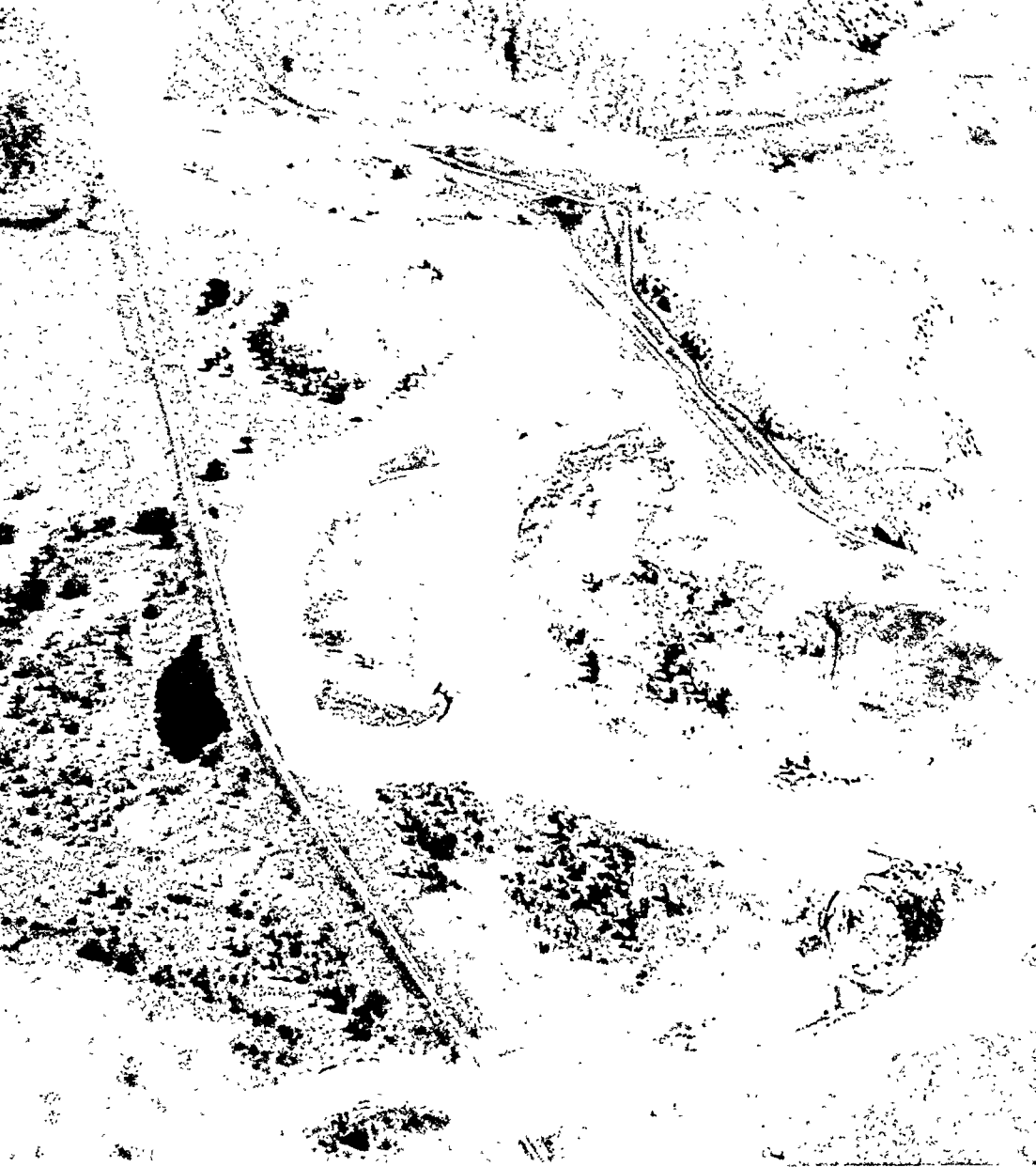
It looked so homelike that Will asked, "Are you sure no one lives here?"

His mother reassured him. "But," she said, "it was in a house just like this that Sacagawea lived when she first saw Lewis and Clark."

"Oh, Sacagawea," Mary Ellen said. She stumbled over the difficult name. "We read about her in school."

"Yes, she was a Shoshoni living in the Rocky Mountains. Minnetaree raiders





Three forks converge in Montana to form the Missouri. Lewis and Clark named them the Jefferson (lower left), Madison (right center), and Gallatin (top) after the President and two cabinet members.

At the town of Three Forks, an annual pageant relives episodes of the explorers' journey, right. Sites of Mandan earth lodges, left, still dimple the North Dakota plains.

• MANDAN VILLAGE BY GEORGE CATLIN, 1832
SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION. RIGHT, RALPH GRAY,
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF
ABOVE, MELVILLE BELL GROSVENOR
AND SUMNER GERARD. PILOT



captured her when she was about 12 and carried her away to the plains. There she remained a slave until a French fur trader bought and married her."

Lewis and Clark hired this man, Toussaint Charbonneau, as an interpreter and included in the deal his squaw Sacagawea and two-month-old boy. The explorers knew that at the source of the Missouri they would have to abandon their boats. The Shoshonis, Sacagawea's tribe, were the only people in that area from whom they might buy horses for the trip across the "Shining Mountains." Providence had sent them an ambassadress.

Building Fort Mandan, near Bismarck, Lewis and Clark wintered there, then pushed on in April of 1805. The keelboat had been sent down the Missouri to St. Louis with letters, dispatches, and specimens from the plains for the scrutiny of President Jefferson. Thirty-one men and Sacagawea set out to wrestle six canoes and the two pirogues—a little fleet "not quite so respectable as those of Columbus or Capt. Cook"—up the dwindling river.

I could not miss the excitement in the journals as the party approached the Rockies. They were the first whites to encounter and describe in detail the fearsome grizzly: "...these bear being so hard to die reather intimdates us all; I must confess that I do not like the gentlemen and had reather fight two Indians than one bear."

Nearing the Rockies, we launched our canoe in the swift-flowing Missouri. North of Helena, Montana, a motorboat took us through the "Gates of the Rocky Mountains," where the journals describe gloomy cliffs rising nearly 1,200 feet. In the canyon, Lewis found nowhere to "rest the soal of his foot."



Winding south past the site of Helena, the explorers heard cheering news from Sacagawea: the three forks were not far away. Clark, walking ahead, discovered this point where three rivers unite to form the Missouri, 2,466 miles above its mouth. In the one-street town of Three Forks, Montana, we took rooms in the Sacajawea Inn. A restaurant cashier gave me four silver dollars in change and, as I hefted the unaccustomed weight, remarked, "Another Easterner!"

Moving west, Lewis and Clark were frantic to meet the Shoshonis. Nearly half their second summer was gone and they had no horses for crossing the mountains. The Indians were keeping out of sight, suspicious of this strange invasion. Lewis went ahead with three men, hoping to show his friendly intentions. Walking up Horse Prairie Creek to Lemhi Pass, he and his patrol became the first white Americans to stand on the Continental Divide: August 12, 1805. From here to the Pacific they would be outside United States territory.

Pushing down the opposite slope, Lewis enjoyed his first taste of Pacific-bound water. In a valley beyond, he found his Shoshonis—Chief Cameahwait and 60 warriors advancing toward him. The white man fearlessly put down his rifle and walked ahead, holding the American flag. Cameahwait "very affectionately" threw his arm over Lewis's shoulder and pressed his cheek against the stranger's. Other Indians followed suit; the whites "wer all carressed and besmeared with their grease and paint till . . . heartily tired of the national hug."

Sacagawea danced with joy, for Cameahwait proved to be her brother. Yet she chose to keep on with Lewis and Clark. The latter, especially, became fond of



"LEWIS AND CLARK MEETING THE FLATHEADS" BY CHARLES M. RUSSELL, HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF MONTANA. TOP RIGHT: PALPH GRAY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

the "little squar." He called her "Janey" and referred to her papoose, whom he called Pomp, as "my little dancing boy."

Bartering for horses, the explorers joyfully started across the mountains. But by the time they had struggled across the Bitterroot Range they were weary men. Entering the Lolo wilderness, they were told by Indians that a faint trail led to the navigable Clearwater, but that others had "suffered excessively with hunger." This was the hardest section of the whole trail for Lewis and Clark. September snow threatened to freeze moccasined feet. Food gave out. The men killed a colt and ate it, as well as crayfish, bear's oil, and candles.

We found this wild Idaho upland little changed since the sick and starving explorers threaded it. Finally they reached the Clearwater and began to build dugout canoes. And as their strength returned, they formed squares and danced to a fiddle.



Baby strapped to her back, steadfast Sacagawea shared the trials of the 31 men in Lewis and Clark's expedition. The mere presence of the young Shoshoni prevented attacks by Indians, for "a woman with a party of men is a token of peace," Clark noted. Her statue, by Leonard Crunelle, stands at Bismarck, North Dakota, 40 miles from where the explorers met her.

A large encampment of Flathead Indians (left) "received us friendly," Clark reported. White and red men met in Montana's Bitterroot Valley west of the Continental Divide. The Flatheads won their name because they left their heads flat as Nature made them, and did not elongate them in infancy with bindings or headboards as did neighboring tribes to the west.

On the entire venture, the party had only one fatal encounter with Indians. Attacked, Lewis and another man killed two Blackfeet.



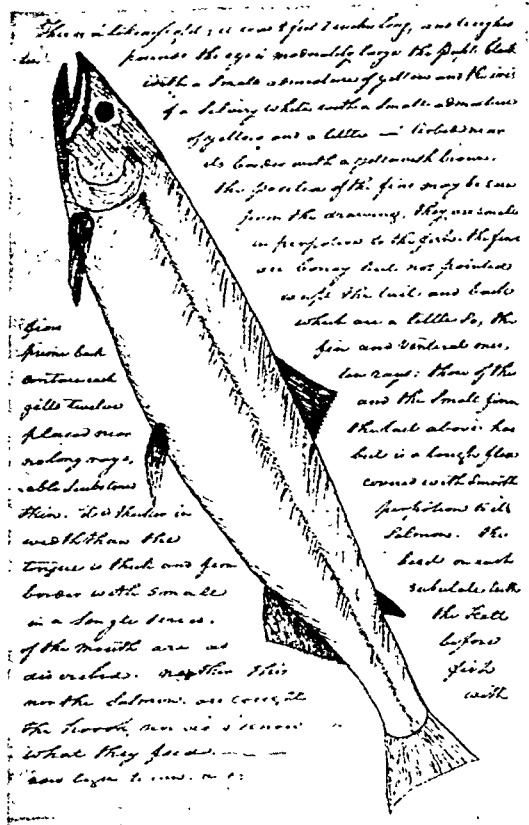
RAY ATKESON BELOW MURAL BY FRANK SWARTZ IN ROTUNDA OF OREGON STATE CAPITOL, SALEM RIGHT LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

The Columbia River carried the weary explorers toward Mount Hood along what is now the boundary between Oregon and Washington. They portaged their heavy dugouts around Celilo Falls (below). Lewis and Clark direct

the job; Sacagawea stands with her Canadian husband. Water backed up by The Dalles Dam today floods the site.

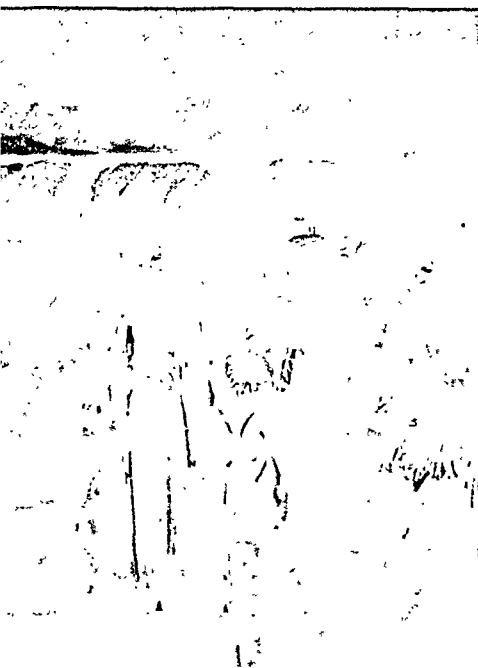
Northwestern Indians proved "assumeing and disagreeable." They even stole a peace





There is a white fish, 11 to 12 feet long, and weighs
 pounds. The eye is remarkably large. The fish has
 with a small, somewhat of yellow and black
 of a silvery white with a small, admixture
 of yellow and a little in blackness
 its lower with a goldenish brown.
 the position of the fins may be seen
 from the drawing. They are small
 in proportion to the body. The fins
 are long but not pointed
 except the tail, and back
 which are a little so, the
 fin and ventral ones,
 are long. Those of the
 and the small fin
 that last above has
 back is a large glass
 covered with smooth
 portions of the
 salmon. The
 back is made
 of small, but
 the tail
 before
 with
 with

pipe passed among them! They wouldn't part with their fish, so "we purchased 8 Small fat dogs for the party to eat," wrote Clark. He sketched a white salmon trout "2 feet 8 inches Long," a scientific first, in his diary (right).



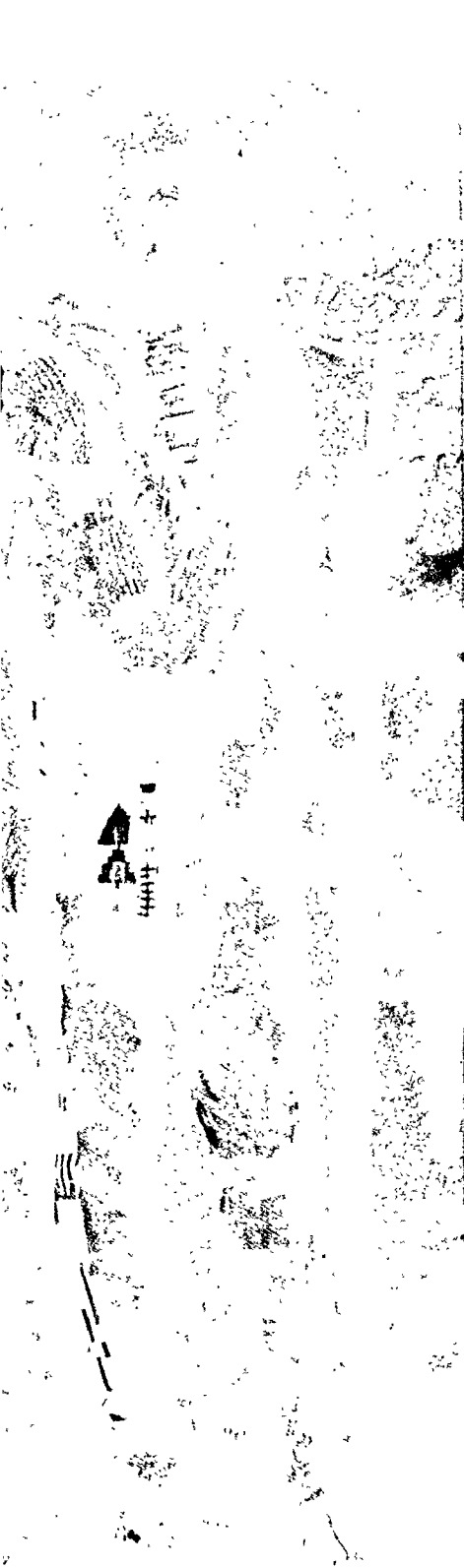
Curious Nez Percé Indians watched the caller "boss other mans how to do funny dance and sing songs, and all laugh" — still a pretty good description of a square dance.

By October 7, 1805, the dugouts were ready. Lewis and Clark pushed off on the last lap to the Pacific. I, too, canoed the Clearwater with a riverman in Trout's stern. We shot many rapids, but stopped short of the one where the explorers struck a rock and lost a dugout.

Westward-running waters of the Clearwater, Snake, and Columbia sped Lewis and Clark toward their goal. Then on a wretched November day fog cleared and the Columbia widened into a bay. William Clark expressed the elation of the entire group:

"Ocan in view! O! the joy."

For us, reaching the Pacific, the sun burst out and bathed the Oregon coast in golden light. "From sea to shining sea" we had traced the steps of the men who made the phrase possible.



PAINTING BY WALDO LOVE, STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF COLORADO

Jim Baker

Other trail blazers of the West



DAGUERRETYPE BY MATHEW B. BRADY, C. 1850
CULVER SERVICE

John C. Frémont

EVEN as Lewis and Clark returned, mountain men were pushing west. They went to trap beaver but got trapped themselves by that extravagance of soaring, snow-topped peaks, endless plains, boiling springs, and spouting geysers where "Nature appears to lie some herself."

Gentle Jedediah Smith was first to cross the Great Basin and the Sierras; Jim Bridger



PHOTOGRAPH, 1866, HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF MONTANA

Jim Bridger. Right: Jedediah Smith

WAGONS WEST

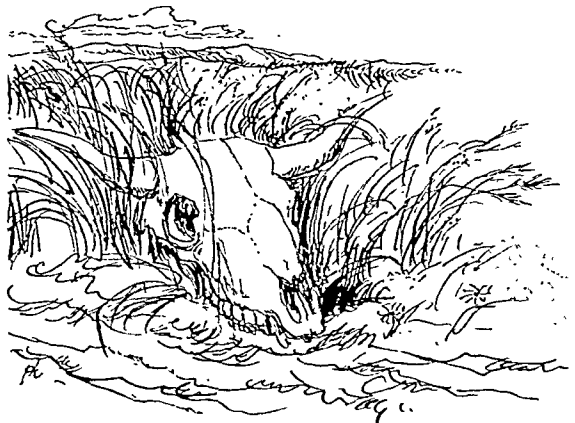
DEFYING snags and sand bars, paddle-wheel steamers thrashed upstream against the yellow spring flood of the Missouri River, then sidled toward the dock that served the frontier town of Independence, Missouri, five miles away.

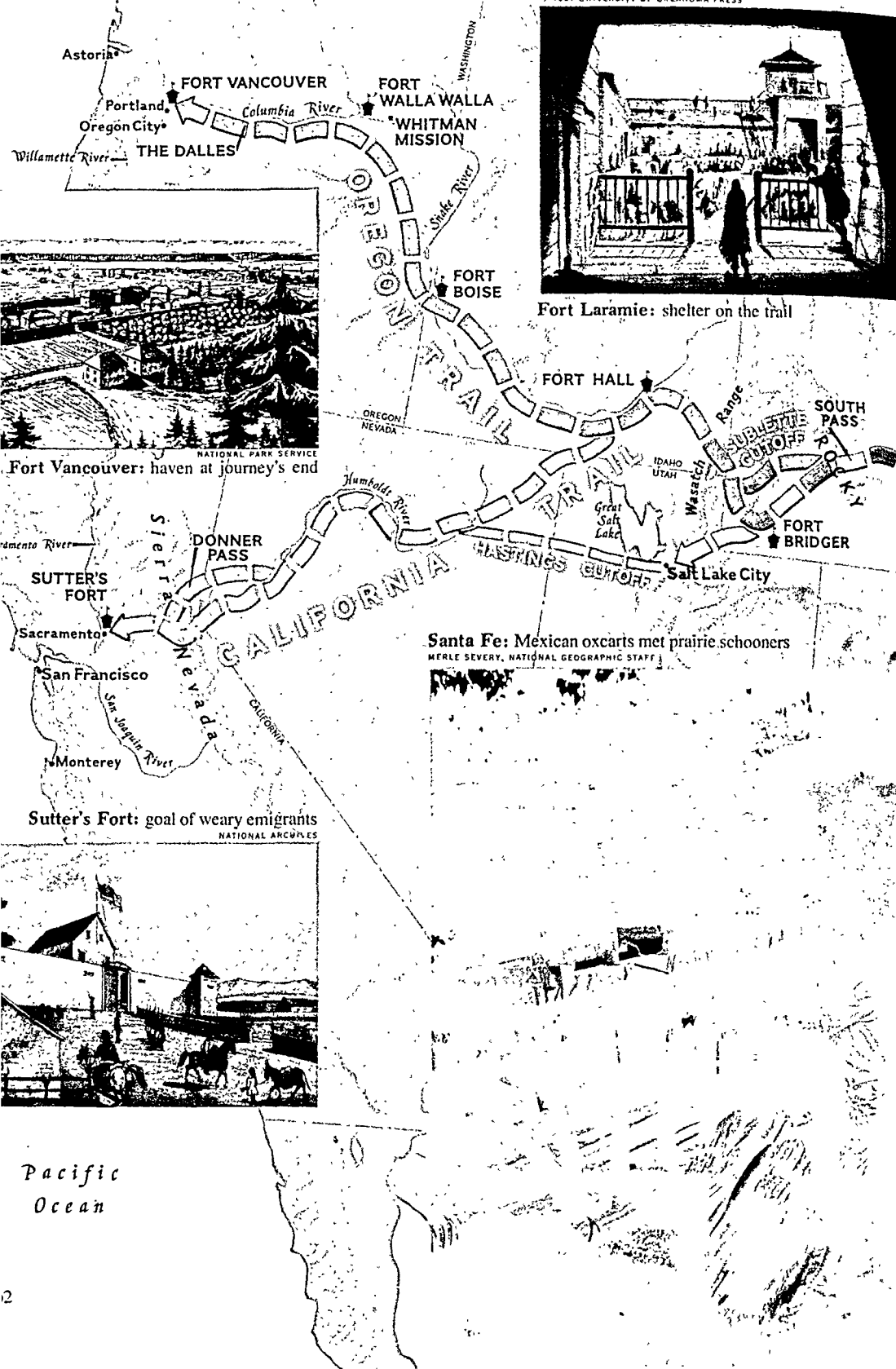
Mountain men and Santa Fe traders watched them unload, casual interest turning to contempt as canvas-covered wagons rumbled ashore, followed by cows, chicken coops, washtubs, plows, and finally greenhorn farmers with harassed wives and flocks of awestruck children.

Their goal was 2,000 miles away: Oregon and California (magic words in the 1840's!). There, they had heard, days were sunny and land was almost for the asking.

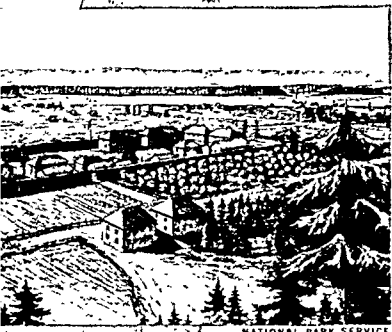
They camped where they could, organized themselves into trains of 40 wagons or more, hired mountain men as guides, and argued over the best date for starting west. You couldn't move before the prairie grass was high enough to feed the stock; yet if you delayed too long, others would strip the forage.

They spent the waiting days buying supplies and animals. Independence, and later the river towns of Westport and St. Joseph, thrived on the business. At last the long





Fort Laramie: shelter on the trail



Fort Vancouver: haven at journey's end

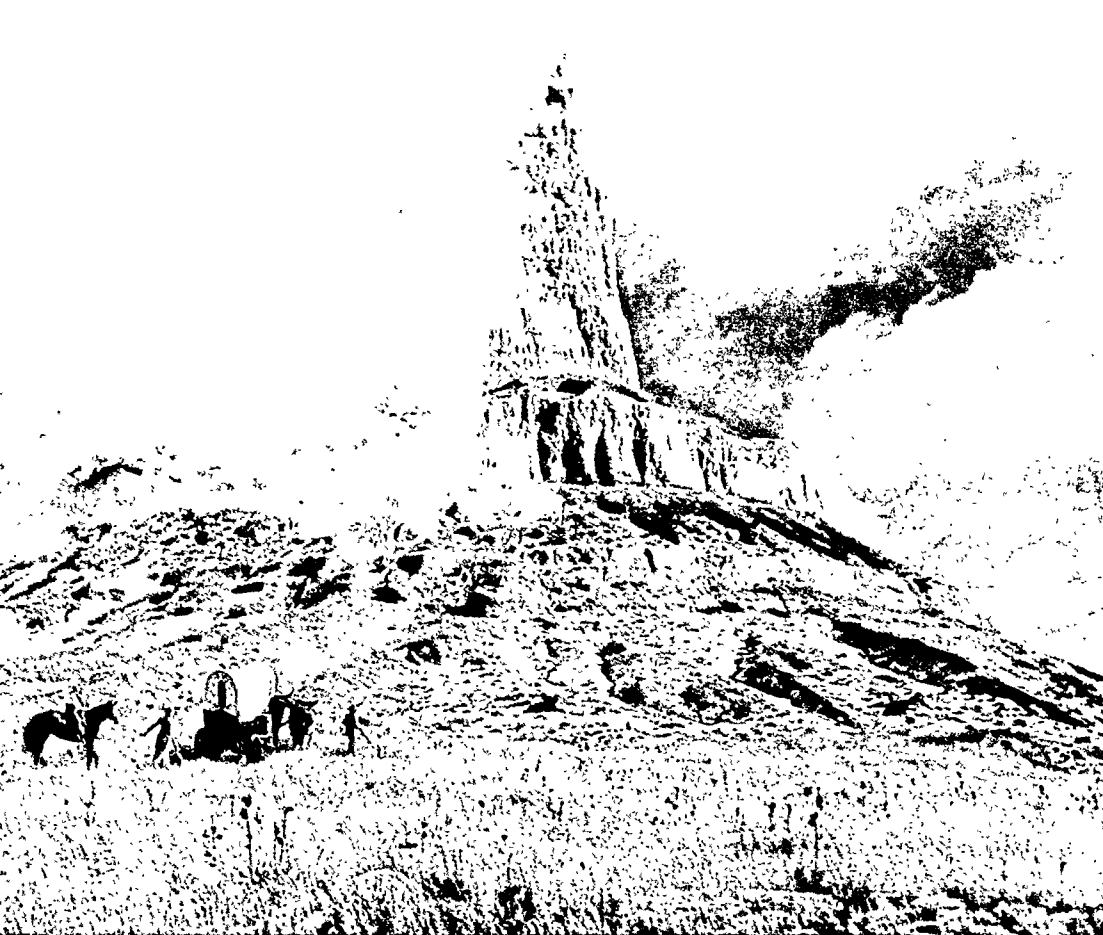


Sutter's Fort: goal of weary emigrants

Santa Fe: Mexican oxcarts met prairie schooners
 MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF



Pacific
 Ocean



SINCLAIR OIL CORPORATION'S PUBLIC SERVICE ADVERTISING

Scotts Bluff, landmark on the Platte, beckoned Oregon Trail travelers. Wagon trains drew up at its spring; campfires glimmered beside its face. Hoofs and wheels scarred Mitchell Pass in today's national monument.

whips cracked, men shouted, dogs yapped, oxen lunged forward, and broad wheels bit into fresh sod. They were on their way on the Oregon Trail.

At first drivers were busy persuading half-broken mules and oxen not to bolt, sulk in harness, or tangle themselves in picket ropes at night. Men eyed each other as potential captains. The leader of the train, said Marcy's handbook, *The Prairie Traveler*, should exhibit "good judgment . . . and practical experience. . . . His duty should be to direct the order of march, the time of starting and halting, to select the camps, detail and give orders." But the wayfarers were restless, opinionated individualists. Elijah White, leader of the 1842 caravan, was deposed when he ordered all dogs killed lest their barking attract Indians. Another captain was overruled when he tried to punish a youth who slept on night guard duty. The pioneers decided that since the lad couldn't stay awake, he need not stand guard at all!

The wagons moved across rolling hills spangled with verbena, wild indigo, tulips, and larkspur. Most of the emigrants found this first stretch exhilarating. But Edwin Bryant felt "the silence and desolation reigning over it excite irrepressible

emotions of sadness and melancholy." And historian Francis Parkman wrote that the traveler's bed "will be a soft one, consisting often of black mud. . . . As for food, he must content himself with biscuit and salt provisions."

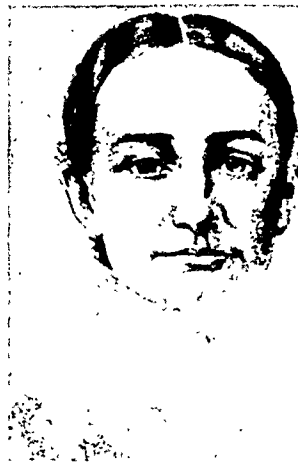
Sudden, savage thunderstorms flooded camps, scattered stock, and drove rain through tents "as though they had been paper." Mountain man Jim Clyman declared one young wife "worthy of the bravest undaunted pioneer of the West." She "held an umbrella over the fire and her skillet with the greatest composure for near 2 hours and baked bread enough to give us a verry plentiful supper."

They sometimes crossed swollen streams at established ferries, more often on makeshift rafts—perhaps hollowing a couple of cottonwoods into dugouts and linking them by crossbars. Lacking trees, men calked wagons and floated across.

Wagons often traveled several abreast so they could quickly be wheeled into a hollow square if Indians attacked. The husband walked beside heavy-shouldered oxen, "geeing" and "hawing," popping his whip when needed. Older boys prodded along the cow column. The wife sat on a wagon seat, eternally knitting. Younger children, hair bleaching in the sun, peered out the front or rear opening.

Near the Platte River the soil grew sandier. You could wade the mile-wide river, "too thick to drink, too thin to plow." With no firewood, you cooked over buffalo

Narcissa Whitman's honeymoon was a perilous trek to the Northwest with her missionary husband and another couple in 1836. The wives were the first American women to make the journey overland.



Dr. Marcus Whitman set up his mission near Walla Walla, Washington. He and Narcissa taught Indians to pray and farm, and welcomed haggard emigrants. But an epidemic of measles ended their efforts. Indians fell prey to it and added this grievance to others. In 1847 they turned on the gentle Whitmans, slew them and 12 companions. A shaft overlooks the mission site.

MARCUS WHITMAN SCULPTURED BY
AVARD FAIRBANKS, U. S. CAPITOL
NARCISSA WHITMAN, FROM OLIVER W. NIXON'S
"HOW MARCUS WHITMAN SAVED OREGON"



WHITMAN NATIONAL MONUMENT, MARVIN M. HENDRICKSON

The Pig War

IN MOST WAYS Charles Griffin's pig was no different from any other. But it had the distinction in 1859 of leading Great Britain and the United States to the brink of war.

Griffin operated a farm for the Hudson's Bay Company on San Juan, one of a group of islands off the coast of present Washington State. At that time no one knew who owned the islands.

The two nations had long locked horns over the Pacific Northwest. After the withdrawal of Spanish and Russian claims, they had agreed to a joint occupancy. But as Americans spilled into the Oregon Territory, a crisis flamed. The United States claimed a boundary near the southern tip of Alaska; Britain called the Columbia River the dividing line.

The strident cry of "Fifty-four forty or fight" swept James K. Polk into the White House, and both nations sent warships to the Columbia. War was averted when in 1846 the conflicting claims were compromised at the 49th parallel, where the border stands today. But an ambiguity in the treaty left the San Juans a two-man's land.

The question came to a head when Griffin's pig wandered into Lyman Cutler's potato patch and began rooting. Cutler, an American, shot it dead. Griffin appealed to British authorities on Vancouver Island, who tried to talk Cutler into paying damages.

Feelings were running high on July 9, 1859, when U. S. Gen. William Harney visited San Juan. Americans urged him to dispatch troops. Harney sent 60 men under Capt. George Pickett, later to win Civil War fame. The British sent a fleet with 2,000 men. Pickett warned that whether they "landed fifty or five thousand men ... he would open his fire."

But cooler heads prevailed, and the two forces settled in camps on opposite ends of the island. For 12 years, while awaiting a settlement, their only contest was to see which could serve the other the finest banquets.

In 1872 Emperor William I of Germany, as arbiter, awarded the San Juans to the United States. Today a blockhouse (below) remains at the English Camp; earthworks mark the American Camp. And in the Washington State Historical Society Museum at Tacoma rests the gun Lyman Cutler used to kill Charles Griffin's pig.

MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF





Blizzards trap the Donner party in the Sierras

GEORGE DONNER was 62 years old when he decided to go to California with his brother Jacob and some neighbors from around Springfield, Illinois. He sold his prosperous 240-acre farm, took his tiny wife Tamsen and their five youngest to Independence, and joined a caravan. In the spring of 1846 they rolled west. Just short of South Pass a horseman showed them a letter from a California promoter, Lansford Hastings, urging emigrants to use a new short cut south of Great Salt Lake. The Donner party tried to overtake Hastings but missed him. They decided to tackle the Wasatch Range without a guide.

They moved boulders, dug wagonways along hillsides, chopped through mats of willows. It took 21 days to go 36 miles; six more days to cross the desert. Oxen stampeded; Indians stole horses and mules. Tempers snapped. One man was slain in a quarrel, one secretly murdered, a third left behind when he could not keep up. Charles Stanton, sent ahead to Sutter's Fort, returned with two Indian guides and seven muleloads of food. Not enough: the party was too far behind schedule.

Delayed by a broken axle, the Donner family was last to enter the Sierra Nevada. As the advance party neared the crest, a snowstorm struck. They retreated to an abandoned cabin below a little lake. As new storms roared in, they built crude huts. The Donners, a few miles below, made lean-tos. Snow fell inexorably. "Difficult to get wood," a diarist wrote. Then food gave out. The desperate pioneers ate hides, bark, bones. One man went mad.

Near Christmas five women, ten white men, and Sutter's two Indians set out on snowshoes made of oxbows and hides. Impossible travel! When several died, the survivors ate their flesh. When the Indians collapsed, they were shot and eaten. After 28 days two men and the five women staggered into an Indian camp.

Rescue parties found more traces of cannibalism at the lake, and packed out the pitiful survivors. Nearly half the party of 87 had perished, including George and Tamsen Donner, victims of bad advice, bad judgment, bad luck.

Donner Pass still deals treachery. Snow traps a streamliner for three days in 1952 (right), smothers U. S. Highway 40 (trench in trees). A century earlier 22-foot drifts gripped the Donner party; a monument overlooks their camp site.

uncommon ability. He determined to lead the Saints away from Gentile civilization. Reading the accounts of Frémont and other Western explorers, he chose the region of Great Salt Lake.

Mormons sold homes and furniture, bought oxen, and built wagons. In early 1846 the refugees fled across the ice of the Mississippi.

Young divided his moving throng into "hundreds" and "tens"; he sent advance units to establish ferries and plant crops; he assigned hunters, herders, and artisans to each party. Brass bands lifted spirits. "The angels of God will go with you, even as they went with the children of Israel when Moses led them from the land of Egypt," he promised.

The Saints spent the cold months of 1846-7 at Winter Quarters, near present Omaha, Nebraska, and in camps stretching across Iowa. In April, Young led an advance party to the chosen land. They dammed a creek to water the sun-baked earth, and planted potatoes. By fall 2,000 Mormons were in the valley.

Beset by frosts, crickets, and drought, Young put a bold plan into operation. The Saints, placing themselves fully under church control, began to build a



C. 1877, AMERICAN MUSEUM OF PHOTOGRAPHY

Brigham Young, bold and resolute, tamed a desert, built a religious empire, guided the Mormons with a firm hand, 1844-77. Yet he loved to see his people dance, sing, enjoy plays.



Seagull Monument in Salt Lake City commemorates birds that came "until the heavens were darkened," ate cricket invaders, saved pioneers' crops.



great city designed by the leader and the church's Twelve Apostles. Land and water were apportioned to all as needed. From the East and from Europe came thousands of converts. Some pulled handcarts, Young's answer to the high cost of wagons. He sent settlers throughout the Great Basin to found towns like Ogden and Provo, and proclaimed the huge State of Deseret (Honeybee).

But the creation of the U. S. Territory of Utah rekindled passions. Federal and church officials clashed; Gentiles accused Mormons of abetting Indian massacres; rumors of rebellion flamed. President Buchanan sent an army under Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston, and some 30,000 Mormons fled their homes. Peacemakers stepped in. But not until 1890, when polygamy was abandoned, did friction end.

Today's visitor glimpses the Mormon past in tiny settlements like Toquerville, Utah, or in mighty Salt Lake City. Along with the Temple, Tabernacle, and Capitol, the city displays the gabled Lion House, where some of Young's wives lived, and his Beehive House, restored to 1877 elegance and open to the public. The Pioneer Memorial Museum and a church museum re-create early days. East of the city the Pioneer Monument marks where the Saints first viewed their Zion.



Lofty spires and rugged stone walls mark the trail of the Latter-day Saints

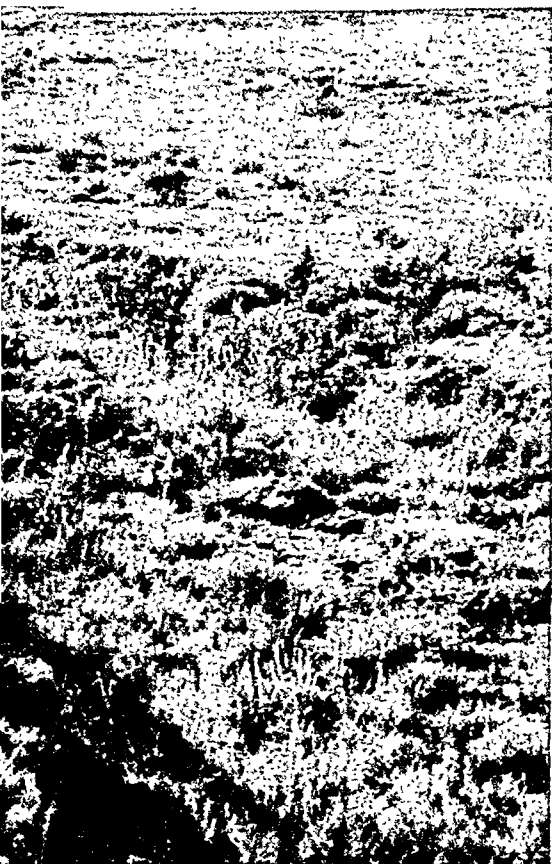
Mormon Temple in Salt Lake City fulfills a dream of Brigham Young (whose statue stands in foreground). Begun in 1853 and finished 40 years later, it dominates Temple Square, focal point of world Mormonism. Left of the Temple, the domed Tabernacle houses a 10,000-pipe organ and the famed Mormon Choir. Pegs and thongs join the roof arches. Superb acoustics let you hear a pin drop.

Mormon fort at Pipe Spring in northern Arizona (top left) guarded a ranch from Indians. The spring was named when "Gunlock Bill" Hamblin, a Mormon scout, camped here and shot the bottom out of a friend's pipe without hitting the sides of the bowl. Saints planted poplars which help shade the national monument.

Mansion House of prophet Joseph Smith welcomes visitors to Nauvoo, Illinois, where the trek began (below). Nearby stand the Smith Homestead and the Brigham Young Home.



NATIONAL PARK SERVICE AND U.S. PHOTOS PETERS, A. OFF. STATE, PALM SPRING, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC, USA



Century-old wagon ruts stretch toward infinity along the Santa Fe Trail near Fort Union, a national monument in New Mexico. For 60 years traders lurched by the fort that guarded the southern junction of the Cimarron and Mountain routes, leaving their mark on the land and its history. Average speed: one mile an hour.

Wagons often traveled four abreast to discourage Indian attacks. But against desert sun and thirst there was no defense. Bits of discarded gear testify to the hardships that plagued the bullwhackers as they opened the Southwest to American trade.

Santa Fe turns out to welcome modern visitors just as it did wagoners of the 1800's. A fiesta reigns in the plaza before the Palace of the Governors, oldest governmental building in the United States. In 1680 some 3,000 Indians drove out the New Mexico settlers. Twelve years later the Spanish returned, and for two and a half centuries Santa Fe has celebrated the reconquest. The Palace houses a museum.

JUSTIN LOCKE AND (ABOVE) MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF





WORLD EVERY NAT VALUE JERAM TEFY DEL A M NE M F NEAR MEX CRYLLST N LITE

Taos Pueblo eyed conquistadores in 1540, greets tourists today. Beehive ovens bake bread.





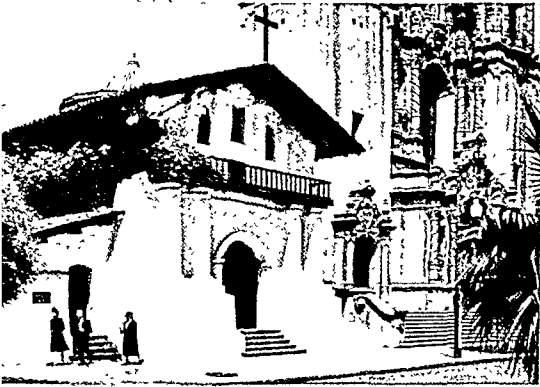
Acoma, believed the nation's oldest continuously inhabited town, dates from A.D. 1200. Spaniards

Rabbit Ear Mounds and Wagon Bed Springs, villages of Las Vegas and San Miguel del Vado were Spanish whispers. Indian pueblos of Taos and Acoma sounded as laconic as their inhabitants. And No Agua (No Water) and Ojo de Vaca (Cow Spring) were as plain and simple as the Mexican settlers.

To home building the Spanish colonists had brought a love of massive walls and shaded patios. But the walls were of Indian adobe, and corner fireplaces were patterned after the practical beehive ovens of the pueblos. Even a mule skinner could tell this intertwining of cultures was no recent thing. Before hitching up his rig for the trip home, he might learn that Santa Fe was a colonial capital in 1610—ten years before the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth. He was sure to mosey over to the Palace of the Governors, just as old, and past San Miguel Church, where prayers had been murmured for two centuries.

The founding of churches had marked Spain's expansion in the New World. Padres and soldiers had combined to explore the wastelands and mountain ranges, and then to subdue, baptize, and train the Indians. They grouped the docile tribes in missions, self-contained communities guided by religious zeal. The missions

"Passed by here the governor Don Juan de Oñate . . . 1605," reads the message carved on El Morro, a national monument in New Mexico. Indians, padres, troopers, teamsters added names to the mesa that shaded a pool.



REDWOOD EMPIRE ASSOCIATION

Mission Dolores



San Luis Rey de Francia



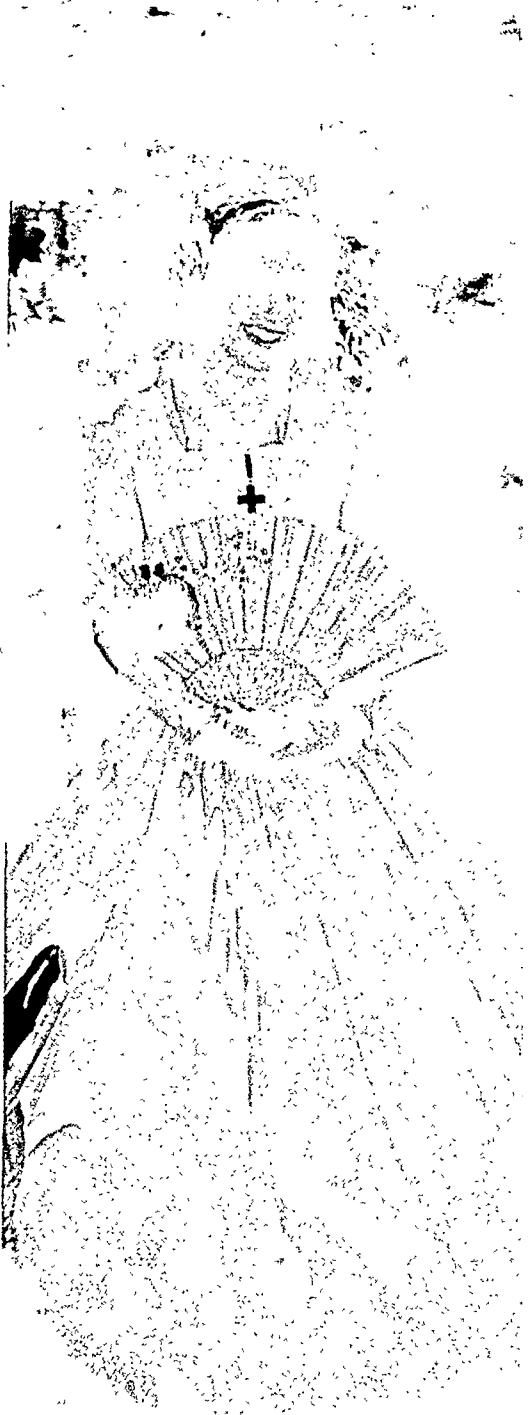
KARL OBERT

San Juan Capistrano

Monterey each June salutes the days when it ruled California. Fiestas were frequent; rancheros and merchants entertained at the drop of a sombrero; horse races, bull-and-bear fights quickened the capital's languorous pulse.

Adobe houses with broad verandas and walled gardens recall its colorful youth under Spanish and Mexican flags. The Old Custom House, a museum, still stands at harborside.

B. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER



THE ALAMO

Texans fight for independence

DAWN, MARCH 6, 1836. The men huddled inside the old mission hear a bugle sound in the darkness . . . then the tramp of thousands of feet and shouts of "Viva Santa Anna!"

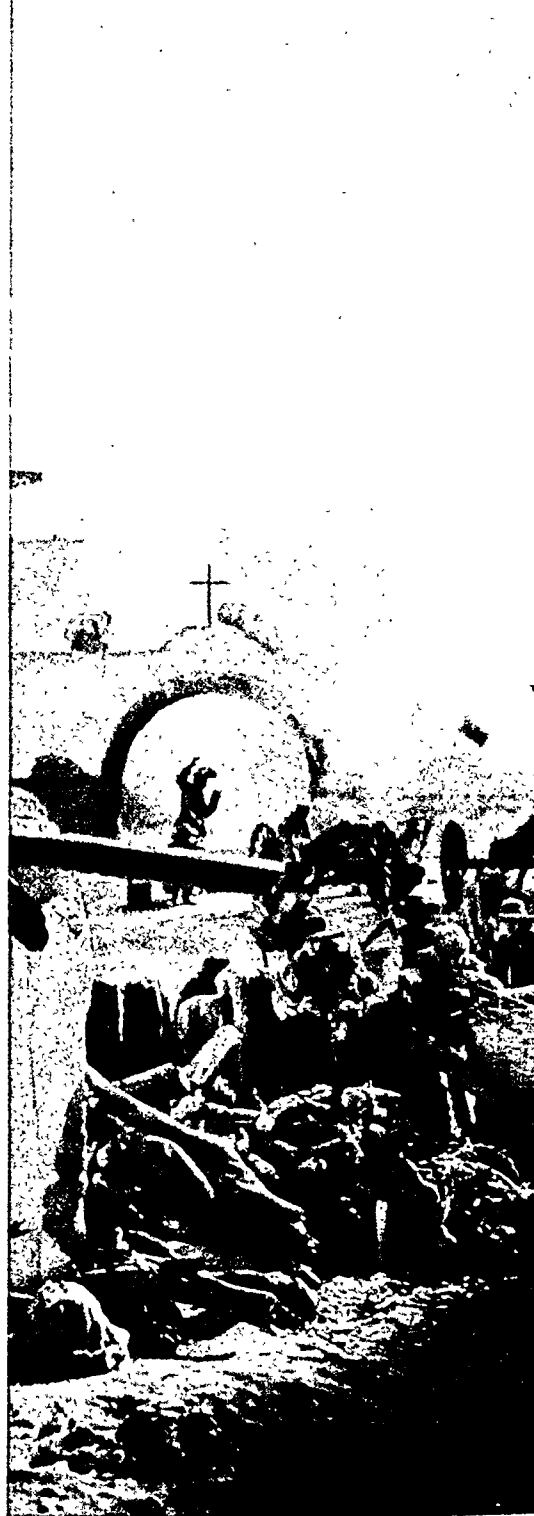
For the 187 Texans and Americans, rubbing sleep from their eyes and reaching for rifles and bowie knives, the moment of truth is at hand.

Twelve days ago these men of the Alamo watched the Mexican army march into San Antonio with all the pageantry of a bullfight: short scarlet jackets, bright blue pants, plumed shakos held erect by shining chin straps. And in the dust—bare feet.

The defenders saw the blood-red banner meaning "no quarter" hoisted on a church in the town, and answered with the blast of a cannon. They heard the Mexicans cheer the arrival of reinforcements, swelling Santa Anna's army to some 4,000.

And yet the tiny garrison stays. Some are still confident. They remember Anahuac, where the Mexican commander politely surrendered without a fight. And San Antonio, where three months ago they fought from rooftops, battered holes in walls, captured the big Mexican garrison.

But the fact is, 187 men can't hold the mission; with its walls and buildings, it sprawls over three acres. Col. William Barret Travis knows this. Looking at the men about him—Davy Crockett, the Texans, the volunteers from the United States—he writes a



Outnumbered 20 to one, Texans blaze away from the barricade, fire cannon atop the church and in the plaza to repel the army of Mexican dictator Santa Anna. On the 8th day 32 men and



RICHARD CATON WOODVILLE, 1848 NATIONAL ACADEMY OF DESIGN

War news from Mexico via the newborn telegraph electrified the nation. The "wonder-wire" hastened troop movements, revolutionized news reporting, sped commerce. By July, 1848, it tied New York with New Orleans.

Nevada, Utah, and parts of New Mexico, Arizona, Colorado, and Wyoming.

Time has not been kind to the buildings that witnessed those stirring events. But today the Alamo still stands, and near Goliad the partly ruined presidio and the restored Mission Espiritu Santo recall the massacre there of 350 Texan prisoners by Santa Anna. In San Antonio is La Villita, a restored village with adobe houses that gives an idea of the old Texas towns. And at Huntsville stand the plain clapboard house where Sam Houston lived and the steamboat-shaped dwelling where he died.

The visitor to the Mexican War battlefields of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma near Brownsville may sense a tragedy beyond the American triumphs. For fellow officers in that war like Grant, Lee, Sherman, Jackson, McClellan, and Jefferson Davis were destined to meet again in a far bloodier struggle—as enemies.



CALIFORNIA DEPARTMENT OF NATURAL RESOURCES

Rebel Californians raise the Bear Flag

GEN. MARIANO VALLEJO sleeps peacefully as the dawn of June 14, 1846, breaks over Sonoma. There's a banging at the door; 30 men stand outside. "Surrender!" they shout.

He invites the leaders in, takes out bottles of wine. What's this about, he asks.

He can guess. Rawboned American traders and settlers have been trickling in for years. They seem to distrust and dislike Mexican rule. And the U. S. government hasn't helped. It keeps trying to buy California. Tension has been such that four years ago Commodore Thomas ap Catesby Jones seized Monterey on a rumor of war. Jones apologized, but then Captain Frémont and his armed explorers began to flit about the territory. And four days ago some Americans stole 200 army horses.

Vallejo refills the glasses, signs the surrender document, rides off a captive. The Americans proclaim a republic, elect William B. Ide president, and hoist a crude flag bearing a star, a grizzly bear, and the words CALIFORNIA REPUBLIC. But war between Mexico and the United States intervenes. In four years California will become the 31st state, its 92,000 people swelling the U. S. population to 30 million.

And General Vallejo? He will return to his Sonoma, become a leading citizen, and leave two handsome homes you can see there today.



"CLAY ADDRESSING THE SENATE ON THE COMPROMISE OF 1850," AFTER A PAINTING BY PETER F. ROTHERMEL, NEW YORK HISTORICAL SOCIETY

The House Divided

Harriet Beecher Stowe's novel, trumpeting the horrors of slavery, roused the North to an old cause

"So this is the little woman who made the big war," said Lincoln on meeting Uncle Tom's creator. Her book sold 10,000 copies in its first week and persuaded millions that slavery must end.

Yet shortly before this literary bomb exploded, New England's Daniel Webster had lashed out at abolitionists: "I think their operations for the last twenty years have produced nothing good or valuable." Many in the North agreed. Bostonians threatened William Lloyd Garrison, the incendiary of abolition who considered the Constitution "a Covenant with Death" and publicly burned it. And an Illinois mob murdered Elijah Lovejoy as he tried to save his antislavery press.

Uncle Tom appeared in 1851 with brutal Simon Legree, and Eliza fleeing across the ice as bloodhounds bayed. And all the North seethed.

135,000 SETS, 270,000 VOLUMES SOLD.

UNCLE TOM'S CABIN



FOR SALE HERE.

AN EDITION FOR THE MILLION, COMPLETE IN 1 Vol, PRICE 37 1/2 CENTS.
 " " IN GERMAN, IN 1 Vol, PRICE 50 CENTS.
 " " IN 2 Vols, CLOTH, 6 PLATES, PRICE \$1.50.
 SUPERB ILLUSTRATED EDITION, IN 1 Vol, WITH 153 ENGRAVINGS,
 PRICES FROM \$2.50 TO \$5.00.

The Greatest Book of the Age.

NEW YORK HISTORICAL SOCIETY

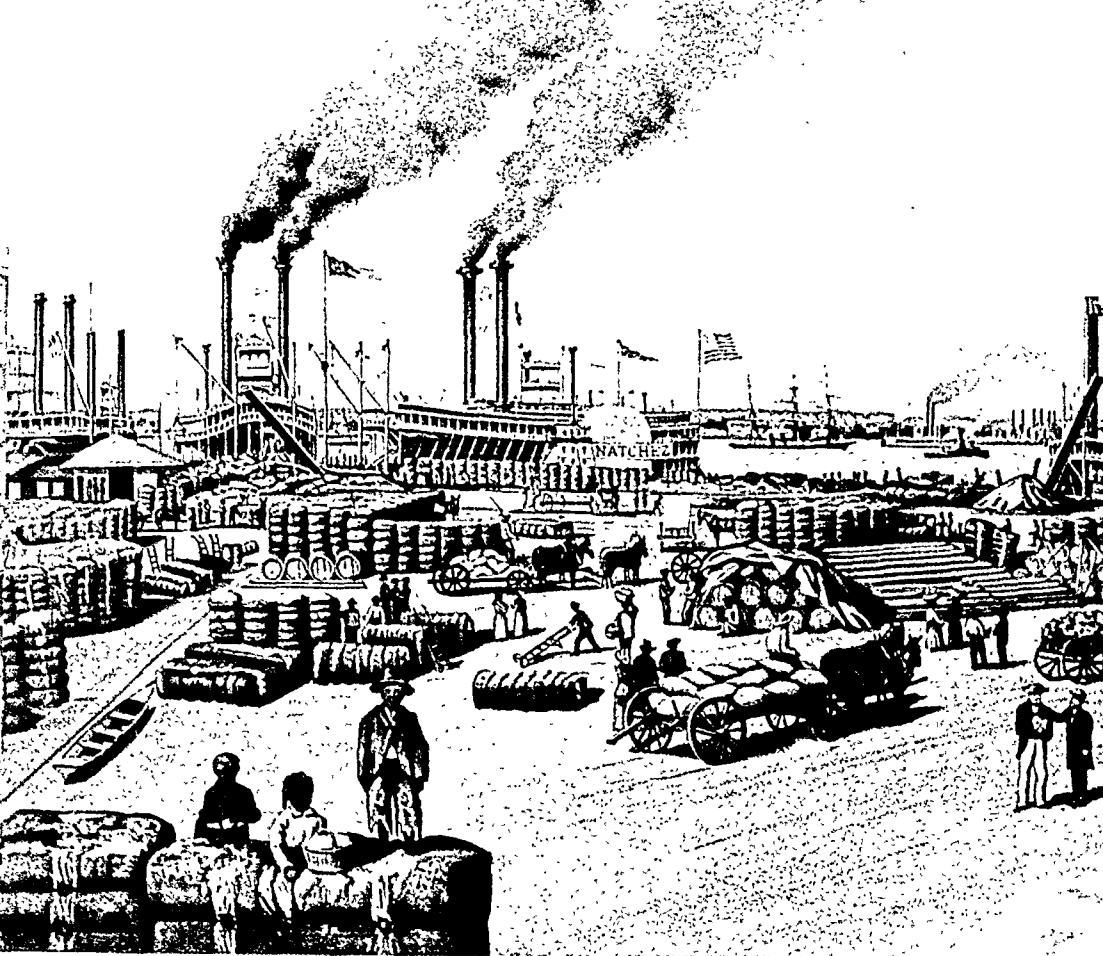


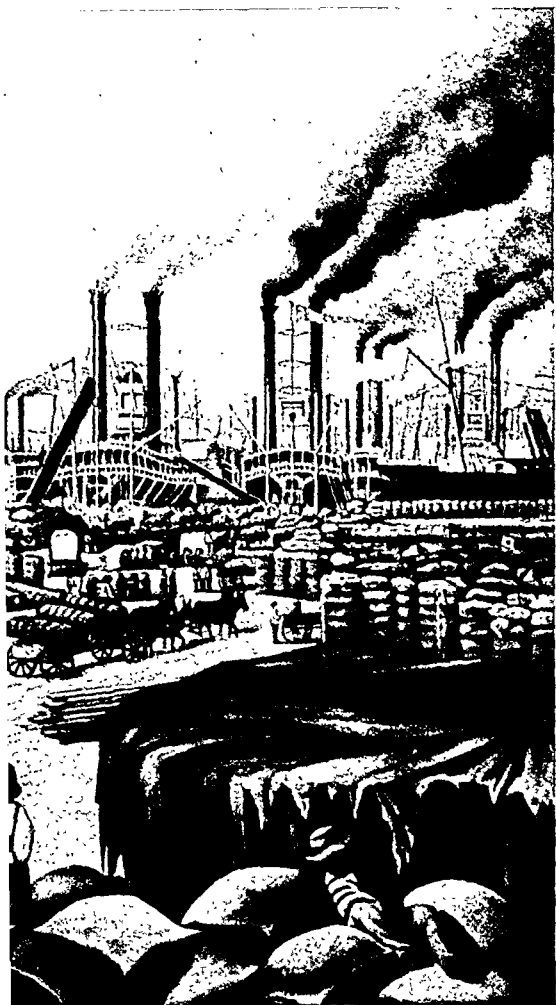
KEITH MARTIN

Thoreau preached man's simple dignity, found haven at Concord's Walden Pond.



Emerson built his Concord home in 1820, near literary neighbors Hawthorne, Thoreau, Alcott.





THE SOUTH

Where cotton reigns supreme

PROUD, INFLEXIBLE, the South scorned Mrs. Stowe as one who "hunts up crimes as beagles hunt their prey." The land had changed since 1794 when its most honored son, George Washington, noted: "Were it not then, that I am principled against selling negroes, as you would do cattle... I would not, in twelve months... be possessed of one, as a slave." Even then Eli Whitney had invented his machine.

The cotton gin combed seeds from the short-staple cotton that grew in the deep South like a weed. Suddenly mills in the North and in England clamored for cotton. Planters put it in Georgia's clay and built white-pillared mansions on its profits, then seeking fresh soil moved to Alabama's prairie loam and Mississippi's flatlands. They produced fewer than 150,000 bales in 1815, nearly five million in 1860.

Slavery, waning in 1790, became essential for this cotton kingdom. Though few whites owned slaves, most excused the institution: "In the three million bags of cotton the slave-labor annually throws on the world... we are doing more to advance civilization... than all the canting philanthropists of New and Old England will do in centuries." Preachers found texts that sanctified and dignified slavery. Why, even children were taught to be considerate of slaves, but who cared for the "wage slave" of the North?

So some 3,500,000 slaves (generally treated much better than Uncle Tom) hummed spirituals after working the rich white fields. And wharves at New Orleans groaned under the South's baled treasure. And the planter turned angrily away from the abolitionist. Not worth a thought, Sir!



Natchez—symbol of ante bellum elegance

PERCHED ON A BLUFF overlooking the Mississippi River, Natchez sweeps the modern visitor back to days when cotton was king and a planter guarded his honor and his credit with equal attention.

You notice the land first. Loamy, buff-colored soil; slender pines and massive oaks bearded with moss; crimson splashes of azalea and camellia; and the broad river glimmering like a belt of bronze as the sun sets beyond the darkly wooded lowlands to the west.

In this lush Mississippi setting old mansions stand like sentinels of the past, each revealing something of life in the Old South. Massive D'Evereux, square and columned like a Greek temple, reflects the classical taste of the planter. Dunleith is circled by galleries, symbols of hospitality that seem to say, "Come sit a spell." Stanton Hall with its imported marble mantels, gold-leaf mirrors, and bronze chandeliers exudes the elegance of the cotton aristocracy.

You are welcomed to these and more than a score of other homes during spring Pilgrimage Month in Natchez. Hostesses, their voices as soft as a breeze from the river, don silk and brocade dresses of the mid-1800's for the occasion. It is not difficult to envision them in the roles of their great-great-grandmothers: welcoming guests who clatter up to the "big house" in fine carriages with liveried outriders, ushering laughing groups down the candle-lit great hall, presiding over a long table heaped with turkey, ham, strawberries, and bottles of champagne.

PLANTATION LIFE seemed specially made for young women. Visiting the bedrooms of these old houses, with their canopied beds and lacy curtains, one can imagine pretty Rebecca Mandeville sitting down to chronicle in her diary the spring days of 1848. "*March 2*: After dinner, trained my Brazilla vine up to the gallery . . . will now read a chapter in the Bible and then repose. *March 13*: I took Sissy and went on the bluff—put 2 or 3 ginger nuts in my bag first and eat them up there—dreadfully plebian! *April 12*: I don't think I ever passed a pleasanter evening—the party was composed of eight of us young girls and about as many gentlemen all in good spirits and ready for enjoyment—had two tableaux, scenes from Ivanhoe. *May 1*: Sewed this morning and began to read Hyperion. . . ."

But Rebecca may have found a wife's duties less serene. A planter often expected his spouse to rise with the sun, supervise the cooking, washing, and weaving, and teach, counsel, and nurse the slaves.

The master of the house relished his comforts but never forgot the cotton that made it possible. He'd fret at a dry spell or a dip in the London market, hum cheerily when he could boast of his fields: "No crop at all to compare with it, from half leg to waist high bolled & formed as well as can be." His pride and his pleasure were fast horses, politics, and a post in the Natchez Fencibles or Guards. Question him on these and you might be invited across the river for a duel. Refuse and the morning paper might read: "To the Public. I hereby denounce N. E. Turner a base poltroon and an arrant Coward . . . when yesterday a friend

Columned Melrose preserves the dignity and charm of the Old South. Reared in the 1840's of brick made by slaves, it is one of 30 homes on display each March in Natchez, Mississippi. Costumed hostesses are often descendants of first owners.

tion of an armory. The Chesapeake and Ohio Canal arrived and also the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad. A bridge spanned the Potomac. By the 1850's the busy little town had nearly 1,800 inhabitants, many working in the United States Rifle Factory.

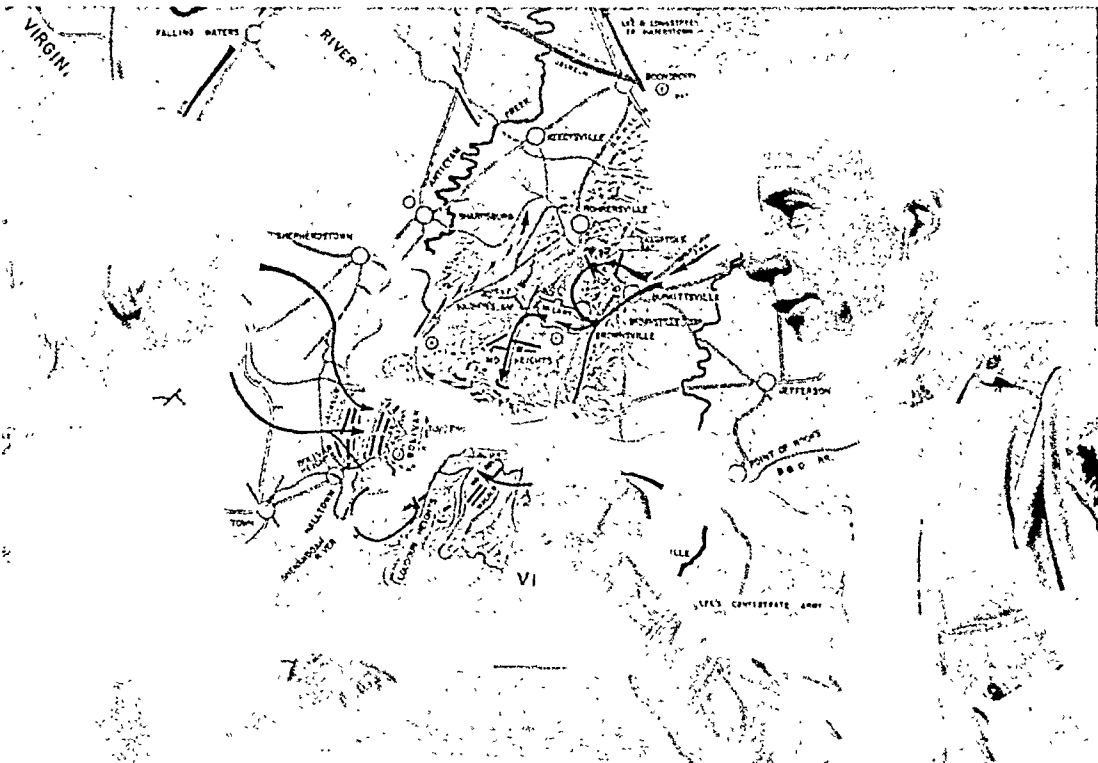
Probably few of those townsfolk had ever heard of Osawatomie Brown, though he was known and feared in the Kansas-Missouri border country and carried a \$250 price on his head for freeing slaves. Certainly no one had cause to suspect a "land and cattle buyer" who came unobtrusively to the Ferry in the summer of 1859.

He called himself Isaac Smith, and he rented the Kennedy Farm across the river in Maryland. Other strangers joined him there, hiding in the attic during daylight. Neighbors remarked on the number of shirts hanging from the clothesline — so many for one family. But no one paid heed, though the thing that John Brown and his followers were to do at Harpers Ferry would flicker over the nation like heat lightning before a distant storm.

On the night of October 16, 1859, Brown led 18 men across the covered wooden railroad and wagon bridge into the village. They carried guns, pikes, a sledge hammer, and a crowbar. They captured the bridge, broke into the federal armory, entered the rifle works, and sent a party toward Charles Town, now in West Virginia, to seize hostages and recruit slaves. This detachment came back with Col. Lewis Washington, George Washington's great-grandnephew, as prisoner. The first person fatally wounded by the raiders was the baggage master at the station, a free Negro who never heard the order to halt. An ironic casualty.

Brown's plans fell apart. The slaves had no heart for rebellion. Word of the raid spread, bringing militia and organized civilians into action. The outnumbered raiders retreated with some hostages into a little brick fire-engine house in the armory compound, knocked rifle ports through the walls, and waited.

Through that day and into the night shots echoed from the mountainsides. The militiamen (among them John Wilkes Booth, destined to assassinate Lincoln)



avoided volunteering for any frontal charge. The mayor was shot dead for venturing too close. Then, near midnight, a detachment of U. S. Marines arrived by train from Washington. In charge was Col. Robert E. Lee. At dawn his aide, Lt. J. E. B. Stuart, approached the firehouse under a flag of truce to seek its surrender.

The door opened a crack and "Isaac Smith" poked his head out to parley. With a shock Stuart recognized old Osawatimie Brown, bearded now, but still the same fierce-eyed fighter Stuart had run across while on cavalry duty in Kansas. Brown would not agree to Lee's terms. The door closed. Stuart stepped aside and waved his cap. Marines battered at the door with sledges, then rammed it with a heavy



Marines smash down the firehouse door to capture five raiders. Ten were killed, as well as four townspeople and a marine. Thus did old Osawatimie Brown make good his prediction: "We've had enough talk about 'bleeding Kansas.' I will make a bloody spot at another point to be talked about." Awaiting execution, Brown welcomed martyrdom. "I cannot now better serve the cause I love . . . than to die for it." He also requested no attendants save "ragged, bareheaded & barefooted Slave boys & Girls." So grew the legend that he bent to kiss an infant slave while on his way to the gallows.

ABOVE: "SKETCH MADE ON THE SPOT BY OUR SPECIAL ARTIST," FRANK LESLIE'S ILLUSTRATED NEWSPAPER, OCTOBER 29, 1859, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

RIGHT: "THE LAST MOMENTS OF JOHN BROWN" BY THOMAS HOVENDEN, METROPOLITAN MUSEUM OF ART



FORT SUMTER

Southern guns blast the old flag

LIVE OAKS ARCH above the asphalt lane that leads to Fort Johnson, a point jutting into Charleston Harbor, South Carolina. From it you can see Fort Sumter rising on its sand bar a mile away, flat and round like a button on the vest of the bay.

Here stood Capt. George S. James, watch in hand, in the early morning of April 12, 1861. At exactly 4:30 he glanced at the taut faces around him, then pulled the lanyard of a ten-inch mortar.

Inside Fort Sumter, Sgt. James Chester, Co. E, 1st Artillery, heard a dull roar roll in awesome echo across the water and spotted the burning fuse of the mortar shell arching among the stars. Spiraling downward, building speed, the shell burst right over the fort—"a capital shot," noted Chester. Then on all sides guns opened fire. Telegraph keys clicked out the dreadful tidings:

"Charleston, April 12—the ball has been opened at last and the war is inaugurated."

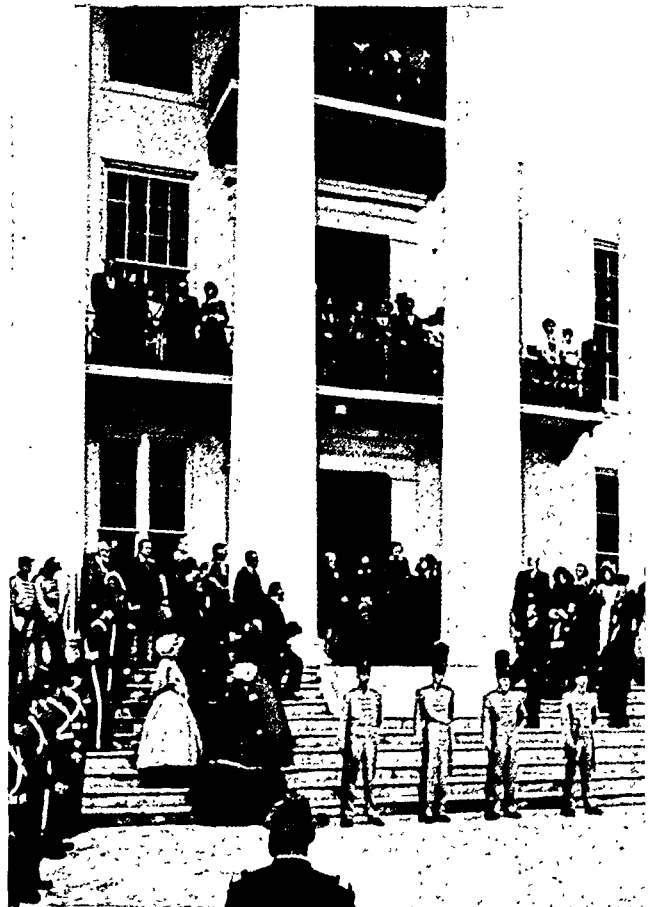
In a sense, the first shot of the Civil War took decades to fire. Yet the last months of the 33-state Union, pinned together by compromise, saw events whirling fast, picking up momentum. And their vortex was South Carolina.

Pretending not to hear the growing talk of secession in 1860, the federal government was placating the South yet strengthening coastal forts. On November 20 Maj. Robert Anderson, a Southerner but loyal to the old flag, took command of Charleston's forts: Moultrie, Sumter, and Castle Pinckney. He set up headquarters at Moultrie;

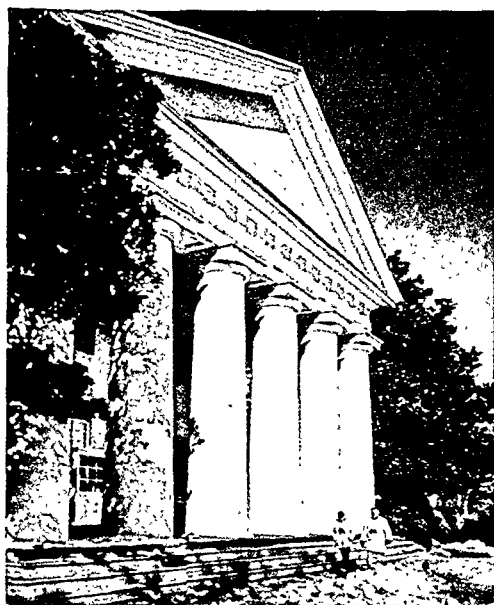
First shot of the Civil War roused sleeping Charleston and sent a thrill through the nation. "The Rubicon was passed," wrote a Rebel officer. One lady, hearing the cannonade, "sprang out of bed and on my knees, prostrate, I prayed as I never prayed before." Her neighbors jammed the housetops. Sumter's riddled flag with its 33 pre-secession stars was hoisted at war's end by the same officer who had struck it four years before.

HARPER'S WEEKLY, MAY 4, 1861, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
ABOVE, DIORAMA AT FORT SUMTER NATIONAL MONUMENT





*Landmarks of
the Confederacy*

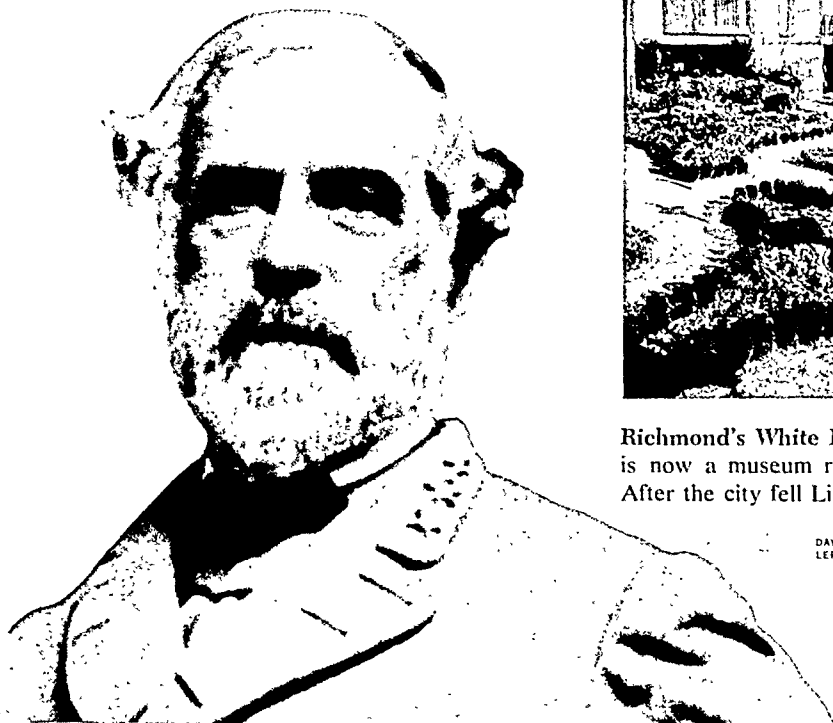


DEEP SOUTH SPECIALTIES TOP: MATHEW B. BRADY, C. 1860; NATIONAL ARCHIVES (LEFT), AND TOMMY GILES, RIGHT; ARLINGTON, NOW CUSTIS-LEE MANSION, THE ROBERT E. LEE MEMORIAL; DAVID S. BOYER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF



Robert E. Lee and Jefferson Davis led the Confederate States of America during its four tragic years. Davis took oath as president February 18, 1861, at the State House in Montgomery, Alabama, in the ceremony reenacted at left. When Virginia joined the C.S.A. after Sumter's fall, Richmond became the capital. Imprisoned at war's end, Davis finally settled at Beauvoir (far left) near Biloxi, Mississippi, where he wrote his memoirs.

Lee was born at massive Stratford (above) near the Virginia birthplace of his idol Washington. He married Martha Washington's great-granddaughter, acquiring Arlington (lower left), her home farther up the Potomac. Here he made his fateful decision: Virginia came first.



Richmond's White House of the Confederacy is now a museum rich with Rebel memories. After the city fell Lincoln slept in Davis's bed.

DAVID S. BOYER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF
LEFT: J. DANNERSON, 1864, COOK COLLECTION,
VALENTINE MUSEUM, RICHMOND

Flocking to the colors

EXULTANTLY the South cheered Sumter's surrender, while a growl of rage echoed through the North. No one received the news more calmly than Abraham Lincoln. On April 14, "Battle Sunday," he called for 75,000 state militia to serve the nation three months. The Confederacy, already training militia, called for more. North and South, farm boys and city lads jammed the recruiting stations while girls waved and local companies drilled on the town green. Many a proud Yankee posed in his dapper uniform—often of militia gray. Many a group of fire-eating "Southrons" showed off their fine bright clothes—many regiments wore blue—and bragged of what they would do with their pistols and long knives if only the war didn't end before they got into it. New Orleans applauded its Creole Guard

that marched smartly to orders in French. New York mustered its firemen to form a regiment of Zouaves, a vastly popular designation for well-drilled men who wore baggy red pants and red fezzes. Bands blared—"Dixie" was popular in the North as well as South—and flags snapped and a New England youth bragged that he had kissed every girl in town after enlisting. Men marched off to camp and small boys strutted behind. This was the life! These were the brave, wonderful days of youth.



MATHEW B. BRADY, 1861,
LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
RIGHT, "PITCHING QUODITS"

BY WINSLOW HOMER, 1862,
FOGG MUSEUM OF ART
ABOVE, 1861, COOK COLLECTION,
VALENTINE MUSEUM, RICHMOND



The Great American War

IN THE STEAMING MID-JULY of 1861 the Northern army marched eagerly off to fight. Three months had passed since the bombardment of Fort Sumter, and the great majority of Northerners believed that one great pitched battle would end the rebellion and restore the Union. The quicker it was fought the better. Not a day went by without Horace Greeley's *New York Tribune* screaming the battle cry of the North's embittered millions from the head of its editorial columns: "Forward to Richmond! Forward to Richmond! The Rebel Congress must not be allowed to meet there on the 20th of July! BY THAT DATE THE PLACE MUST BE HELD BY THE NATIONAL ARMY!"

General in chief Winfield Scott, whose career stretched back to Lundy's Lane in the War of 1812, had opposed any headlong action. He knew that young armies are like young lovers: more prone to court trouble than avoid it. And this army, knocked together from state militiamen who had answered Lincoln's call for troops, was very young and gay and carefree. Moreover, Scott thought the Mississippi Valley, not Virginia, should be the arena for crushing the South. So he argued for delay to prepare and mass his forces.

Pacing the floor of the White House in a pair of old carpet slippers, Abraham



"THE ARMY OF THE POTOMAC—A SHARP-SHOOTER ON PICKET DUTY" BY WINSLOW HOMER, 1862, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

Lincoln had to face facts. Either the North struck a blow soon or he forfeited popular confidence. So in late June the cabinet met, overruled Scott, and decided on a campaign against Confederate forces concentrating at Manassas Junction in Virginia, 25 miles west of Washington. Scott must have known that the politicians would carry the day; he was all ready with a plan that had been worked out by one of his generals, Irvin McDowell.

Aged 42, McDowell had spent his adult life in the Regular Army. Shrewd, conscientious, and experienced, he had drawn up a sound scheme. He pointed out, correctly, that the key to any successful Federal movement on Manassas must rest in bottling up a second Confederate force that held Harpers Ferry, at the foot of Virginia's vital Shenandoah Valley. Scott and the cabinet agreed with McDowell. So Gen. Robert Patterson, a gallant 69-year-old veteran of the Mexican War, was sent to take command of some Union troops in Pennsylvania, attack Harpers Ferry, drive the Rebels up the Shenandoah Valley, and keep them too busy to help their friends over at Manassas.

Patterson started well. But he was old and soon lost steam. On July 15 he was 12 miles north of Winchester, Virginia, where the Confederates waited for him under the command of an able and experienced officer, Gen. Joseph E. Johnston.

Next day McDowell ordered his army out of Washington. So many Southern

spies riddled the capital that Confederate General Beauregard, the cocky little Creole who had emerged as "Hero of Sumter," knew as much about Union troop movements as did McDowell himself. One lady who lived within a stone's throw of the White House already had written in cipher, "Order issued for McDowell to march upon Manassas tonight," and sent the message southward by courier even as the streets echoed to the tramp of Federal troops.

This bit of treason really was only of academic interest. All Washington erupted in holiday spirit, boisterously proclaiming that within a few days, perhaps hours, would come the smashing triumph that would end the war. Not wishing to miss the grand spectacle, politicians and civilians packed luncheon hampers, streamed out of the capital in hired carriages, chatted gaily as they picnicked along the way, and helped to clog the roads over which McDowell attempted to march his army.

FEW CONFLICTS have been bloodier than the Great American War. None, certainly, had a more ridiculous beginning. With rare exception the Federal troops leaving Washington that dusty July 16 were so inexperienced in warfare that before Sumter they had never seen a real soldier in uniform. In many ways their long column resembled a circus parade. Zouaves trudged along in their bright red bloomerlike trousers. One regiment sported the plumed hats of Italian *bersaglieri*. Many men had drilled with nothing more lethal than broomsticks until rifles could be issued. Most thought of battle in terms of a barroom brawl—too often they substituted braggadocio for the harsh discipline of genuine soldiers.

A relatively obscure, redheaded colonel named William Tecumseh Sherman despaired at his inability to keep his men from "straggling for water, blackberries, or anything on the way they fancied." Lt. George W. Bicknell of the 5th Maine was more sympathetic. He watched his comrades falling by the roadside, some "sunstruck," some "wind-broken," some crying with thirst. And when a brook flowed across the road he remembered later "the avidity with which our boys would drink of that water, in hundreds of cases using their shoes as dippers, horses and men side by side, the water thickened and yellow with dirt."

Scouts brought Beauregard intelligence of how the Federal march left the roads "strewed with blankets, haversacks, coats, thrown aside by the almost exhausted soldiers." But Beauregard took scant comfort from such reports. His own troops, spread out along a stream called Bull Run, were just as raw. "Old Bory" was plagued by dozens of worries. Most important: could Johnston's force from the Valley make it to Manassas in time to save him from catastrophe?

General Johnston himself barely reached Manassas ahead of McDowell's army. Back in the Shenandoah old Patterson's advance had come to a halt—nothing for the South to fear there. But here? Johnston found Beauregard devising a whole series of plans for crushing the Union force before it could strike. He would attack on Sunday morning, July 21. He would smite McDowell left and rear. He would crumple the invader and send him reeling from Virginia's sacred soil.

But on Sunday morning, two hours before Beauregard's assault was scheduled to begin, the Federal army hit hard across Bull Run. And that wasn't all. McDowell

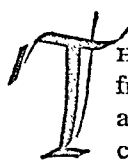
was inconsiderate enough to make this opening play a mere feint. His main blow was a thunderous full-scale attack on the Confederate left flank. It was the defender, not the invader, who started to crumple, Southern boys spinning away from the front on the verge of rout.

Colonel Sherman, a Mexican War veteran who never before had been in battle, was aghast at the sounds and sights around him: cannon balls crashing through trees and maiming human beings; the "terrible scare" of a Negro caught between the lines; "the fear lest we should be fired on by our own men." Lieutenant Bicknell was exhilarated by the shouts from the wounded as his 5th Maine hurried forward: "Go in, boys, the Johnnies are running."

Beauregard was in a fix and knew it. His troops were tumbling away from the driving Federals, scattering across the Warrenton Turnpike (today's U. S. Route 29-211), passing the Stone Bridge, and ducking through a shallow ravine beside the slope of Henry House Hill. But along that height stood a brigade commanded by Gen. Thomas J. Jackson, up to now physics teacher at Virginia Military Institute. He was trying to stem the rout while thunderous confusion filled the smoky air—more than 2,000 men "shouting each some suggestion to his neighbor, their voices mingling with the noise of the shells hurtling through the trees overhead, and all word of command drowned in the . . . uproar."

At this moment Confederate General Bee achieved immortality by crying, "Look at Jackson's brigade! It stands there like a stone wall! Rally behind the Virginians!" Beauregard ordered the colors advanced 40 yards, the men rallied, and the panic ebbed.

Still, as the afternoon wore on, the Union rolled ahead, its soldiers fighting without much style but with a savagery surprising in green recruits. McDowell believed he had won the battle. And Jefferson Davis, rattling up from Richmond in a special train to witness the action, was equally convinced that the South had lost it. Dejected Rebels crowding around the President's car offered no solace.

HEN, AT MIDAFTERNOON on that blazing day, Johnston's Confederates fresh from the Valley tumbled off the railroad cars and came howling like a tornado from a wood on the Federal right flank. Beauregard exulted. The charge was made "with such keeping and dash" that the Yankees were swept away in disorder. Sudden vignettes of disaster etched themselves on the mind of one New Yorker as the Union army fell apart: "Here a man, grasping his musket firmly in his hand, stone dead; several with distorted features, and all of them horribly dirty. Many were terribly wounded, some with legs shot off; others with arms gone, all of them, in fact, so badly wounded that they could not drag themselves away; many of the wretches were slowly bleeding to death, with no one to do anything for them."

Only moments before, McDowell, handsome and high-spirited in full uniform and white gloves, had jauntily waved his boys up a hillside. Now in dismay he watched a retreat that "soon degenerated into disorder, for which there was no remedy." Toward midnight the first shocked witnesses to the Union disaster stumbled into Washington. Lincoln, reclining on a couch in the Cabinet Room in the

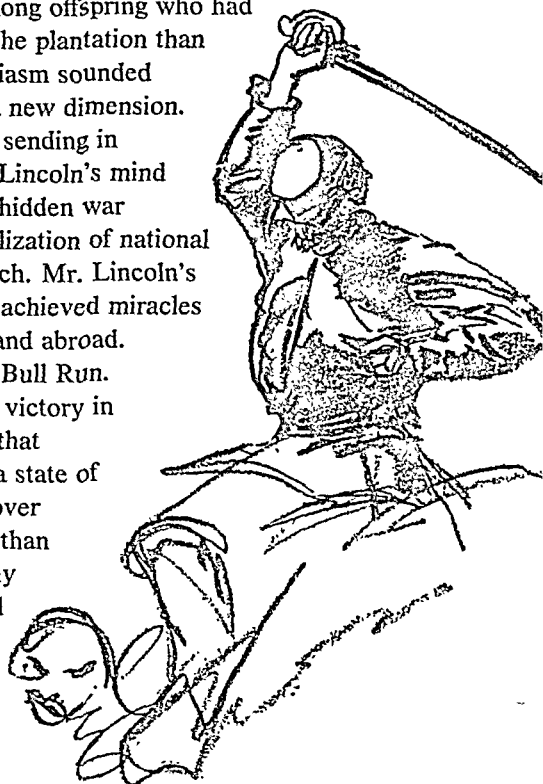
White House, heard the grim stories and wondered if the Rebels were pursuing his disorganized army. By noon of the next day it became clear that they weren't, and Lincoln cheered up.

With eloquent simplicity Bavarian-born Col. Louis Blenker of the 8th New York, testifying before the Committee on the Conduct of the War, explained why he did not think it was "a blame for anybody to lose that battle." Said Blenker: "It was a panic, all at once," adding, with an apology for his poor English, "That is strange music—the bullet—and a strange feeling to be killed." Strange music too for both North and South were the casualty figures for First Bull Run or First Manassas: more than 4,500 young Americans dead, missing, or horribly wounded.

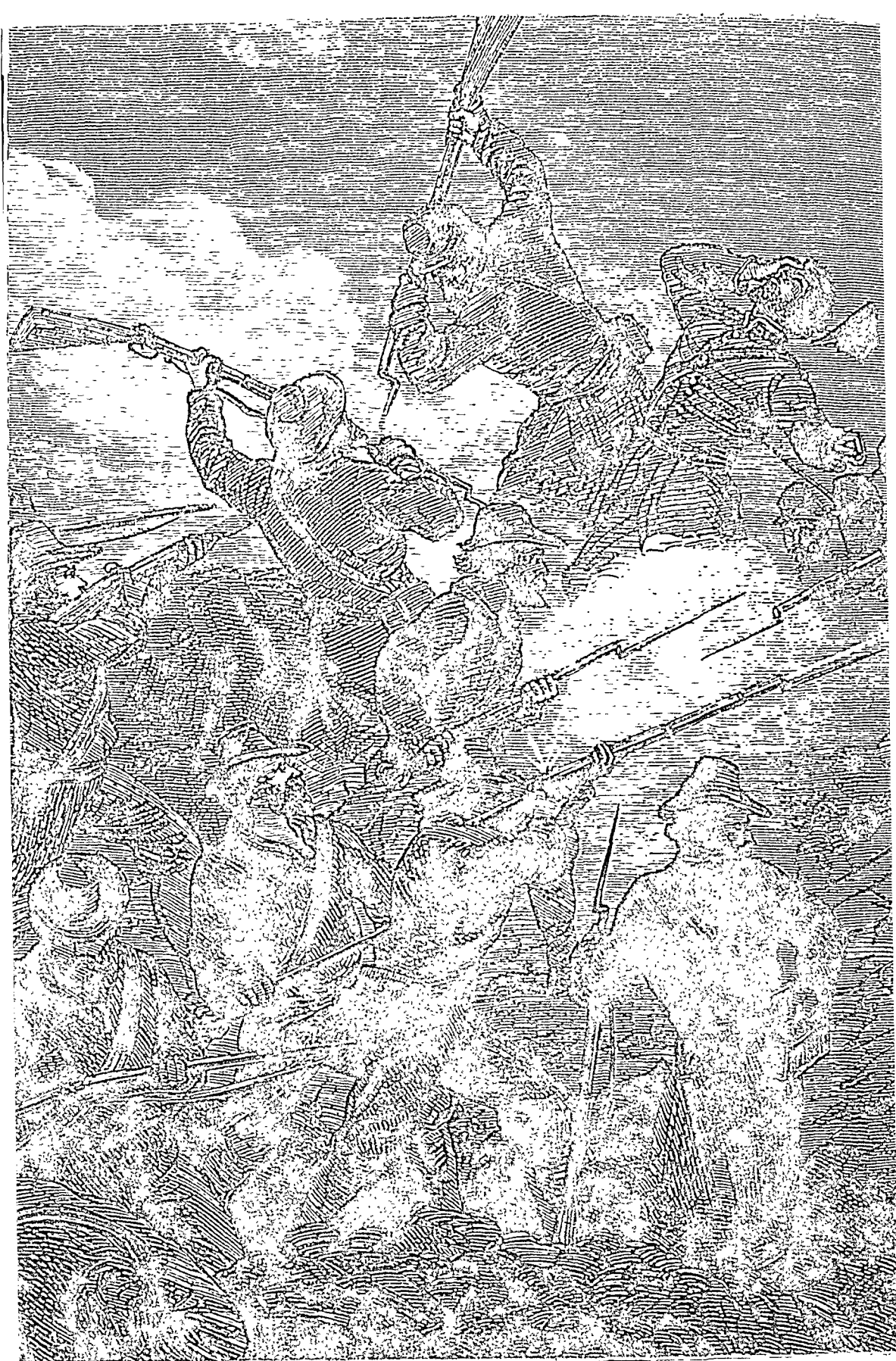
EVERYWHERE IN THE NORTH were portents that defeat had strengthened the people's will to fight secession. Gone was the holiday mood, replaced by determination to raise a trained, efficient army capable of winning battles. President Lincoln welcomed the change, for he felt that this "People's contest" must be won in the nation's mind and heart as well as on the battlefield. Within a few months of Bull Run a "hidden war" was smoldering. In New York City on February 21, 1862, a slave runner from Maine, Nathaniel Gordon, became the first and only American to hang for this crime. That same month Edward Lillie Pierce, a treasury agent sent to save 2,500,000 pounds of cotton captured in South Carolina, made a social experiment to see if Negroes could be "fitted for useful citizenship." Pierce wanted doctors, nurses, teachers, and social service workers, and got them, financed by private subscriptions. He was exhilarated by the speed with which Negro children learned; he admitted the grave problems that existed among offspring who had been raised to think they belonged more to the plantation than to their families. In this age, Pierce's enthusiasm sounded a fresh note, drew a concept of freedom in a new dimension.

Gordon dangling from the gallows, Pierce sending in rapturous reports on his experiment, and in Lincoln's mind words taking shape that would organize the hidden war that America was fighting—here was a mobilization of national purpose that the Confederacy could not match. Mr. Lincoln's Emancipation Proclamation, issued in 1863, achieved miracles as a tool of psychological warfare, at home and abroad.

The visible war, too, changed vastly after Bull Run. Gen. George B. McClellan had won a small victory in the mountains of western Virginia, a region that seceded from the Confederacy and became a state of the Union in 1863. After Bull Run he took over Union troops in Washington: "rather a mob than an army." McClellan saw to it that this Army of the Potomac was supplied, organized, and trained. Under this general, green troops were taught military discipline, whisky



UNION CAVALRYMAN IN ACTION,
SKETCHED BY WINSLOW HOMER, 1863, COOPER UNION MUSEUM





was prohibited in camp, and a provost marshal's department was created to end the rampant desertions and straggling. What in late July had been "a mere collection of regiments cowering on the banks of the Potomac," by autumn had been forged into a fighting force that began to acquire dignity, confidence, and military know-how.

Whatever critics say of "Little Mac"—that he never quite dared use this superb machine of his—he was one Northern general who understood that complex modern war could only be won by tending strictly to business, not by romantic skylarking.

THE GREAT AMERICAN WAR was unlike any the world had ever seen. As the months of tragic conflict ground on, farm boys and city clerks, fur trappers and waterfront bums, steamboat deck hands and sharecroppers learned to live with incredible realities.

They marched off to Manassas Junction filled with romantic notions of glory. Many thought a battle would be some sort of knightly tournament between brothers. That idea breathed its last when Pickett charged at Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.

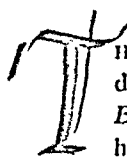
It took time to grasp that the Great American War was thoroughly and irresistibly *American*. It was as proud as the Southern planter, as inventive as the Yankee trader, as earth-bound as the Western frontiersman, as contemptuous of life at times as a Comanche on a raid. Generals grew accustomed to balloons spying out positions, to reporters snooping, to photographers lugging wagonloads of equipment over cluttered roads, to civilian entertainers roaming the camps, and to hometown politicians bargaining for future votes with barrels of whisky. They heard doctors and nurses protesting about

Vicious infighting was caught by British correspondent Frank Vizetelly. Clumsy photography could not yet replace action sketches.

slovenly camp kitchens and "death in the frying pan." They watched sutlers and cotton speculators vying with opportunistic fellow officers for quick profits and they saw the sawdust-filled soles of their soldiers' boots melt away as the men sloshed over muddy roads.

Soldiers grew accustomed to new weapons—rifled field guns, accurate at three miles; the repeating rifle, introduced late in the war, that shot as fast as a man could work the lever. They knew warfare was changing when they found themselves instinctively digging in whenever an advance slowed, when they lived for weeks in the gluey mud of trenches. Sailors knew it in that single battle between the ironclad *Monitor* and *Merrimac* when they hammered at each other with heavy turret guns and thus blew the world's wooden navies into oblivion.

Modern war rose like a phoenix from the ashes of Vicksburg. Its gospel: not just soldiers, but people in factories, on farms, people anywhere doing anything that sustained a hostile army—these are the enemy. And William Tecumseh Sherman, the colonel so shocked by bloodshed on the day of Bull Run, became the minister of this new, godless religion, to "make old and young, rich and poor, feel the hard hand of war." The terrible violence of those distant years stirred a prophecy from Henry Adams: "Some day science may have the existence of mankind in its power, and the human race commit suicide by blowing up the world."

HE NORTH began to change its attitude after Bull Run. The South was defeated by its success. Edward A. Pollard, editor of the *Richmond Examiner*, saw in the Southern victory "the greatest misfortune that could have befallen the Confederacy." Shocked, Pollard watched politicians "plotting for the Presidential succession" and states bickering over the site of the Confederate capital, "which they could not understand was yet imperiled by war."

Robert E. Lee, who had turned down command of the Union army and accepted that of Virginia's forces, believed the war could last ten years. He felt that Southerners must be taught to be "less boastful, less selfish, and more devoted to right and justice to all the world." It had galled Lee to sit in Richmond, a headquarters general, while fighting raged at Manassas. Later he led a force in western Virginia and failed miserably—but the moment was coming when he would step into history and legend, a remarkable figure in both.

The more representative men of the modern warfare came out of the West, and in one of them the North finally found its great general, Ulysses S. Grant. He was no borrowed martial image, no "Napoleon in Blue" like McClellan; Grant was a product of time and place—"the uncommon common man."

The war that Lee and Grant fought would be remembered by many names, but none would strike closer to the truth than the occasional reference to it as "Mr. Lincoln's War." It had touched the world, revitalized human aspiration, and won—what? For the nation, for the world there could be only one answer, spoken by Mr. Lincoln upon a gentle hillside at Gettysburg: . . . *that government of the people, by the people, for the people, shall not perish from the earth.*

Stonewall Jackson, guns on his right, still grimly awaits a Yankee attack on vital Henry House Hill back of Bull Run. Clover carpets meadows once torn and bloody at Manassas National Battlefield Park in Virginia.

like a gray wraith, only to turn up "red with the dust of three Virginia counties" at Lee's headquarters on the Peninsula. Plans were laid. It was June 25, high time for Lee's newly named Army of Northern Virginia to break McClellan's grip on Richmond. In the soft upland of the Valley, bewildered Federals wondered where Jackson would strike next. In the hot, dank woods of the Peninsula, Lee massed his men. Jackson felt for the Yankee flank, and the South began to move.

Just seven days later McClellan's big blue machine was being herded back into its James River base camp, supplies burning behind it. The General hated to see it get dented, and Lee had struck some heavy blows—Mechanicsville, Gaines' Mill, Savage's Station, Glendale. The Northern boys had fought with all the courage, precision, and flair that their toughest Old Army sergeants could wish. Time and again they had ripped the gray ranks that charged through the thickets yelling their eerie fox-hunting cry. And time and again as night fell the Yankees heard the inevitable order to retreat. The South lost men; the North lost the Peninsula.

Richmond National Battlefield Park, southeast of the city, explains and illustrates the details of the Peninsula Campaign. A 57-mile drive links the sites—a placid little house here, a shaded stream there, and finally the pleasant slope of Malvern Hill where Lee made his last attempt to crush McClellan. Gray regiments were blown apart as they stormed up toward massed Federal guns. The misty night that ended the battle echoed with the screams of wounded men. "It was not war," said a Rebel general. "It was murder." Yet next day McClellan was gone.

So Richmond was saved, at dreadful cost. Lee refitted, then turned his attention to the rest of Virginia. He sent Jackson to spar with Union General Pope near Culpeper. John Pope, fresh from the western theater of war, sneered at Easterners and bragged that his headquarters would be in the saddle. Veterans on both sides chuckled: that was where most people kept their hindquarters.

Jackson's rugged men marched rings around Pope, cut his rail line to Washington, robbed his base at Manassas, and jabbed him into position for an uppercut. Lee delivered it with a crash—the Second Battle of Bull Run—and Pope's disgusted soldiers trudged back to Washington, whipped again. That was all for Pope.

NOW LEE carried the war north. Early in September, 1862, the Army of Northern Virginia rolled through Leesburg, where its general was feted; then it forded the Potomac. "They were the dirtiest men I ever saw, a most ragged, lean, and hungry set of wolves," reported a Marylander. "Yet there was a dash about them that the Northern men lacked. They rode like circus riders. Many of them were from the far South and spoke a dialect I could scarcely understand. They were profane beyond belief and talked incessantly."

"Up from the meadows rich with corn," they tramped through quiet Frederick where lived an old lady named Barbara Fritchie—a friend of Francis Scott Key—who often displayed an American flag. Despite Whittier's poem, no Rebel paid her the slightest heed, nor did she to them so far as is known. But at Hagerstown a female patriot sang "The Star-Spangled Banner" right at General Lee. He gravely raised his hat and trotted on. He was worried by the dispersion of his force—Jackson off capturing Harpers Ferry. Now rumors were rife that the Army of the

Antietam Creek murmurs peacefully beneath Burnside Bridge, named for the Union general whose fallen troops stained the water red. His men fought their way across to hit Lee's flank in the 1862 Maryland battle.

Potomac was high-tailing it after him. George McClellan was back in command.

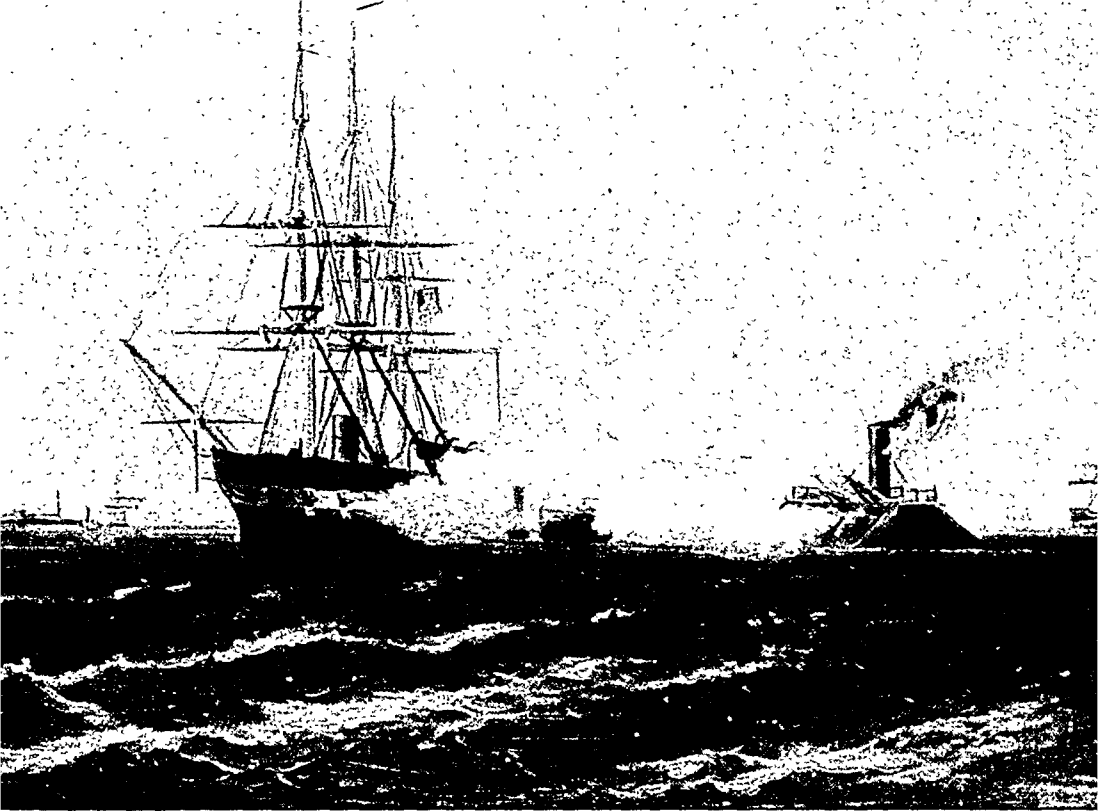
The rumors were true. McClellan moved fast for once, stormed Lee's rear at South Mountain, and boasted he would bag the Virginian. After all, he'd picked up Lee's campaign orders wrapped around some cigars and he knew every plan in the Confederate's head. The trouble was, McClellan hated a showdown fight.

He got it at Sharpsburg, along Antietam Creek, in "the bloodiest day of the war." Lee whirled to face him there, and Jackson dashed up to help. McClellan committed about half his army, grudgingly, bit by bit, and the Yankees fought like savages as the Rebel lines writhed and shifted to meet attack after attack. The battle howled across a cornfield, and the corn looked "as if it had been struck down by a storm of bloody hail." Beside this field at Antietam National Battlefield Site is a sunken road, notorious "Bloody Lane." New Englanders blackened their faces and war-whooped before charging it. Sometimes the sun sets red again over Antietam as it did that hot September evening when the foes faced each other, bled white and glutted with war. Lee had to withdraw across the Potomac. McClellan couldn't follow. He'd had all he could take.

President Lincoln called on General McClellan (center) after Antietam and chided him for not destroying Lee's army. Leaving the camp, Lincoln gazed at the Army of the Potomac and sighed, "McClellan's bodyguard."

438





"THE MERRIMAC AND THE MONITOR IN HAMPTON ROADS" BY C. RISS, C. 1862, NORFOLK MUSEUM OF ARTS AND SCIENCES

Union blockade strangles the South

WITH DERISIVE laughter the South greeted President Lincoln's blockade of its coast. Swift ships ran the gantlet with little trouble at first, slipping in and out of Southern ports with precious supplies. To clear the James River of Yankee warships, Confederates fitted the captured Union frigate *Merrimac* with a superstructure of railroad iron, christened her *Virginia*, and set her to ramming wooden vessels off Norfolk. Federal officials wrung their hands, for this unwieldy but immune ironclad could bog down McClellan's Peninsula Campaign if it gained control of the lower Chesapeake Bay.

Then the U.S.S. *Monitor*, launched in the nick of time, puffed into Hampton Roads after a grueling voyage from New York. On March 9, 1862, she intercepted the sloped-sided *Merrimac* steaming out to finish off the wooden *Minnesota*, which had been run aground the day before. The point-blank, slam-bang brawl between the two monsters (above) was a horror to their crews. The clanging, smoke-choked traps fought to a draw, but after the Rebels evacuated Norfolk the *Merrimac* was abandoned and burned. The *Monitor* eventually sank in a storm, but not before Northerners were smoking "El Monitor" cigars and dancing "Ericsson's Galop" in honor of John Ericsson, designer of the "cheesebox on a raft."

Federal ships and sailors, helped by young powder monkeys (right), gradually tightened the blockade. The South felt the pinch, and soon haughty plantation ladies were growing food; were spinning, weaving, and dyeing.



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

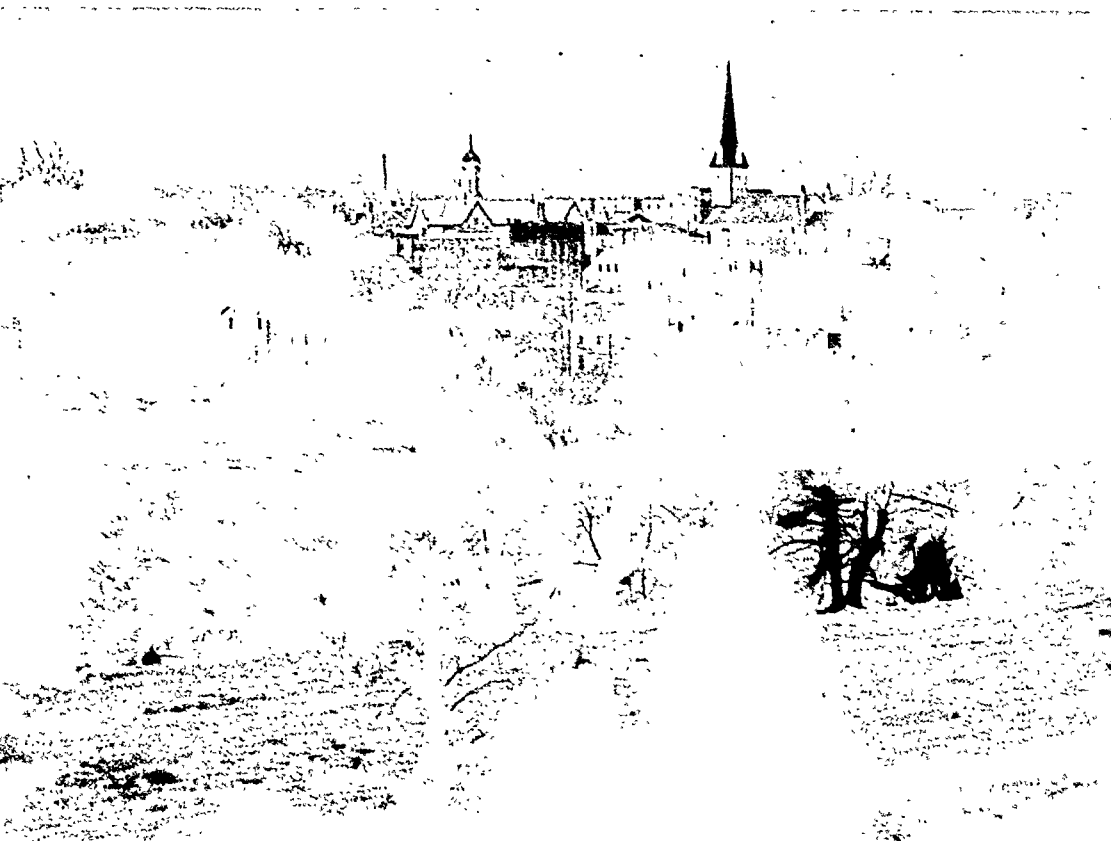
The Gray holds fast at Fredericksburg

IN LATE OCTOBER, 1862, the President sent a telegram to McClellan: "I have just read your despatch about sore tongued and fatigued horses. Will you pardon me for asking what the horses of your army have done since the battle of Antietam that fatigue anything?" McClellan had been sitting north of the Potomac, afflicted with what Lincoln called "the slows." Lee, refitting his army in Virginia, welcomed the respite.

In November, McClellan was replaced by Gen. Ambrose E. Burnside, famed for his side whiskers, a brave and honest man who believed he was not competent to lead such an army. He was right. The proof came when he took his troops into action at Fredericksburg on the banks of the Rappahannock.

Fredericksburg—a Virginia town rich in history, where Washington's mother once lived, where Monroe had a law office, where John Paul Jones kept house. Its colonial buildings still rise from the waterfront, and behind them can still be seen the high ground Lee's men lined with cannon and rifles that December day.

They had waited three weeks for the Federals to cross the river and attack and in that time had perfected their defenses—trenches south of town and a fine position in a sunken road at the foot of Marye's Heights just back of town. The gentle slope dropping toward the town from the sunken road is built up with new houses today. In 1862 it was a field. "A chicken cannot live on that field when we open on it," said one Rebel. Lee could scarcely believe that his new opponent, Burn-

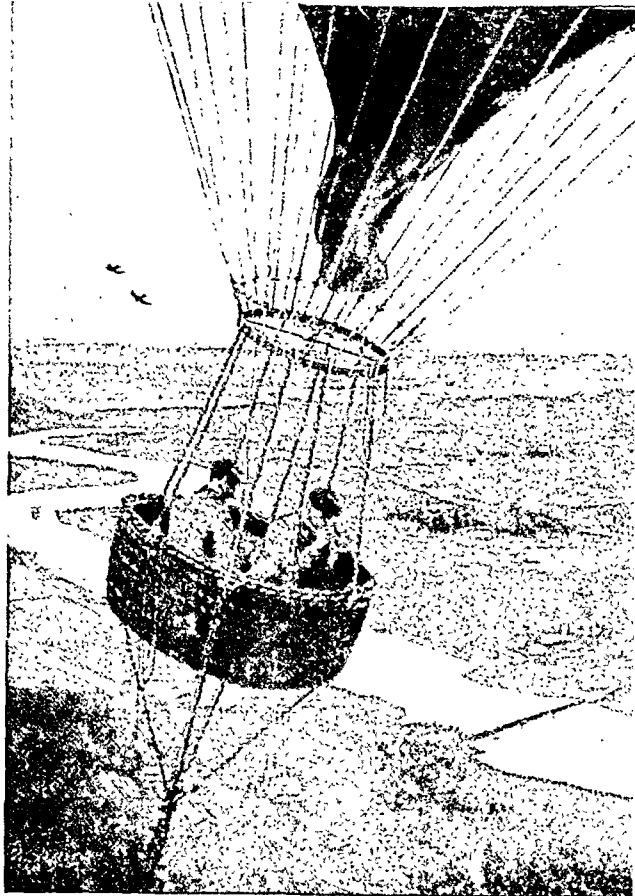


side, would actually test such defenses. But as fog rolled away on the morning of December 13, here came massed blue regiments, stepping proudly with flags flying.

They struck at the trenches where Jackson commanded, and some nearly broke the tough Rebel line. Then the gray heaved the blue back.

Watching, Lee turned to Gen. James Longstreet, one of his trusted lieutenants: "It is well that war is so terrible—we should grow too fond of it!"

Incredibly, Burnside sent wave after wave of troops straight at Marye's Heights. The brown winter grass below it turned blue with bodies as the sunken road flashed and roared its answer. Yet on they came again and again, only to be shredded by massed artillery and a sheet of flame from tight-packed riflemen. Those on the firing line passed empty rifles back and



got loaded ones in return, and their shots blended into a continuous snarl.

One gallant Yankee officer got 30 yards from the road before bullets riddled him. Old Union outfits that had earned the Rebels' respect at Manassas and Antietam seemed to vie with each other to see which made it nearest the road before being cut down.

Wounded lay 30 hours on freezing mud after that useless butchery. Poor, shaken Burnside finally left, and Lee wondered if he could have destroyed the whole Army of the Potomac.

Fredericksburg in winter's grip seemed peaceful as Federals awaited pontoons to cross the Rappahannock. Death lurked beyond the town. Prof. Thaddeus Lowe's balloons spotted Rebel works. Fired on often by rifled cannon, not one was shot down.



"GENERAL DOUBLEDAY CROSSING THE POTOMAC (JUNE, 1863)" BY DAVID G. BLYTHE, NATIONAL BASEBALL HALL OF FAME AND MUSEUM, COOPERSTOWN

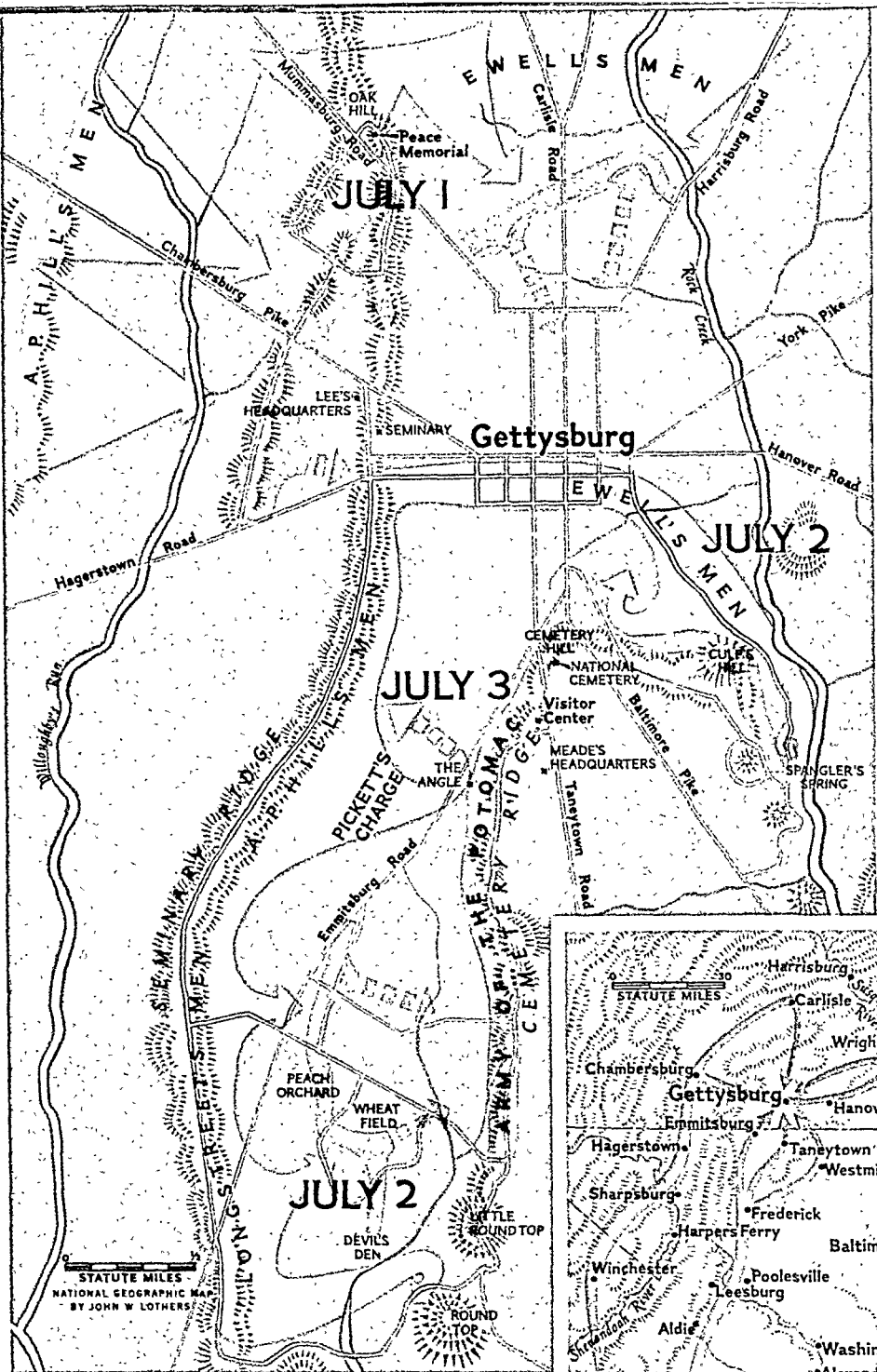
Two roads to Gettysburg

LEE, PERCHED ABOVE FREDERICKSBURG, wondered what "those people" would do next. In January, 1863, Burnside's Army of the Potomac tried to move along its side of the Rappahannock and bogged down in winter mud while Rebel pickets hooted. That was all for Burnside. Handsome, flamboyant "Fighting Joe" Hooker replaced him. In April he crossed the river with more than 100,000 men.

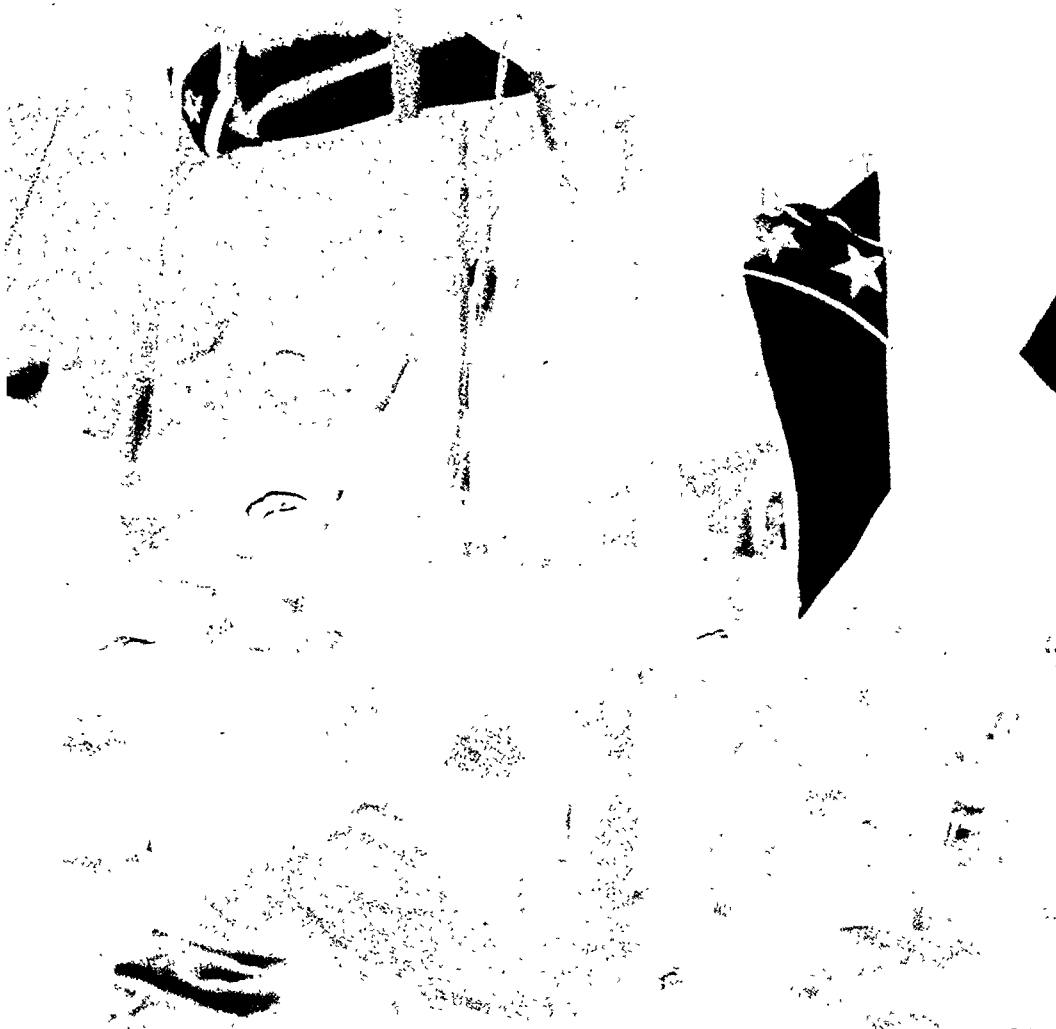
Lee and Jackson daringly split forces. Lee held fast while Jackson led 28,000 troops around to hit the enemy flank. The Park Service preserves Jackson's route, a twisting, somehow ominous road through sunless woods around Chancellorsville. Motorists following it sense that they are slipping past the front of a great army, turning finally to strike it unawares. Cars humming east on Virginia Highway 3 recall to life the Rebel attack, for right here sat tired Yankees cooking supper on May 2 when Jackson struck with a howl and a crash of guns, rolling the Union flank up in a tangle while Lee smashed the front.

Brilliantly, Hooker got his men back across the river, but that was all for "Fighting Joe." Lincoln paced the White House moaning, "My God! My God! What will the country say?" Lee moaned too in the midst of triumph, for Jackson had been accidentally wounded by his own men. "Tell him to make haste and get well," said Lee. "He has lost his left arm; but I have lost my right arm." But Jackson died a few days later at Chandler's cottage, now restored.

To throw Union strategy off balance again and so relieve pressure against Confederate forces in the West, Lee marched north to Pennsylvania. Jubilantly his



The Army of Northern Virginia (red), fanning into Pennsylvania, raced for Gettysburg when two of Lee's corps swamped Meade's advance units July 1. The Yankees held north of town, broke, then reformed on Cemetery Hill as the Army of the Potomac moved up. Lee hit the flanks July 2, smashed a salient in the Peach Orchard. Next day Pickett charged to the "high-water mark of the Confederacy."



NORTH-SOUTH SKIRMISHERS WATCH TARGETS AT A GETTYSBURG MEETING PHOTOGRAPHS BY THOMAS NEBBIA, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER



veterans swung through country rich "like a land full of blubber to a Greenlander." But Lee lost touch with Jeb Stuart's cavalry, so was blind to actions of the Army of the Potomac, now led by scholarly George G. Meade.

Dispersed Rebel columns headed generally for Harrisburg. On June 30 a brigade marched toward the sleepy village of Gettysburg to find shoes. Instead they found Union cavalry. Next day a strong Southern force investigated. By now the Yankee troopers were backed up by some very straight-shooting, unafraid infantry. Rebel skirmishers cursed, so the story goes, "See those damn black hats? That ain't no militia—that's the Army of the Potomac." They had collided with the crack Iron Brigade, Midwesterners in black felt hats. Confederate troops came up faster than Federal. Even the Iron



In bitter attacks Federals tried to crack Vicksburg's defenses and end the siege. Yankees dug trenches close to Rebel works and enemy soldiers met and chatted between skirmishes. A Confederate guard once turned out to salute Grant as he inspected nearby Union lines. Grant returned the salute.

At peace in Vicksburg National Military Park, warriors share disputed ground.

1863, the same day that Lee sadly led his torn troops away from Gettysburg, Vicksburg surrendered. After so many nights of gunfire, soldiers on both sides found it hard to sleep in the stillness.

Now the Mississippi was a Union river. Confederates west of it could no longer play a big part in the war. But the South was far from licked, and Grant's next task was to split it again.

Off marched the Army of the Cumberland, fit once more after its blood bath at Murfreesboro, aiming for Chattanooga and sidling past Rebel defenders so that they had to give way. The city fell without a fight, and the Yankees pushed through and fanned out to net fleeing Rebels. But these Confederates weren't a bit panicked. With reinforcements flocking in, they

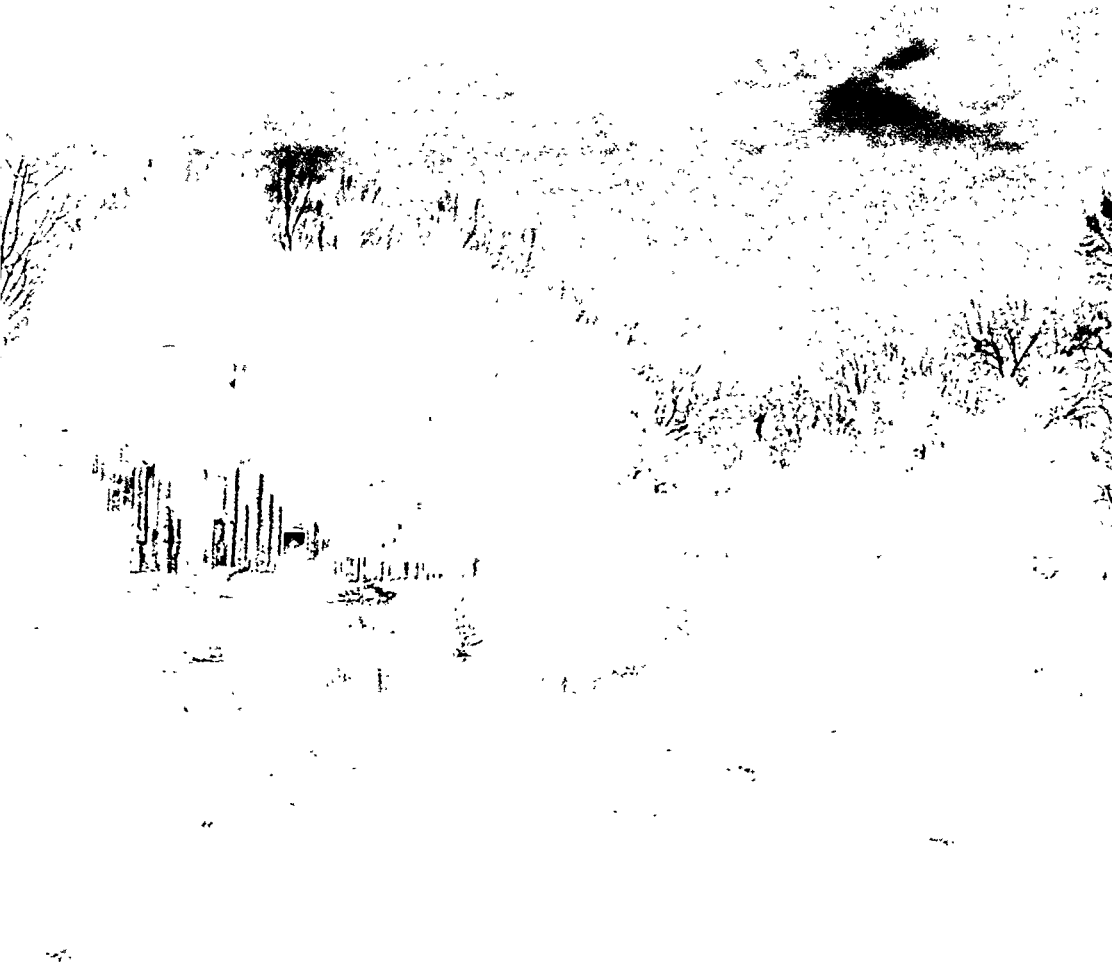


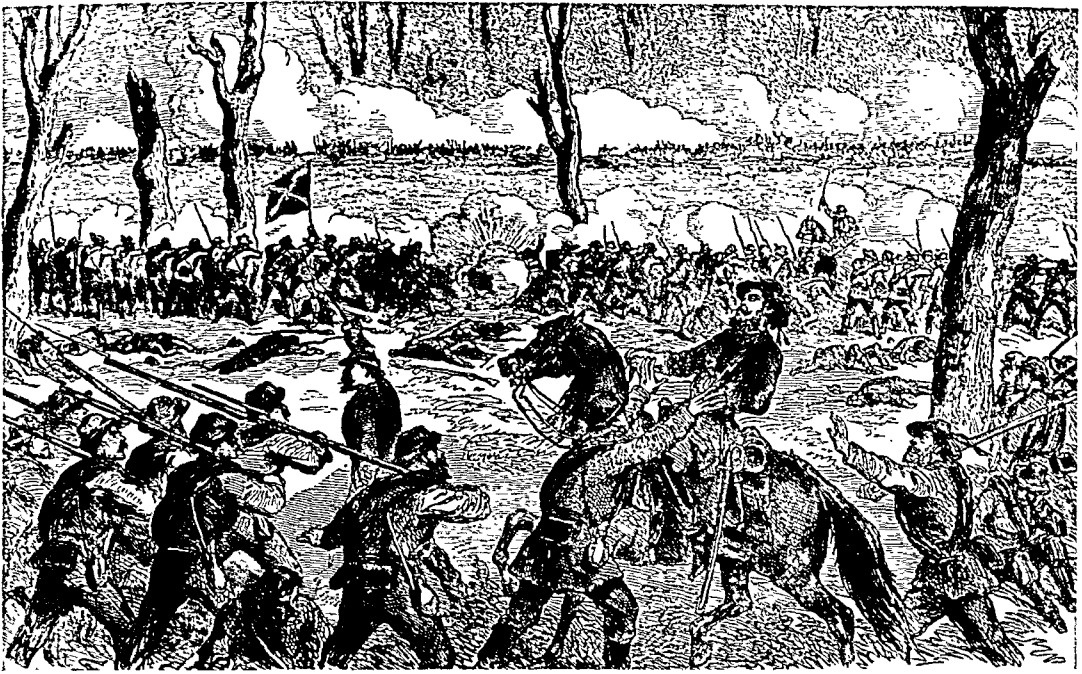
were turning into a very muscular army, for once outnumbering the Northerners. And when they saw the Federals split into scattered forces, they made their move.

South of Chattanooga, beyond the ridges that wall the city, Chickamauga Creek flows through gently undulating fields and forest. Today's national military park is well tended, many of its trees standing high and clean above cropped grass. In September, 1863, it was a lonely, remote region clogged with scrub growth and thickets. The dispersed Union elements sensed they were losing touch; a foreboding made them grope back toward each other. Then the thickets flamed with rifle fire and a great Rebel horde poured death into them.

The Confederates waited just too long to smash the Union forces piecemeal. For a day the Army of the Cumberland held its own. But as the battle flashed and smoked into the second day a Union division was moved out of line by error. Rebels poured through, where the Brotherton House now stands, and routed much of the Yankee army. The rest held on Snodgrass Hill where a log cabin remains. Here Union Gen. George H. Thomas became "The Rock of Chickamauga."

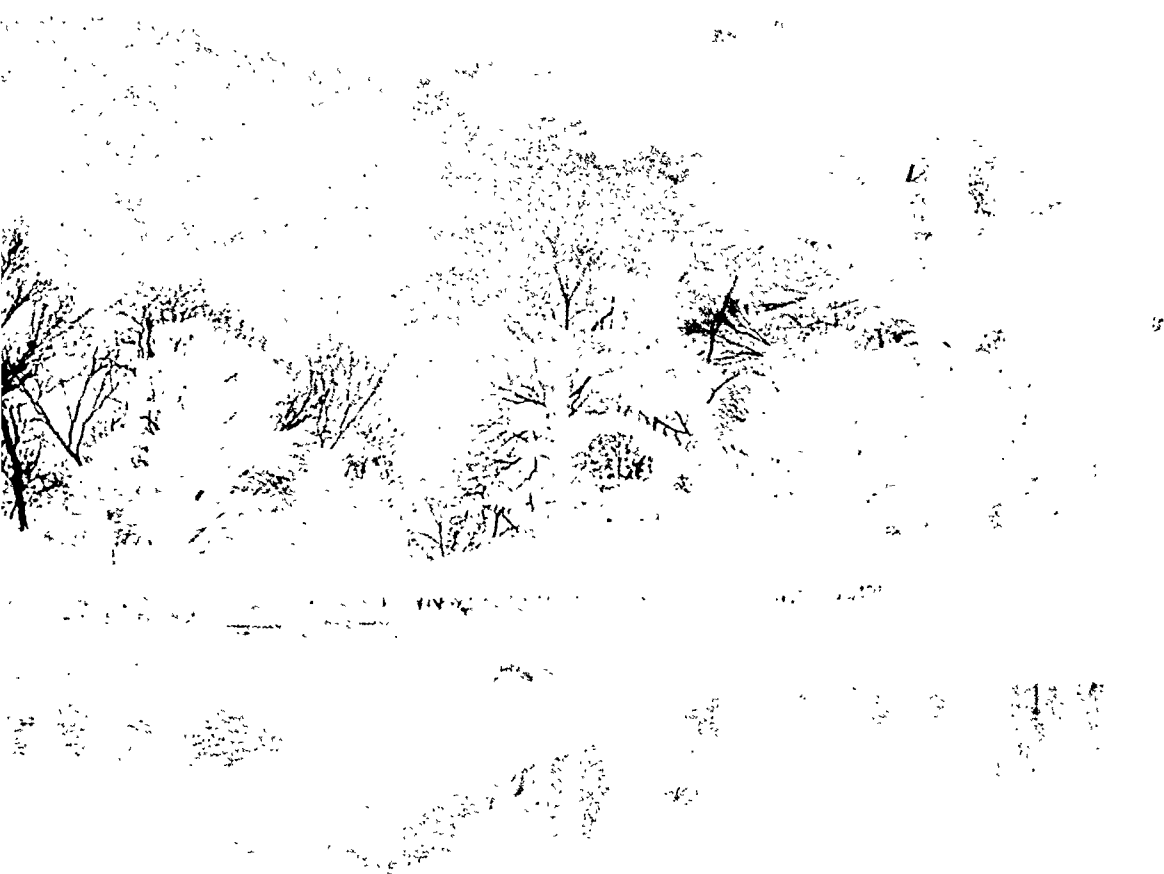
Even the Rock gave up after dark. The beaten Federals crept away and holed up in the safety of Chattanooga. The Confederates laid siege to the town and from





FRANK VIZETELLY FOR ILLUSTRATED LONDON NEWS, 1863, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS BELOW THOMAS NEBBIA, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

the Yankee flank. Confederate Gen. John B. Hood was wounded (above) as battle blazed through a fog of smoke.





Lookout Mountain gave Rebels a bird's-eye view of the Chattanooga rail center where the Union army lay. The position fell when Grant moved to break the siege. Chewing a cigar, he later inspected the objective (right).

In Union Station stands the *General*, the engine that starred in the great locomotive chase a year before the battle. A party of daring Yanks in civilian dress traveled deep into Georgia, stole the *General*, and raced north to destroy railroad bridges and so isolate Chattanooga. Rebels gave chase in a handcar and three engines. Only 18 miles short of the city Andrews' Raiders ran out of fuel. They split up and fled but were caught. Eight were hanged.





Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge watched the Yankees starve. Then Grant arrived and with the aid of a jerry-built river steamer opened a "cracker line" that fed the Yanks. In November he set about lifting the siege.

THE HEIGHTS above Chattanooga offer one of the world's finest views of a city. And the story of the fight for them is one of the great legends of warfare. Sherman had arrived with his Army of the Tennessee; Hooker had pulled in with two corps of the Army of the Potomac. Grant told Sherman to take the northern end of Missionary Ridge, Hooker to strike at Lookout Mountain on the other Rebel flank.

Hooker drove the outnumbered Rebels off Lookout Mountain without much fuss. Newsmen rhapsodized over "The Battle above the Clouds."

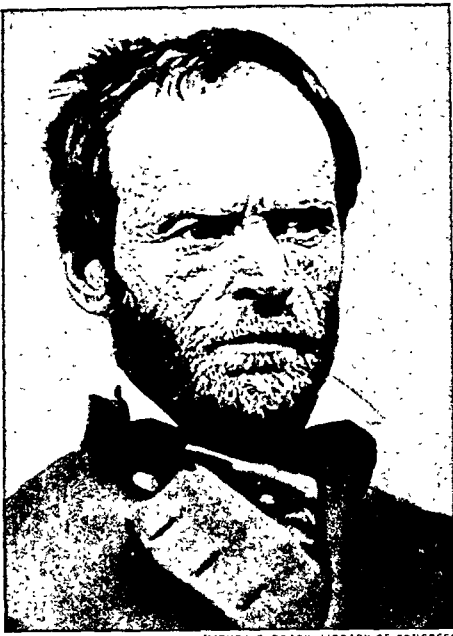
Sherman ran into a great deal of fuss and bogged down. Meantime the Army of the Cumberland, now commanded by Thomas, ached for a chance to get into action, break loose from the town, and wipe out the stain of Chickamauga.

Grant finally unleashed these men to storm rifle pits at the foot of steep Missionary Ridge. They poured over the pits like a wild blue wave, paused, then suddenly *sprang for the summit of the ridge*—without orders, without organization, with nothing in mind except to get up there and win.

It's a murderous climb, yet those men *raced* each other up while Rebels poured rifle fire into them, rolled cannon balls, cannon, and rocks down on them. Then all at once the Confederate troops turned tail and ran as though the sight of that vengeful blue tide were too much.

Chattanooga was wide open. The bitterness of Chickamauga was forgotten in the sweetness of Missionary Ridge.





MATHEW B. BRADY, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

Sherman smashes Atlanta and

YOU COULD LOOK into the face of William Tecumseh Sherman and tell that by now he knew all about war. "Like the thunderbolt," he said, war "follows its laws and turns not aside even if the beautiful, the virtuous and the charitable stand in its path."

In March, 1864, he was allowed to wage his kind of campaign. Grant, called to Washington, handed him the victorious Union armies at Chattanooga and ordered him to crush Atlanta.

Sherman moved south along much the same path that U. S. Highway 41 follows today. When Rebel Gen. Joseph E. Johnston dug in at the mountain passes, Sherman simply swung around him. But at Kennesaw Mountain near

Rebels overrun a battery and a brick house just east of Atlanta, then fire from behind cotton bales as blue-clad Yanks counterattack. Federals kill horses (center) to prevent guns being



1 Culpeper

The Army of the Potomac lies in camp near Culpeper in the spring of 1864, when Grant receives over-all command of the Union forces. He comes to supervise the activities of General Meade and stays with the army.

2 Wilderness

Fording the Rapidan, the Federals head south and are met by Lee in the Wilderness, May 5-6. In a vicious and confused fight, the woods catch fire, burning thousands of wounded. There is no clear decision, but Grant pulls his men out. Instead of retreating north to lick his wounds as other Federal commanders have done, Grant stays south of the Rapidan and moves on toward Richmond.

3 Spotsylvania

Lee faces Grant again at Spotsylvania, May 8-19. Stopped, Grant retreats again, but still southward. He proposes to "fight it out on this line if it takes all summer." It takes all summer, and all winter too, but Grant has replacements and Lee hasn't.

8 Appomattox Court House

Union troops race the decimated Rebels west. Sheridan's cavalry gets to Appomattox Court House first, blocking the way. When the Confederates coil to drive through, the troopers trot aside, revealing long, grim lines of blue-clad infantry. The game is up. Lee calls for terms and finally meets Grant face to face at the McLean House, April 9. "Don't cheer," Grant orders his troops. "The Rebels are our countrymen again."

7 Five Forks

Spearheaded by Phil Sheridan, Grant's force smashes Lee's flank at Five Forks, April 1, 1865. Grant orders an attack all along the Petersburg front. The weary Confederates cave in. Richmond falls April 3. Lee's men withdraw west toward the mountains.

*Washington

*Manassas

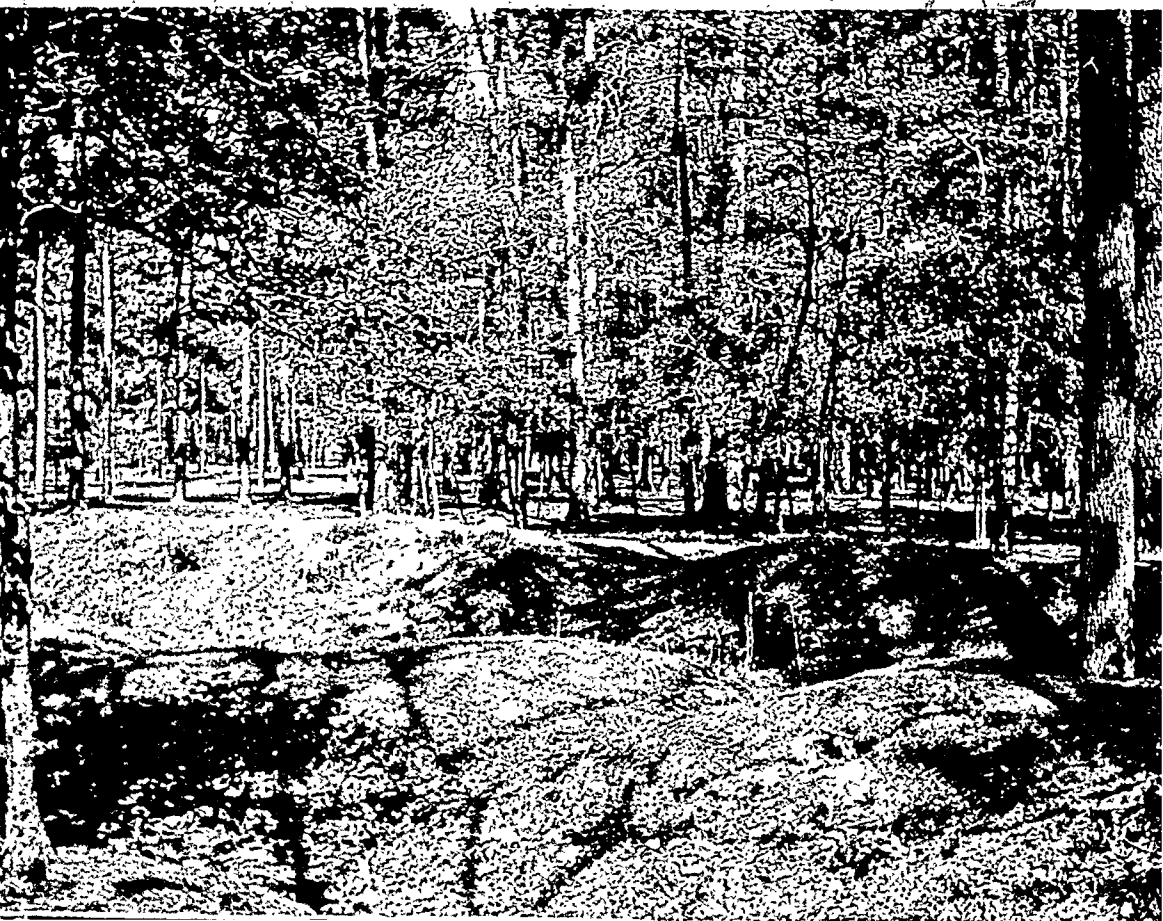
*Fredericksburg

Richmond

6 Petersburg

Badly whipped, the Union army swings south of Richmond, crosses the James, and drives on Petersburg, for once catching Lee short. Richmond is close to crumbling June 9, but remembering Cold Harbor, overcautious Federals probe the feeble Rebel lines, then settle down to nearly 10 months of trench warfare.

STATUTE MILES
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC MAP
BY IRVIN E. ALLEN





THE PEACEMAKERS BY G. P. A. HEALY C. 1868 IN THE WHITE HOUSE BELOW MATHEW B. BRADY 1865 NATIONAL ARCHIVES



Rude, pugnacious Gen. Philip H. Sheridan chased Early through the Shenandoah Valley. The story goes that Sheridan's chaplain kept asking him to pause for Sunday service, and "Fighting Phil" finally consented one peaceful Sabbath, "if you let me announce the hymn." The chaplain agreed, the men assembled, and Sheridan announced: "Hymn 42: 'Early my God I will seek thy face'!"

Sheridan cleaned out the Valley. Back on the Petersburg lines Lee's gaunt army made a last gallant attack, seizing Fort Stedman but losing it again. The end was coming along with spring in 1865, and everyone knew it.

On April 1 Sheridan smashed Lee's flank at Five Forks. Grant hit the Rebel line early on the 2d. Gunfire from Lee's trenches dimmed and winked out like candles of hope. Petersburg fell. President Davis was in St. Paul's Church, Richmond, when a messenger whispered and he rose and left. Richmond fell.

Gamely Lee raced his hungry, beaten soldiers westward, but Grant moved faster. At last the Confederate van met a line of Yankee cavalry blocking their way, and when guns were rolled up, the troopers moved aside and disclosed a front bristling with Federal infantry. The end had come.

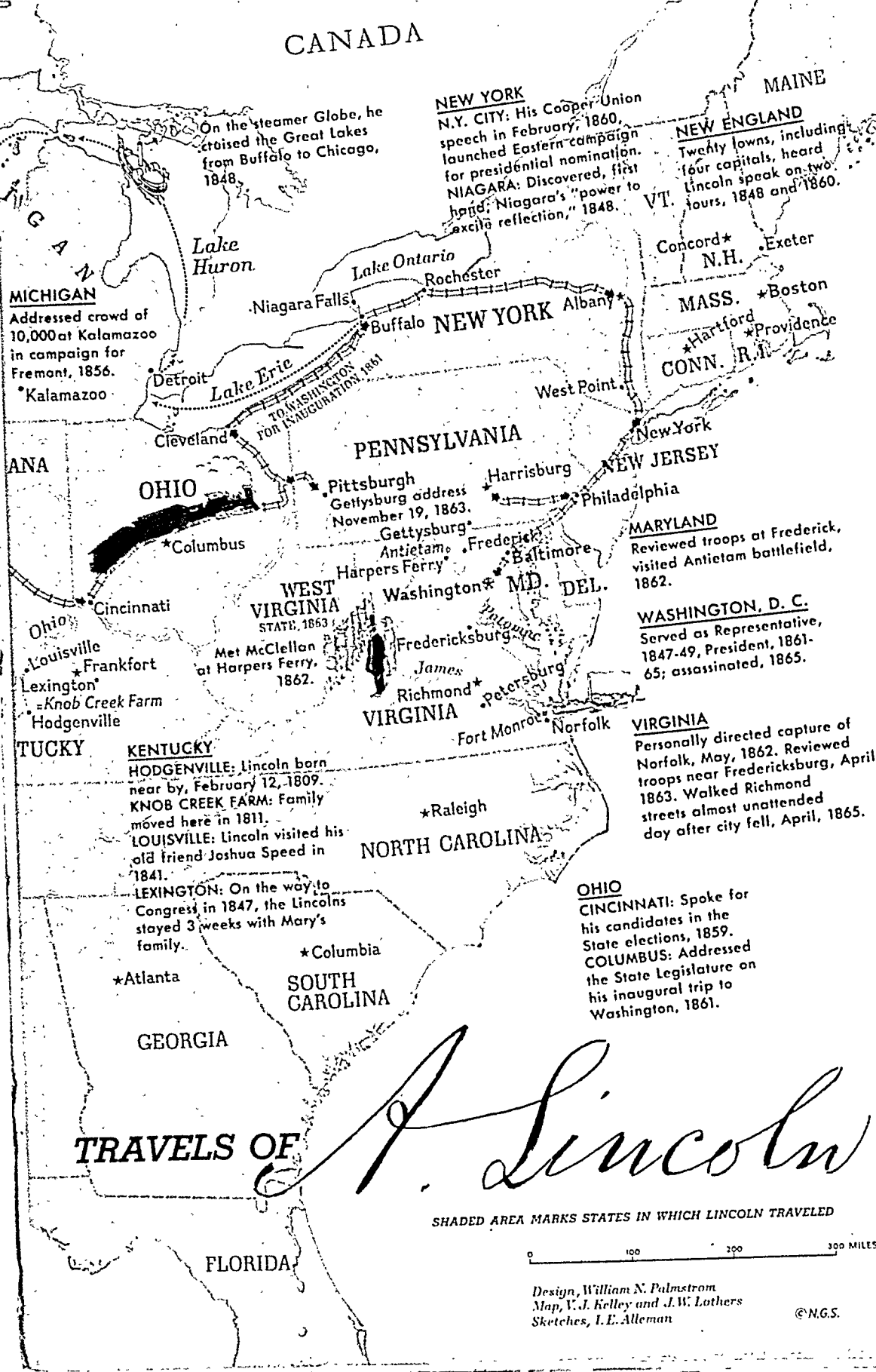
On Palm Sunday, April 9, 1865, Lee and Grant, the two great antagonists, met face to face in the small brick McLean home at Appomattox Court House. They spoke quietly of arranging terms imposing the least hardship on men in the ranks, of feeding the starving Confederates. When Lee left, Grant raised his hat in salute. Lee answered the gesture and rode toward his men, ragged, decimated, crowding around him now to touch his stirrup and shout, "God bless you, Uncle Robert!"

Somewhere on the Federal line troops cheered. Grant ordered silence. "The Rebels are our countrymen again."

It would never be quite the same country. More than 600,000 had died, as many as in all our other wars combined. The bleeding nation faced the agony of reconstruction. But it was a nation. Once more these were the United States.



CANADA



On the steamer Globe, he
crossed the Great Lakes
from Buffalo to Chicago,
1848.

NEW YORK
N.Y. CITY: His Cooper Union
speech in February, 1860,
launched Eastern campaign
for presidential nomination.
NIAGARA: Discovered, first
hand; Niagara's "power to
excite reflection," 1848.

MAINE
NEW ENGLAND
Twenty towns, including
four capitals, heard
Lincoln speak on two
tours, 1848 and 1860.

Concord*
N.H. Exeter
MASS. *Boston
*Hartford
CONN. R.I. *Providence

MICHIGAN

Addressed crowd of
10,000 at Kalamazoo
in campaign for
Fremont, 1856.
*Kalamazoo

ANA

OHIO

Ohio
*Cincinnati
*Louisville
*Frankfort
*Knob Creek Farm
Hodgenville

TUCKY

KENTUCKY

HODGENVILLE: Lincoln born
near by, February 12, 1809.
Knob Creek Farm: Family
moved here in 1811.
LOUISVILLE: Lincoln visited his
old friend Joshua Speed in
1841.
LEXINGTON: On the way to
Congress in 1847, the Lincolns
stayed 3 weeks with Mary's
family.

*Atlanta

GEORGIA

*Columbia
SOUTH CAROLINA

FLORIDA

PENNSYLVANIA

*Pittsburgh
Gettysburg address
November 19, 1863.
Gettysburg
Antietam
Harpers Ferry
Washington*
MD. DEL.

WEST VIRGINIA

Met McClellan
at Harpers Ferry,
1862.

VIRGINIA

*Richmond
*Petersburg
Fort Monroe
Norfolk

*Raleigh

NORTH CAROLINA

NEW JERSEY

West Point

MARYLAND

Reviewed troops at Frederick,
visited Antietam battlefield,
1862.

WASHINGTON, D. C.

Served as Representative,
1847-49; President, 1861-
65; assassinated, 1865.

VIRGINIA

Personally directed capture of
Norfolk, May, 1862. Reviewed
troops near Fredericksburg, April
1863. Walked Richmond
streets almost unattended
day after city fell, April, 1865.

OHIO

CINCINNATI: Spoke for
his candidates in the
State elections, 1859.
COLUMBUS: Addressed
the State Legislature on
his inaugural trip to
Washington, 1861.

TRAVELS OF

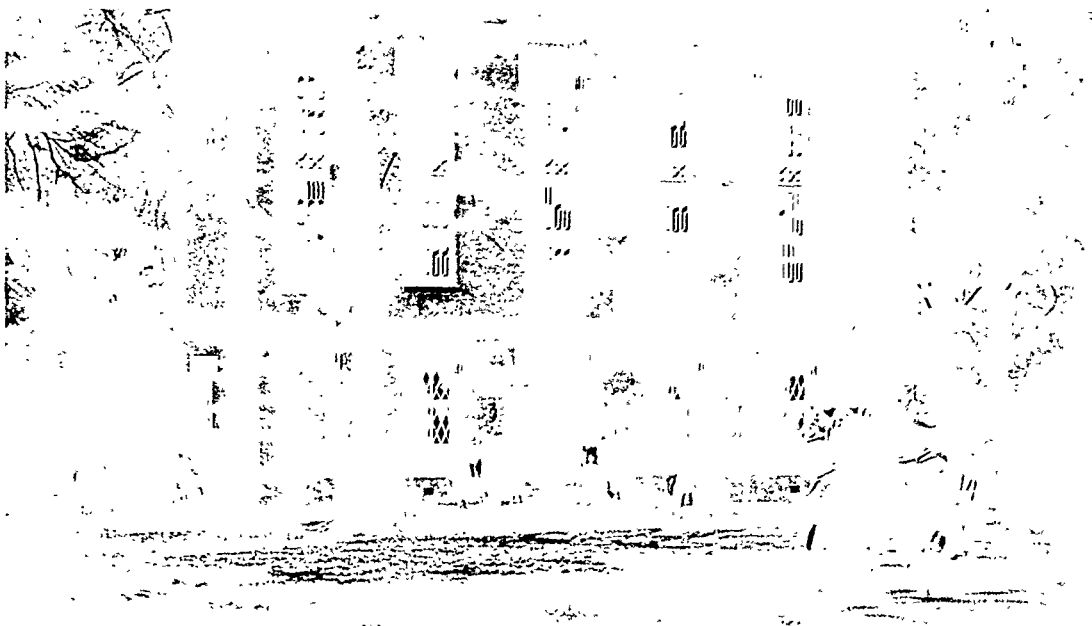
A. Lincoln

SHADED AREA MARKS STATES IN WHICH LINCOLN TRAVELED

0 100 200 300 MILES

Design, William N. Palmstrom
Map, V. J. Kelley and J. W. Lothers
Sketches, I. E. Allen

©N.G.S.



C 1859 COLLECTION OF FREDERICK HILL MESERVE



Stephen A. Douglas

Knox College at Galesburg, Illinois, heard Lincoln and Douglas debate in 1858. Bronzes of the two flank door of Old Main. Outwardly the building has changed little.

"Of all the damned Whig rascals about Springfield, Abe Lincoln is the ablest and most honest." So Stephen A. Douglas, Democratic veteran of the U. S. Senate, sized up the man he debated in his 1858 bid for re-election.

The 24 years between Lincoln's election to the state legislature and the Republican nomination for the Senate had prepared him for the coming race. He had honed his wit against that of other attorneys and made campaign speeches across Illinois. In 1846 the voters had chosen him for the House of Representatives. After one term he had stood aside to let another run. Accepting the nomination to run for the Senate against Douglas, he had stirred the nation with the words: "'A house divided against itself cannot stand.'

1860. LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



Abraham Lincoln

To Springfield, Illinois, came Lincoln at 28, a self-taught lawyer lacking enough cash to buy bed linen. When he said farewell from the only home he ever owned (right), it was as President-elect. He had bought the house for \$1,500 after his marriage in 1842. It remains a state memorial to him.

I believe this government cannot endure, permanently half *slave* and half *free*."

Douglas, known as the Little Giant, traveled to the debates in style aboard a private railway coach. A cannon on a flatcar boomed out his arrivals. Ottawa, Freeport, Jonesboro, and Charleston welcomed the candidates with carnivals and brass bands. At Knox College in Galesburg the largest turnout of the debates braved a cold wind. Twenty thousand heard Lincoln say of his opponent: "He is blowing out the moral lights around us, when he contends that whoever wants slaves has a right to hold them." The debaters dueled at Quincy and at Alton, where an observer saw Lincoln stand "like some solitary pine on a lonely summit."

When Douglas won the Senate seat, Lincoln compared himself to the boy who stubbed his toe: "It hurt too bad to laugh and he was too big to cry." But he was elected President in 1860 and left Springfield for Washington on his inaugural journey. Feelings were running so high that Lincoln's train was secretly rerouted at Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, because of a rumored attempt to assassinate him in Baltimore. Less than two months later the storm broke.

The North's claim of victory at the Battle of Antietam in 1862 gave Lincoln the military success he needed to announce the Emancipation Proclamation freeing the slaves. Then Union victory at Gettysburg doomed the Confederacy, though few realized it. Lincoln traveled to Gettysburg on November 18, 1863, to dedicate the military cemetery.

On the battlefield next morning Lincoln listened to Edward Everett's two-hour oration, then spoke only two minutes. The address "fell on the audience like a wet blanket," he said later. He could not know then that the world would acclaim it.

*Four score and seven years ago our fathers
brought forth, upon this continent, a new nation, con-
ceived in Liberty, and dedicated to the proposition
that all men are created equal.*

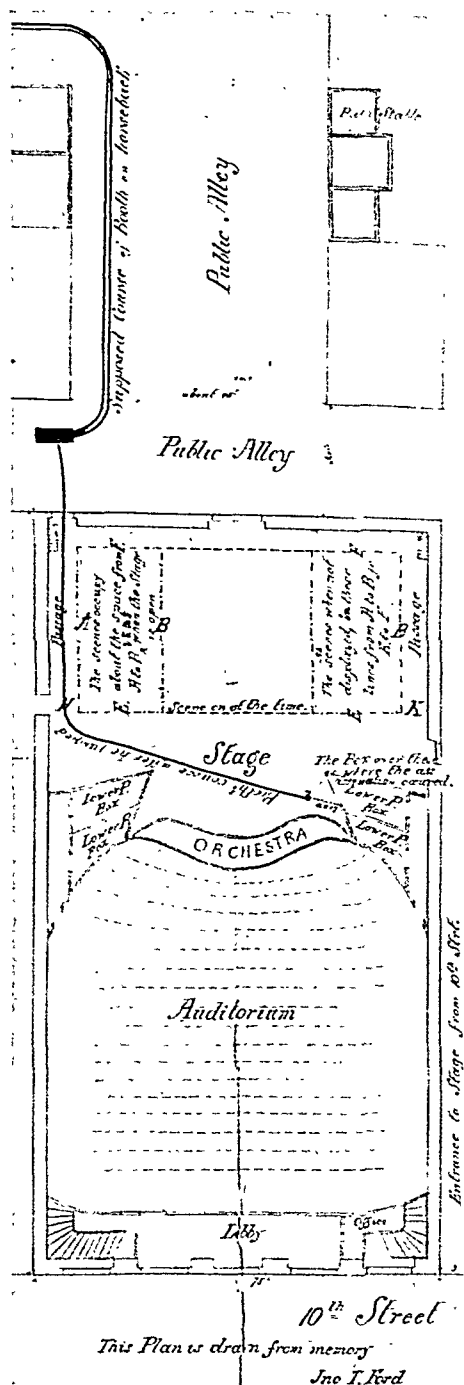
*Now we are engaged in a great civil war, test-
ing whether that nation, or any nation, so conceived,
and so dedicated, can long endure. We are met
here on a great battlefield of that war. We ^{have} ~~are~~
^{come} ~~are~~ to dedicate a portion of it as a ^a final rest-
ing place ^{for} of those who here gave their lives that
that nation might live. It is altogether fitting*

In a bedroom of the David Wills home in Gettysburg, Lincoln revised his famed address. He held the second draft (above) in his hand as he spoke the next morning.

That evening the President and his wife went to Ford's Theater in Washington where crazed John Wilkes Booth fired a derringer point-blank at Lincoln's head. Mortally wounded, the President was carried across 10th Street and into the Petersen House. At about seven the next morning Abraham Lincoln was dead.

476

ROCKEF PRESERVED AT GREENFIELD VILLAGE DEARBORN MICHIGAN WILLARD R CULVER



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

Bloodstained rocker stirs memories of assassination; John T. Ford's plan of his theater shows how the killer escaped. Booth crept into the Presidential box, shot Lincoln from behind, then leaped to the stage. He caught a spur on a draped flag and broke his leg, an injury that led to his capture.

The Lusty West

SHORTLY AFTER MIDNIGHT on January 1, 1863, Daniel Freeman filed the first land claim in Nebraska Territory under the Homestead Act. He had dragged the land-office agent from a New Year's celebration to register 160 acres near the present town of Beatrice. Thousands took up claims in the months that followed, for even during the Civil War the West demanded its share of the nation's energies. In 1864, as Grant launched his drive on Richmond, white-topped wagons of 75,000 settlers rolled west over the Oregon Trail. "It was one of the great pulses of American life that went on beating amid the din of war."

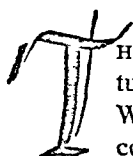
An army veteran, bragging about the recent war back east, might have lied in a small sort of way. But once he crossed the Missouri he began to take lessons from the prairies. In the clear air he seemed able to touch mountain ranges a hundred miles away. Streams appeared to run uphill. Buffalo and horses raced upside down in shimmering mirages. "You can't tell the truth about the Great West without lying," said an observer. He hit it about right.

Almost as unbelievable were the West's wild towns. Tombstone, Arizona, was a brawling honky-tonk place where three frontiers collided—the miner's, cattleman's, and Indian's. Tombstone drew more than its share of gunslingers and

peace officers, although few could tell them apart. On a memorable day near the O.K. Corral mustachioed Marshal Wyatt Earp and Doc Holliday, "lean, consumptive, sardonic, and deadly," reduced the cowboy population of Arizona Territory by gunning down badmen Billy Clanton and Frank and Tom McLowery.

In the cowtowns homicidal exhibitionists of the Jesse James and Billy the Kid stripe occasioned a high turnover in peace officers, who frequently played leading roles in funerals. Wild Bill Hickok, suave and natty, was marshal at Abilene, Kansas. But he spent most of his time at the card table in the Alamo Saloon, leaving the game occasionally to exercise his ivory-handled pistols.

The last, and some say the wildest, of the frontier boom towns was Deadwood, in Dakota Territory. There Wild Bill, "Prince of Pistoleers," played his last hand as he sat with his back to an open door. Mike Russell, a sawed-off Irishman with a long beard, kept bar. Everyone was welcome with two exceptions—women and children. Calamity Jane could get a drink, Mike said, because she was an exception that proved the rule. Those fortunate to have seen hard-riding, straight-shooting Calamity in action agreed. Yet all the West was exceptional, totally different from anything the Eastern pioneer had known. The men who founded Rough and Ready, Hangtown, Poker Flat, and Murderer's Bar were bound to be different from those who named their towns Plymouth, Jamestown, and Boston.



HE ACCIDENTAL DISCOVERY OF GOLD at Sutter's Mill in January of 1848 turned eyes westward to behold the glittering vision of a new El Dorado. When President Polk announced that the amount of gold "would scarcely command belief," the world exploded, and the fragments landed in California. "Greenhorns" from the East, "Sydney Ducks" from Australia, "Paddies" from Ireland, "Coolies" from China, "Cousin Jacks" from Cornwall, "Kesky-dees" (*Qu'est-ce qu'il dit?*) from France flooded the mining camps.

Returning home early in 1849 after a few months' absence, a New Yorker would hardly have recognized his city. Men in broad-brimmed hats and high boots kept honest folk from their labors with tales of wealth in the wilderness. Boxes, barrels, and bales hid store fronts. Hundreds of drays pushed through the crowded streets, headed for the wharves. There wild-eyed Argonauts fought to get aboard every hulk the shipping companies could send far enough out to sea not to attract attention when it sank. Everywhere was heard a new word—California!

Tens of thousands went overland. They swarmed into the Missouri River embarkation towns—Westport, Independence, St. Joseph—covering the surrounding fields with wagons and tents. When spring came the great wagon trains rolled out on the prairie, beginning a 2,000-mile journey which the survivors would never forget. Asiatic cholera scattered 5,000 graves along the trail to the Rockies. But nearly 80,000 forty-niners got to California, transforming it from wilderness to statehood in a single year.

No hamlet in all the 30 United States was left untouched. One historian has estimated that the number of homes broken by the Gold Rush was "but little less than inflicted by the Civil War ten years later."

There was gold aplenty, just as all the guide books had claimed. Every miner

who arrived at the diggings panned dust. He did, that is, if he was willing to stand for hours in icy streams, wield pick and shovel from dawn to dusk, then collapse in his tent after downing a supper of greasy pork, beans, and coffee. The trouble was, not many miners found very much gold. Probably nine out of ten made less money in California than they would have at home.

Although the California surface mines petered out in the early 1850's, gold fever hopelessly infected the miners. In 1858 more than 20,000 streamed north to the Fraser River gold fields in British Columbia. Like quicksilver they were off in all directions, exploring an unmapped wilderness, finding rich lodes along the rivers of Oregon, Washington, and Idaho, in the deserts of Arizona and Nevada, in the mountains of Colorado and Montana.

With all their hectic living, the miners developed effective if quick rules of justice and the framework of local government. "Congregate a hundred Americans anywhere," a foreign observer noted, "and they immediately lay out a city, frame a state constitution and apply for admission into the Union, while twenty-five of them become candidates for the United States Senate."

Miners invariably formed vigilance committees to round up the badmen. Juries appointed by the committee might listen to testimony but seldom had the patience for lengthy argument. Two men found with stolen horses in the California diggings

**WILL BE
EXHIBITED
FOR ONE DAY ONLY!**

AT THE STOCKTON HOUSE!

THIS DAY, FEB. 24 FROM 2 P. M. UNTIL 8 P. M.

**THE HEAD
OF the renowned Bandit!
JOAQUIN!**

HAND OF THREE FINGERED JACK!

THE NOTORIOUS ROBERT AND MENDOTA

"JOAQUIN" and "THREE-FINGERED JACK" were captured by the "Sage Hen" men, under the command of Capt. Harry Lane, at the Sierra Nevada, Sept. 18th. "The remarkable" death was reported in regard to the identification of the head was in relation to being that of the notorious robber, Joaquin. "Mendota," as it has been recognized by hundreds of persons in the West recently since then.

Cold-blooded killers like Billy the Kid, Jesse James, and the legendary Joaquin lived by the gun and died by it. Posters plastered across the West promised vigilante "justice." Few famous outlaws lived past 30.

"THE STAGE ROBBER" BY CHARLES M. RUSSELL,
HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF MONTANA
LEFT: THE WESTERN AMERICANA COLLECTION
OF JAMES D. HORAN, ABOVE; COLUMBIA
STATE HISTORICAL PARK, CALIFORNIA



NOTICE!

**TO THIEVES, THUGS, FAKIRS
AND BUNKO-STEERERS,
Among Whom Are**

**J. J. HARLIN, alias "Off Wheeler," SAW DUST
CHARLIE, WM. HEDGES, BILLY THE KID,
Billy Mullin, Little Jack, The
Cuter, Pock-Marked Kid, and
about Twenty Others:**

**If Found within the Limits of this City
after TEN O'CLOCK P. M., this Night,
you will be Invited to attend a GRAND
NECK-TIE PARTY,**

**The Expense of which will be borne by
100 Substantial Citizens.
Las Vegas, March 24th. 1882.**

were "condemned by acclamation" and hanged on the spot. Lacking jails, the vigilantes specialized in quick punishment: whipping, branding, or ear-cropping. Claim jumpers, stage robbers, thieves, and murderers, along with unlucky victims of mistaken identity, all received the benefits of frontier justice. Such remedies were brutal—and final. But as one who knew the situation asked, how else could the miners protect life and property in a country devoid of law?

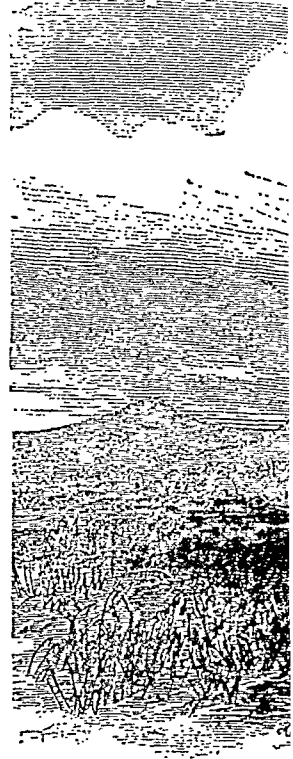
Fastidious, well-mannered Henry Plummer provoked a spectacular case of vigilante action. His gang systematically pillaged the 90-mile road between Virginia City and Bannock, two rip-roaring Montana mining camps. Wisely taking the precaution of becoming sheriff, Plummer had no trouble learning the schedule of bullion shipments. The miners were more than patient, but after 100 of their colleagues had been robbed or murdered they formed a vigilance committee and set out to even the score. The ringleader and 23 henchmen stretched hemp—Plummer from gallows he had built when sheriff.

During the 1850's miners demanded that the government provide better communications between mining camps and with civilization. In 1858 the Butterfield Overland Mail inaugurated regular postal and passenger service. The 2,600-mile trip from Tipton, Missouri, via El Paso, Texas, to San Francisco—the tortuous "oxbow" route—consumed about four weeks. A fat man in a crowded coach meant agony for those next to him, for the busy Overland Mail operated on the theory that the coach was never full. "Three in a row we would solemnly rise from our seats, bump our heads against the low roof, and, returning, vigorously ram the again-rising seat we had incontinently left."

While stagecoaches creaked across deserts and mountain ranges, a slim young rider in red shirt and high-topped boots impatiently waited through a ceremony at St. Joseph, Missouri. When the speeches ended on that April 3, 1860, he galloped the first leg of a historic cross-country run. Nine days and 23 hours later the first Pony Express rider reached Sacramento.

Men, or rather boys, who rode for the Pony Express displayed an almost fanatic devotion to duty. They swam flooded rivers, led their

horses through howling blizzards in the mountain passes, and raced through bands of Indians waiting in ambush. Relay stations were raided, riders shot. In emergencies riders such as "Buffalo Bill" Cody stayed in the saddle nearly 24 hours and covered more than 300 miles without relief. Only one of the semiweekly mails never arrived. But even as young men flashed across the plains, laborers were



WANTED

YOUNG SKINNY WIRY FELLOWS
not over eighteen. Must be expert
riders willing to risk death daily.
Orphans preferred. **WAGES \$25 per**
week. Apply, Central Overland Ex-
press, Alta Bldg., Montgomery St.

PONY EXPRESS MUSEUM, ST. JOSEPH, MISSOURI



"THE OVERLAND PONY EXPRESS," HARPER'S WEEKLY, 1861, DRAMATIZES DARING RIDERS AND THE TELEGRAPH THAT REPLACED THEM. LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

planting the posts and stringing the "talking wire" of the transcontinental telegraph. It carried Great Medicine, they told the Indians, and gave them an occasional shock. The gang in the tepee got the message and caused little trouble.

The telegraph killed the Pony Express after only 19 months. Death came shamefully, considering the tedious telegram the builder sent his wife: "This being the first message over the new line since its completion, allow me to greet you."

AS CIVIL WAR GUNS COOLED, restless Americans discovered new wealth in the West—gold on the hoof. The long drive of Texas cattle to Kansas railheads and Wyoming ranges is an American saga told and retold in dime novels and on movie and television screens. In the face of marauding Indians, rustlers, and farmers with shotguns, despite fractious longhorns that might stampede at the flash of a match or a clap of thunder, cowboys "pointed north" millions of cattle.

Kansans who had seen buffalo darken their plains stared in disbelief at the wild-eyed longhorns pouring north, overflowing the prairie, and crowding the riverbanks. From a hilltop one cowboy saw seven herds to his rear and eight in front, with the dust of 13 more in sight. "All the cattle in the world seemed to be coming up from Texas," he marveled. "Bully chaps for glue," scoffed critics of the stringy longhorn. "We have seen some Buffaloes that were more civilized."

Herds of about 2,500 head were drifted in a long slender line along dusty trails that became as "well defined as the course of a river." For long stretches the half-

the last three decades of the 19th century—the greatest movement in United States history. They took up more land than in all the years since Jamestown.

The great migration stemmed partly from the advertising of transportation companies. Anxious for fares, steamship lines “marred the walls of half the Continent with their Posters.” The railroads carried farmers to prairie railheads at reduced prices, sold them cheap land—then quickly upped freight rates.

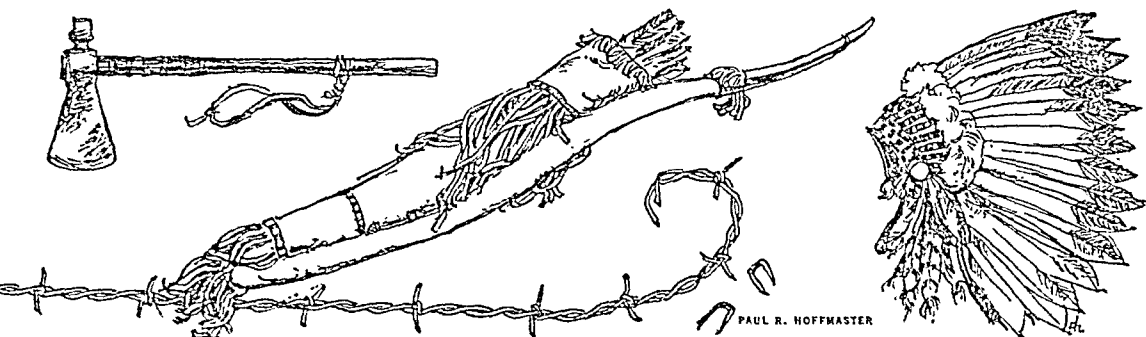
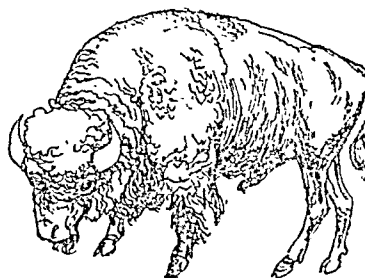
Getting land was easier than protecting it. Free-roaming livestock trampled wheat and corn. The cattleman refused to build fences, the farmer could not afford to. Split rails shipped to his 160-acre homestead on the treeless plains might cost \$1,000. “Good fences make good neighbors,” the old saying goes. Plains life in 1870 saw neither fences nor neighborliness. Farmers tried hedges. Thorny Osage orange—“pig tight, horse high, and bull strong”—took four years to grow. Schemes for “thorn wire” and “pricker” fences deluged the patent office but didn’t catch on. Plains newspapers debated the problem more than they did politics or foreign affairs. Then, in 1873, a bewhiskered Illinois farmer twisted together two metal strands entwined with a spur. Joseph Glidden had perfected barbed wire. A promoter showed that it could turn back charging longhorns. Soon barbed-wire fences crisscrossed the prairie.

The farmer also demanded something that would break thick prairie sod. In 1868 James Oliver obliged with his chilled-iron plow. Soon after came the sulky plow that the farmer could ride instead of walk behind.

Watching it all, a cattleman was unconvinced when told the sodbusters constituted the “bone and sinew” of the country. “D___n such bone and sinew,” he raged. “They are the ruin of the Country, and have everlastingly, eternally, now and forever, destroyed the best grazing land in the West.”

But the “nester” had come to stay. Theodore Roosevelt, a plains rancher himself, saw where the future of the region lay. “The homesteaders, the permanent settlers, the men who took up each his own farm on which he lived and brought up his family, these represent from the National standpoint the most desirable of all possible users of, and dwellers on, the soil.”

Westering pioneers stepped out of their industrial revolution to encounter primitive people who had not progressed beyond the flint arrowhead of the Stone Age. The white man was contemptuous, and he found Indian ways incomprehensible. The Indian was no less contemptuous, for his was the pride of a people who were at one with their land and who believed fiercely in their future. The Indian’s Sun Dance was as meaningful as the white man’s Christmas. An Arapaho ceremonialist in a rabbit skin commanded the dignity of a robed bishop.



Despite the cleavage between cultures—one dynamic and acquisitive, the other inert with simple wants—Western Indians showed little hostility to white men before 1860. They seldom attacked parties during the early years on the Oregon Trail. On one caravan to Santa Fe so many companionable Kiowa tagged along that the party consumed 1,000 buffalo en route. Still, the white man preferred trading horses, the Kiowa stealing them.

Soon after the Spanish brought the horse to the Southwest, Indians were creeping into camps, howling like wolves, and stampeding the corrals. The horse passed northward from tribe to tribe—stolen, traded, or caught wild on the prairie. With this wonderful animal the Plains Indian became less agricultural, more nomadic. By 1800 his culture centered on the horse and the buffalo.

Buffalo had roamed for an eternity across the limitless grasslands of the plains. In vast dark herds they drifted over the West as the stars moved. It seemed that no power less than another Ice Age could destroy them.

Every hour of the day reminded the Plains Indian of his dependence on the shaggy beast. The food for his children, strings for his bow, the covering for his bed all came from the buffalo. The hunt, dangerous and marvelously colorful, was a test of courage and wove its way into the Indian's religion. The Plains Indian danced the return of the buffalo as other tribes danced for sun and rain. After a successful hunt he took his finest buffalo robe, intricately painted and quill-embroidered, to a high hill. There he left it, an offering to the Great Unknown and to all the buffalo that had died so their brother the Indian might live.

INDIAN AND WHITE MAN were destined to clash. The stakes? Land. Defiant Plains tribes slowed the white tide. North of the Platte River lurked the Sioux and the Blackfoot, independent and warlike. South waited the Arapaho and the Cheyenne, proud and intelligent. In the Southwest reigned the Apache and the Comanche, cruel and elusive. "Finest light cavalry in the world," said Gen. George Crook, who fought Geronimo's braves.

Intermittent but savage conflicts crippled the red man. Samuel Colt's revolver, "which multiplied every soldier by six," offset daring Indian horsemanship. More devastating was the slaughter of the buffalo. It began in the late sixties with the building of the Union Pacific Railroad. Hide hunters took as many as three million buffalo a year. An 1883 expedition found fewer than 200 in all the West.

Destitute without the buffalo, decimated by wars, the Indian finally submitted to life on the reservation. Old men put away the sacred relics and refused to teach young men the tribal lore. "I am tired of fighting," lamented Chief Joseph of the Nez Percé. "It is cold and we have no blankets. The little children are freezing to death. My people, some of them, have run away to the hills and have no blankets, no food. No one knows where they are—perhaps freezing to death. I want to have time to look for my children and see how many of them I can find. Maybe I shall find them among the dead. Hear me, my chiefs. I am tired. My heart is sick and sad. From where the sun now stands I will fight no more forever."

Indians, sodbusters, cattlemen, forty-niners—men with the West in their eyes! They created the legend of the Lusty West. Its spell persists.



"MINERS PROSPECTING FOR GOLD" BY FREDERIC REMINGTON, 1887, EDWARD EBERSTADT & SONS

GOLD IN THEM THAR HILLS

BOYS, I BELIEVE I'VE FOUND A GOLD MINE!" James Marshall rushed into Sutter's Mill on January 24, 1848, carrying flakes of gold in the crown of his hat. The millwright had stumbled onto washings from California's Mother Lode, a vein of gold-bearing quartz stretching 150 miles along the western foothills of the Sierra Nevada. Marshall and his boss, feudal baron John A. Sutter, tried to keep the strike a secret. But soon the cry rose: "Gold! Gold! Gold from the American River." It touched off the greatest mining orgy in history.

"Gone to the Diggings"—shopkeepers hung signs on their doors, and overnight

San Francisco became a ghost town. Then gold-crazed Argonauts streamed into the harbor, shipments of bullion rattled down from the hills, and the town exploded into the metropolis of the Golden West. Prices, measured by the pinch of gold dust, soared. Saloons bulged with unshaven miners, dapper gamblers, and painted women. Bunco men swindled the greenhorn; gunmen downed the miner for his poke. In the first eight years of the Gold Rush, more than 1,000 murders rocked "the gayest, lightest hearted, most pleasure loving city of the western continent."

It was just as hectic at the diggings. Where streams had tumbled unnoticed down the Sierras, forty-niners swarmed. Camps were thrown together: shacks of juniper posts, potato sacks, and old shirts; smoky hovels of mud and stone. Prospectors argued over ore samples. Bummers cadged drinks. Those who wanted

Sutter's Fort was the hub of California's golden past. Here John Sutter ran his 146,000 acres, his tannery and distillery, his traffic with Russian fur traders. In 1841 he bought their Fort Ross (right), north of San Francisco. His millwright discovered gold at Coloma (cairn below marks site), and towns like Columbia mushroomed. Its Wells Fargo office (upper right) weighed some \$50,000,000. A flake of Sutter's gold (lower) balances beside an 82-ounce nugget at the Smithsonian Institution in Washington, D. C.



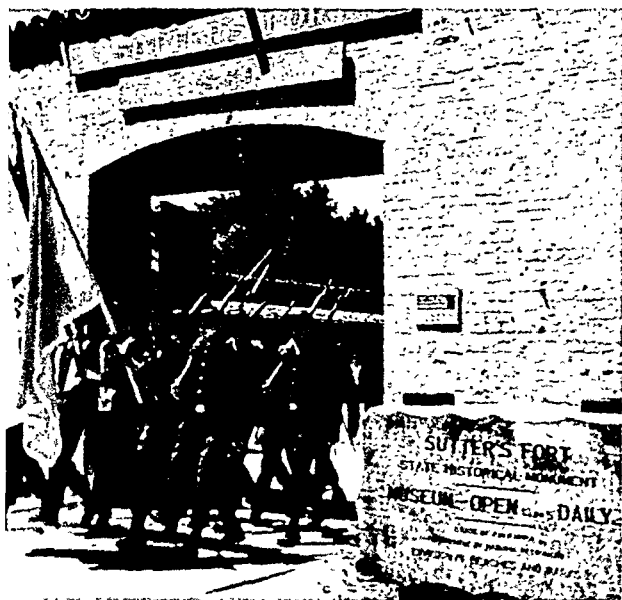
J. BAYLOR ROBERTS. NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF. AND (ABOVE) REDWOOD EMPIRE ASSOCIATION



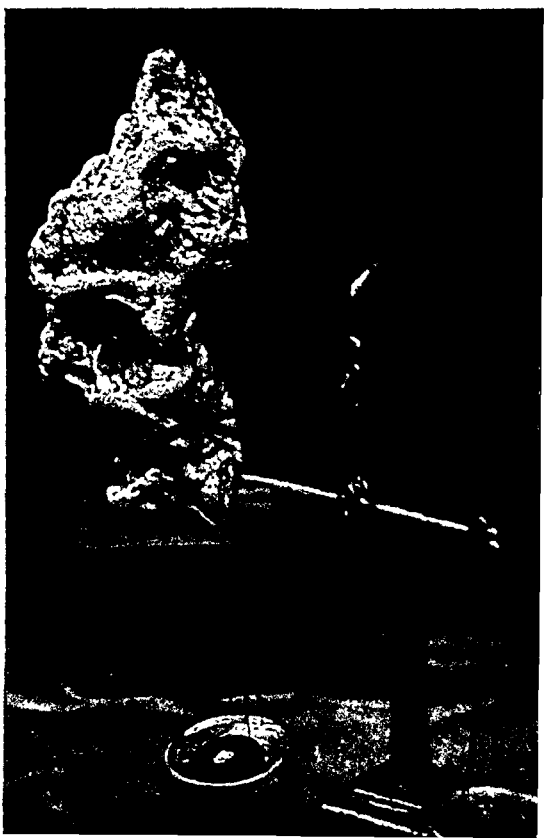
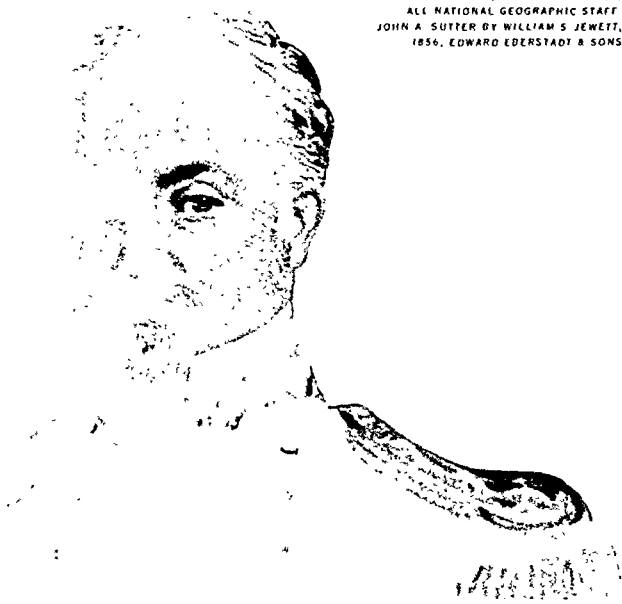
"I was everything," John Sutter recalled, "patriarch, priest, father, and judge." Persuading Mexico to give him a chunk of California, the Swiss-born "General" employed hundreds, lived and ruled like a king. "My best days," he lamented, "were just before the discovery of gold." It ruined him. Laborers deserted, squatters overran his land, his empire collapsed. He died poor, vainly seeking indemnity from Congress.

wholesome entertainment found "nothing to do but hang around the saloons, get drunk and fight, and lie out in the snow and die." Violence was rife. In one mining town 72 bodies reposed in the cemetery before the first citizen died of natural causes. Camps grew furiously, then dwindled or died with the gold supply. Sun-bleached buildings and rusted machinery are today's mementos of Gold Rush days.

More than a hundred camps flank the "Mother Lode Highway" (appropriately Cali-



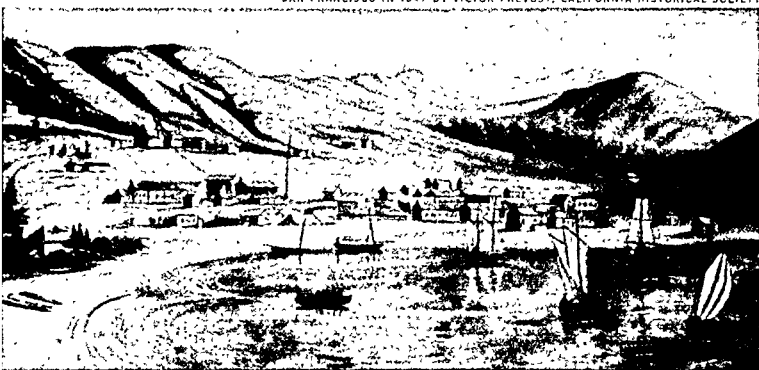
CLOCKWISE: DEAN CONGER,
MERLE SEVERY, VOLKMAR WENTZEL,
ALL NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF
JOHN A. SUTTER BY WILLIAM S. JEWETT,
1856, EDWARD EDENSTADT & SONS



THE LUSTY WEST

San Francisco drowned before the Gold Rush as a military post, mission, and village. *Californios* (right) called the settlement Yerba Buena for its good herb (mint). Frémont labeled the Golden Gate.

SAN FRANCISCO IN 1847 BY VICTOR PREVOST, CALIFORNIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY

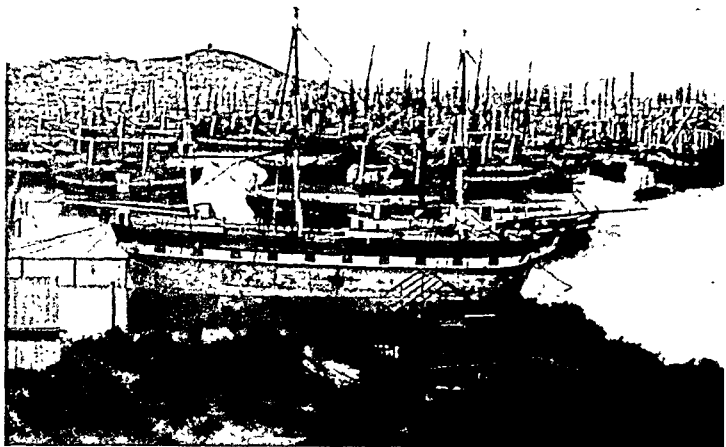


RIGHT FROM ROBERT K. HEIMANN'S TOBACCO AND AMERICANS, MCGRAW-HILL BOOK COMPANY

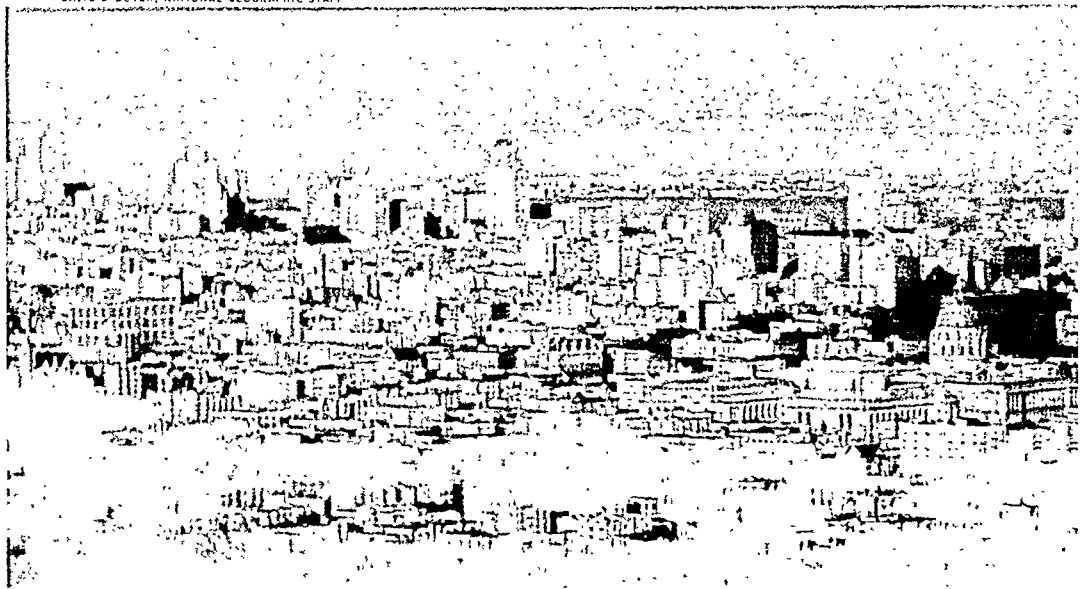


Ships rotted at 'Frisco in the early fifties when their crews followed the jaunty forty-niner (right) off to the gold diggings. Dragged ashore, the hulks served as warehouses, even lodgings.

From dance-hall bawd of Gold Rush days, from rubble heap after the 1906 earthquake and fire, San Francisco has flowered into a cultured beauty. Bay Bridge funnels traffic into Yerba Buena Island tunnel.



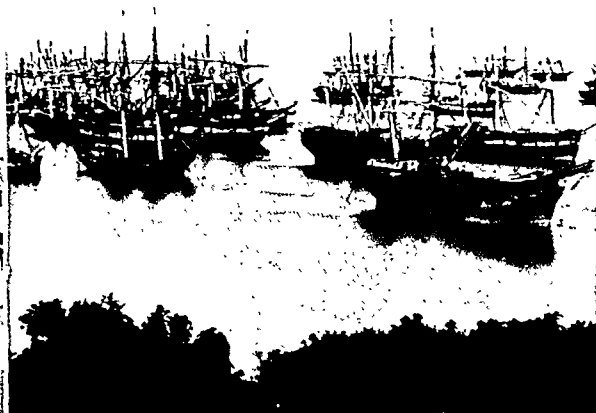
DAVID S. BOYER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF



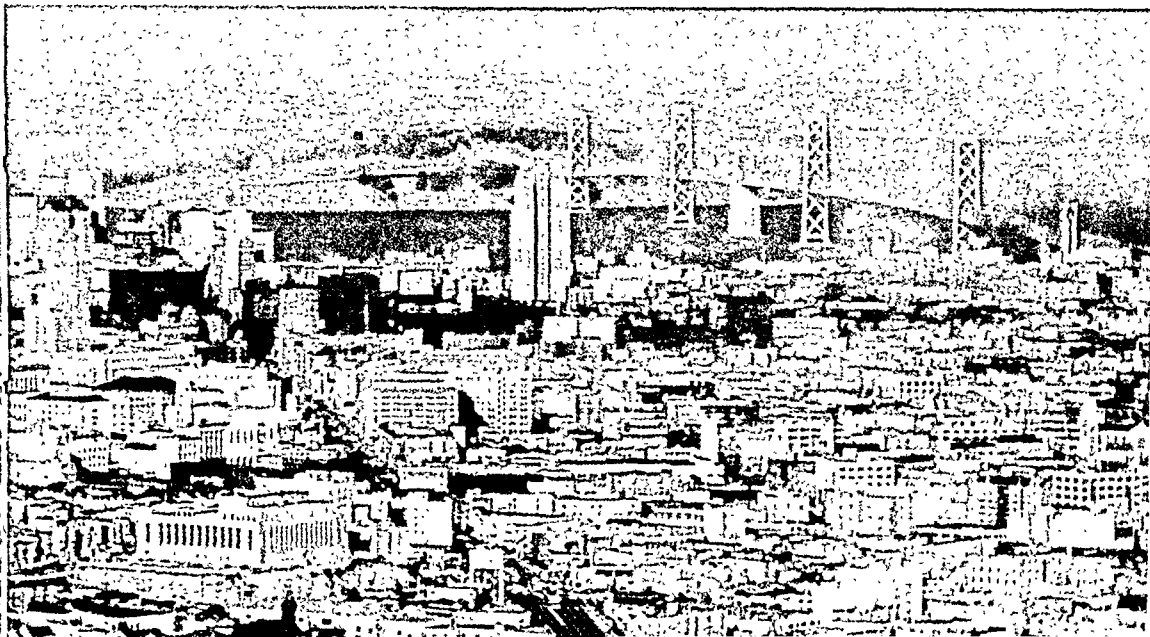
fornia Route 49) and draw sightseers as gold drew prospectors. At Coloma, the town that sprang to life around Sutter's Mill, Marshall in bronze points to the spot where he discovered gold. A little south sits storied Placerville. Once called "Hangtown" because of its "suspended sentences," it also helped a few businesses get off the ground. J. M. Studebaker built wheelbarrows for miners; Philip Armour ran a butcher shop, Mark Hopkins a grocery.

Off the highway lies Volcano, rich in ruins and memories. Its golden lava built the usual saloons, California's first public library, and the St. George Hotel, which still rolls out the welcome mat. Down 49 at Carson Hill tourists gape at the "glory hole," which produced the nation's largest nugget—a 195-pounder worth \$73,710. A mining shaft nearby descends almost a mile.

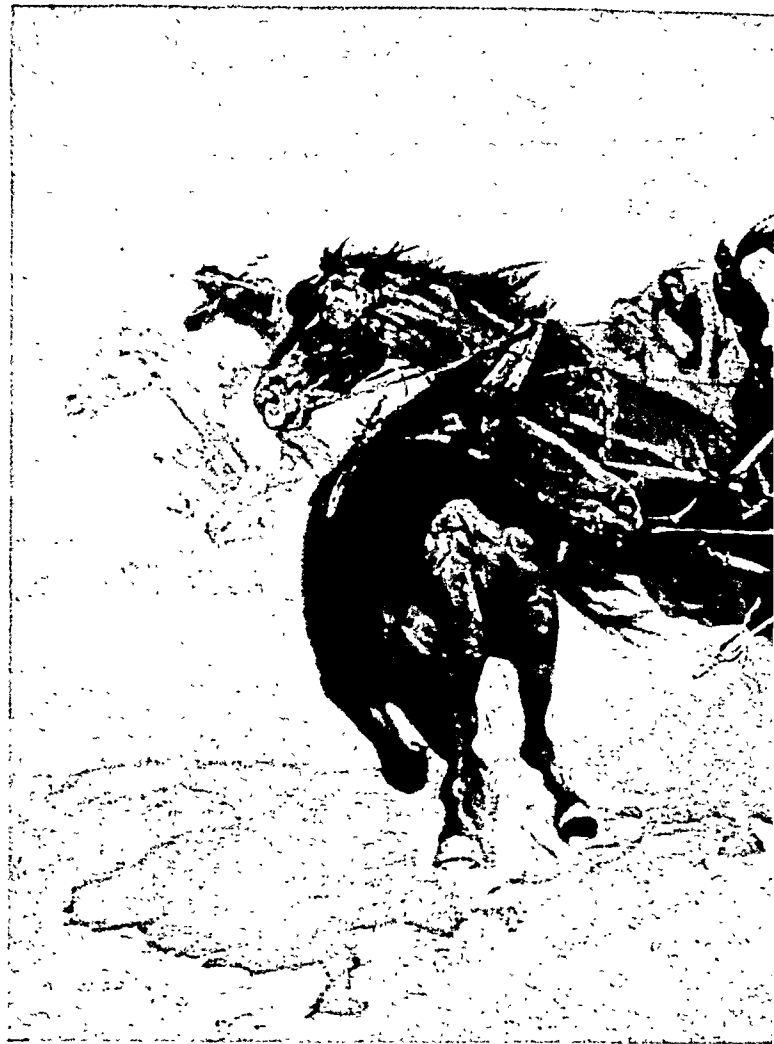
Mark Twain, on the lode a century ago, heard a yarn at Angels Camp in Calaveras County, then wrote about the "Celebrated Jumping Frog." It catapulted him to fame and inspired the town's International Frog Olympics. Fellow writer



SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION AND (RIGHT) STATE STREET BANK AND TRUST COMPANY, BOSTON



Hoofs thunder, a savage shrieks, and the "nigh leader" stumbles, pierced by Indian arrows. Downing the lead horse on the left hopelessly snarled a team. In the 1860's scenes like this bloodied Apache Pass in Arizona. Stage passengers wore side arms and a "wide-awake hat." Drivers rode for triple pay. Wheel ruts dug by the Butterfield line still scar the earth. At the east end of the pass crumbling Fort Bowie keeps lonely vigil. Amid mesquite and buckthorn lurk specters of Cochise and Geronimo.



Bret Harte immortalized Roaring Camp nearby, also Poker Flat and Fiddletown.

Best preserved of California's mining camps is Columbia, "Gem of the Southern Mines." Saloons, a firehouse and school, ruins of Chinese stores and old fandango halls survive near yawning pits which yielded some \$87,000,000. There children can ride in an authentic, four-horse Wells Fargo stagecoach—and they don't have to worry about Black Bart. Bard of the bandits, he robbed 28 coaches single-handed and sometimes left a calling card signed "Black Bart, the PO 8" (poet):

*Let come what will I'll try it on
My condition can't be worse
And if there's money in that box
'Tis munny in my purse.*

Indians preyed on stage lines too. At a Utah station they killed a bald-headed agent. Because he had "a good growth of whiskers on his chin, they scalped that."



Tombstone, powder-burned and bloodstained but "too tough to die," lives on in the Bird Cage Theater (above). The 1880's also come alive in the Crystal Palace Saloon and Cochise County Courthouse. Each October "Hellorado" gunmen ape Wyatt Earp in the battle at the OK Corral.

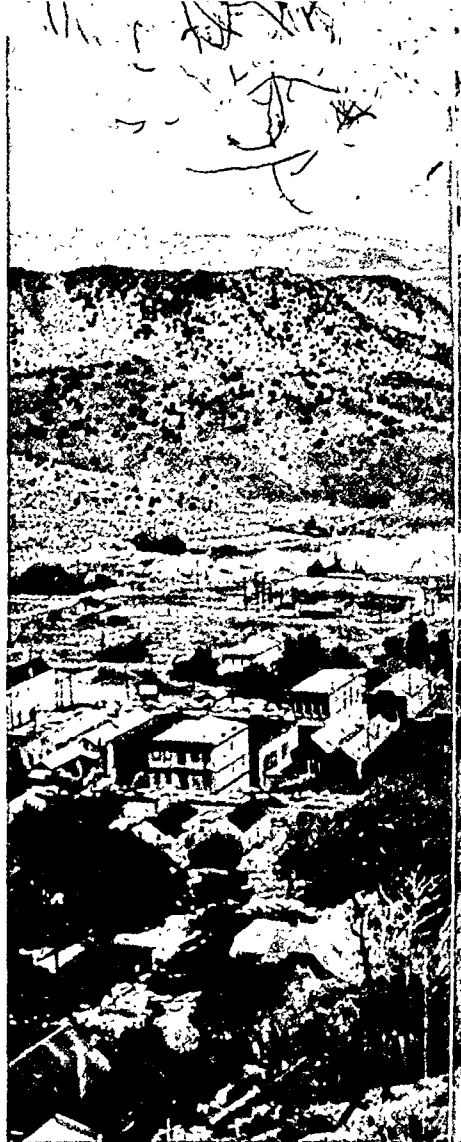
Cap pistols shoot it out on Tombstone's Boot Hill (right). "Legally hanged" on marker doesn't include one lynched.

The toy stagecoach at left doesn't leave Frontier Museum in Custer State Park, but this youngster's Colt .45 would protect it if it did! In nearby Custer, South Dakota, stands a log cabin (now a museum) built in 1875 by troops who tried to keep miners out of the Black Hills of the Sioux.





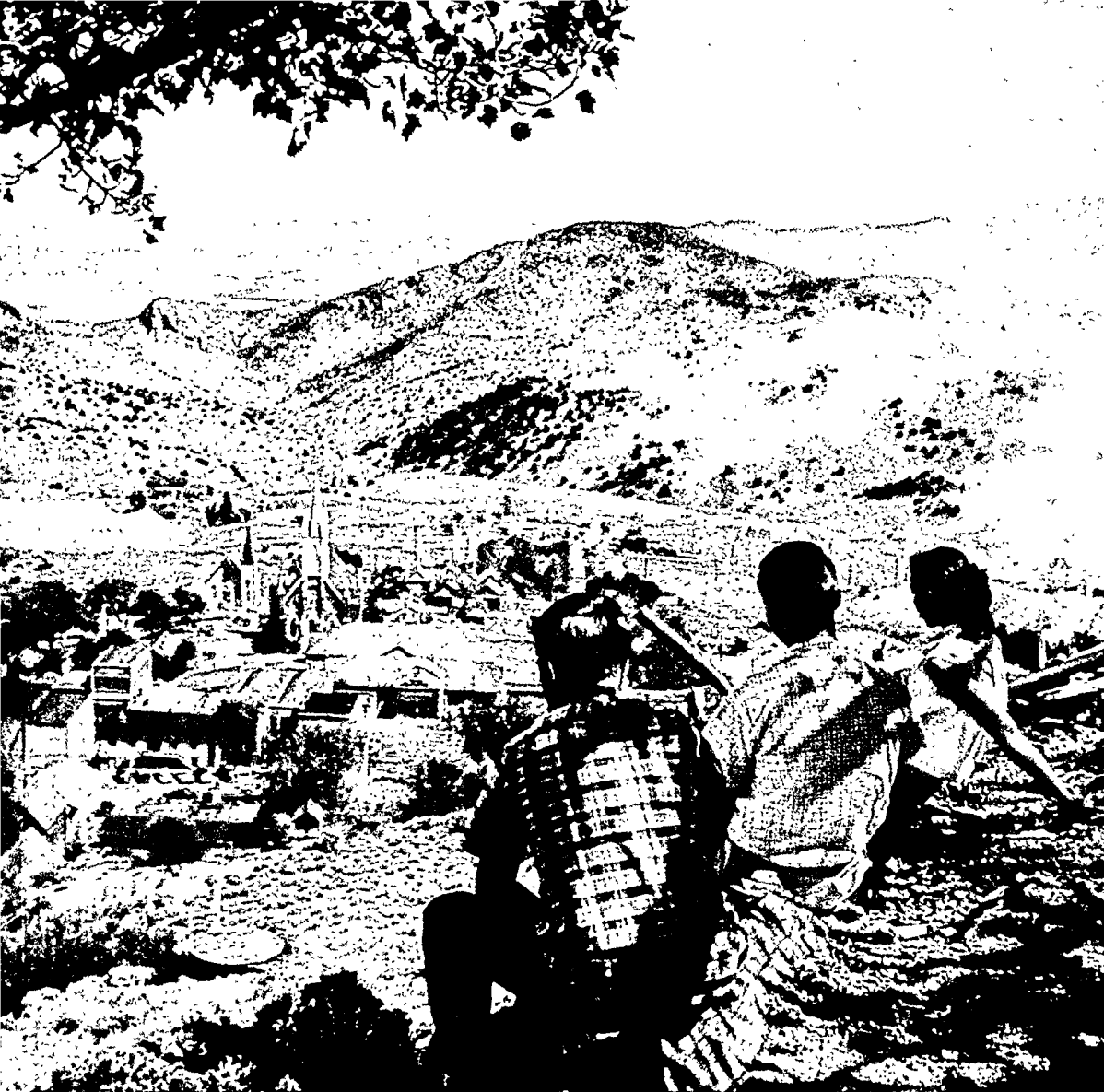
Virginia City, Nevada, atop 600 miles of Comstock tunnels, boomed like no other Wild West town. A ground squirrel made the strike. In 1859 prospectors panned its diggings and the rush was on. Today the spire of St. Mary's-in-the-Mountains rises above weathered buildings filled with relics. Visitors tour an old mine (above).



to come. In 1873 miners struck the Big Bonanza—a 54-foot-wide section of the lode filled with some \$200,000,000 in gold and silver. Virginia City reigned as Queen of the Comstock, housing 30,000 free spenders. Its nabobs showered gold double eagles on favorite actresses. One dropped \$38,000 on the flip of a faro card.

Today sightseers find Virginia City's old saloons and houses of chance still operating, and the pretentious but unpainted mansions of bonanza kings clinging to Mount Davidson. They visit the *Territorial Enterprise*, "first newspaper in the howling wilderness of Nevada." In Piper's Opera House they walk the dance floor that was mounted on springs so stomping miners would not destroy it. They tour old mining works, and in nearby Carson City inspect a full-scale model of a mine at the Nevada State Museum, once a mint that coined Comstock metal.

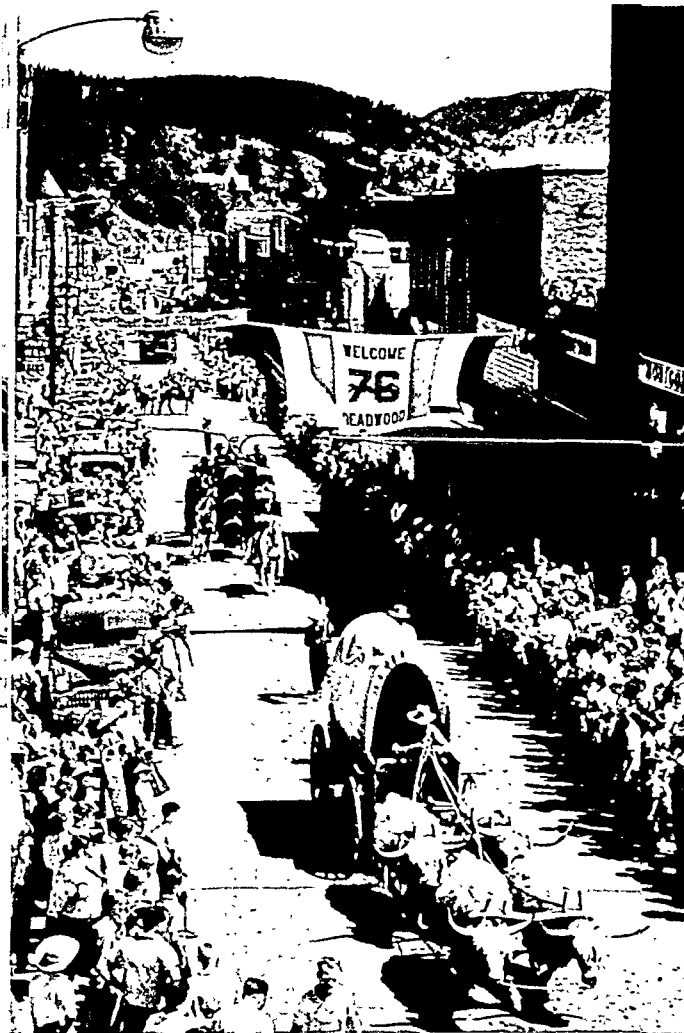
Colorado prospectors found gold near Pikes Peak, and 100,000 "fifty-niners"



MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

rushed to one of mining's greatest fiascoes. But fortunes in silver waited at Leadville and at Aspen, today a skiing resort. Cripple Creek blossomed on a "\$300,-000,000 cow pasture"; it boasted 46 brokerage houses, 14 newspapers, 70 saloons. Driving through its satellite camps the motorist is never out of sight of ore dumps, shafts, hoists, and crumbling buildings.

Accidental birth, furious growth, decay or death—that's the history of Colorado's Tin Cup, Crystal City, Gold Park, Jimtown, Sunshine, and Fairplay. In 1858 gold was "dug with a hatchet in Cherry Creek and washed out into a frying pan"—and Denver was born. Central City laid a path of silver bricks for President Grant. The bricks are gone, but a well-preserved mining town greets today's tourists. Narrow, saloon-lined streets guide them to the old opera house, where each summer the University of Denver sponsors its famous play festival.



Calamity Jane ("Scorn Martha Jane Canary and you court calamity") dressed, drank, and fought like a gunman. Belle of the Black Hills, she haunts Deadwood, South Dakota. Each August it revives the gold rush spirit of 1876.

"Mellerdrammers" delight visitors to the opera house in Virginia City, Montana. Scene of many a "drygulching" which stocked its Boot Hill, the old mining town relives its past in the Bale of Hay Saloon and Wells Fargo Coffee House.

Until the 1870's the Black Hills of Dakota escaped the prospector's pick. Then an expedition under Gen. George Armstrong Custer confirmed the rumors of gold. Failing to stem the tide, the government threw open the area to those willing to risk attack by the Sioux. Some 15,000 miners streamed in, and the Sioux went on the warpath. The Indians were finally tamed; but the miners went wild—gold in Deadwood Gulch! Wide-open, ramshackle Deadwood shook with a great spasm of lawlessness: "There the faro games were wilder, the hurdy-gurdy dance halls noisier, the street brawls more common, than in any other western town."

Today sightseers stroll Deadwood's Main Street with the ghosts of Wild Bill Hickok, Calamity Jane, Poker Alice, Deadwood Dick, and Crooked Nose Jack McCall. Here youngsters in cowboy suits stalk phantoms of Sam Bass and Joel Collins, fugitives from another frontier—the dry and dusty world of the cattleman.



RAY MANLEY, WESTERN WAYS LEFT: BATES LITTLEHALES, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER, AND BETTMANN ARCHIVE

Virginia City, Montana, like its sister city in Nevada, enjoys a travel boom a century after miners struck gold, strung up outlaws, and paid \$150 for a sack of flour. Rank's Drugstore (above), oldest active store in the state, displays merchandise of the 1860's.

CATTLEMAN'S

IT ALL STARTED IN TEXAS. There roamed the cowboy, the cow pony, the longhorn steer. Put them together and you have the makings of the cattleman's empire.

Ancestors of the longhorn came to the New World with the Spaniards 450 years ago. Strays grazed along the Nueces and Rio Grande, multiplied, and mixed with scrub cattle brought in by American settlers. Horns lengthened, the body grew rangier, and by the Civil War there was your longhorn—tall, bony, coarse-haired and slab-sided, tail dragging the ground, short on looks but long on endurance.

The cow pony, too, was a Spanish stray (*mesteño*) living like a wild animal. Mustang, *yanquis* called him. Small and scrubby, sure-footed and fleet, he'd run all day and kick his rider's hat in the air at night.

The cowboy grew up in the land that Stephen Austin pioneered. From the *vaquero* (Mexican cowherd) he learned to cut out and rope; from the mounted Plains Indian, to fight at a gallop. Before long the tough men of the "Texas breed" were ready to ride into the nation's folklore.

At the end of the Civil War more than five million longhorns roamed the Texas chaparral, hardly worth roping and branding. Then Joseph G. McCoy, an audacious livestock shipper, found a way to connect the \$4 steer in Texas with the \$40 market in the booming North. In 1867 he built pens and loading chutes at Abilene and invited Texans to drive their herds here for shipment on the Kansas Pacific Railroad.

McCoy opened the floodgates. In two decades Texas drovers "pointed north" ten million longhorns, aiming for Kansas railheads or the open range.

First the North Star, then hoof-carved paths guided the long drives. "Cowboy, roll out!" A dozen weathered cowpunchers



EMPIRE

would rub the dust from their eyes, wash down beans with coffee, mount cayuses, and drift their 2,500 cattle toward the next water hole. With them went the temperamental cook in the chuck wagon and a youthful apprentice ("Little Joe, the wrangler") who tended the extra horses.

Fording the Red River into Indian Territory (Oklahoma), the drovers paid tolls to the tribes or saw them drive off part of the herd. At night, singing soothed cattle made jittery by distant heat lightning:

*Oh, it's bacon and beans most every day,
I'd as soon be a-eatin' prairie hay.*

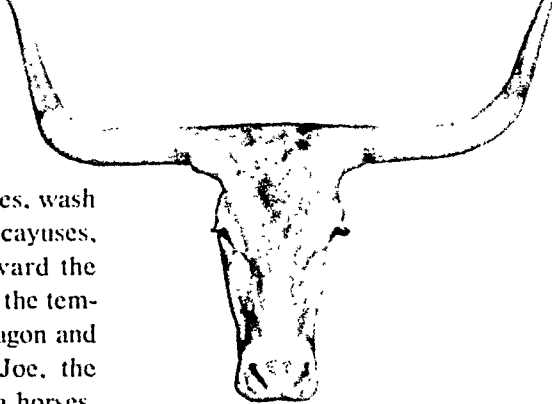
On to the Kansas plains they plodded. Mirages danced in the sun, and farmers brandished guns and strung barbed wire.

Not all the long drives ended at a Kansas cattle ear headed for Chicago. Some longhorns went to feed army garrisons and reservation Indians. Others stocked grasslands where the buffalo once roamed.

MEN RUSHED WEST to get rich on cattle. Easterners, Englishmen, even Australians bought dubious range rights, slapped their brand on a bunch of longhorns, and were on their way to becoming cattle kings. Speculation ran wild and profits were enormous—"riotous feastings on the rim of the crater of ruin."

Ruin came in the mid-eighties. Cattle overgrazed the grasslands, died in drought and blizzard, glutted the market. The stream of longhorns dwindled to a dribble and the cattleman's empire faded.

But not that "ordinary, bowlegged human," the cowboy. He mows hay on a tractor, "rides fences" in a jeep, and rounds up the herd from a helicopter. And he's still the wholesome hero of millions of Americans. On the dude ranch he puts the



Trails from Texas were the cattleman's highways to northern buyers and open range in the 1860-80's. Bandit-infested Shawnee Trail, guarded by Fort Gibson and Fort Smith, led to Missouri and Kansas railheads. The Chisholm Trail met the railroad at Abilene. Today that beaten path can be seen by tourists "pointing north" on U. S. 81 in Oklahoma. The Western Trail funneled longhorns past Fort Griffin (now ruins) to Dodge City, where "Hands up" was as common as "Hands off." The Goodnight-Loving Trail led to summer grasslands.

unsteadyest rider on the steadyest "hoss." He visits some 500 towns a year with the rodeo. At extravaganzas such as Frontier Days at Cheyenne, Wyoming, and Oregon's Pendleton Roundup, visitors rise in their seats with the broncobuster, groan when he "smells corral dust," gasp while he bulldogs a steer to the ground.

Texas still leads the nation in beeves, but now its 9¼ million are Herefords, Shorthorns, and Anguses heavy with porterhouse and prime ribs. King Ranch, larger than Rhode Island, breeds the Santa Gertrudis, cross between the Shorthorn and India's sacred, fever-resisting Brahman. Missing is the tough old longhorn;

Roundup! Cowboys still lasso and throw 'em, as here on the huge Waggoner Ranch near Vernon, Texas. But the downed critter is a Hereford not a longhorn, and butane heats the branding

504



crossbreeding for tender steaks almost refined him into oblivion. In 1927 government agents combed south Texas to build herds visitors see at Wichita Mountains Wildlife Refuge in Oklahoma and Fort Niobrara Game Reserve in Nebraska.

Fire and progress have destroyed most of the cattle kingdom's shanties and false-front buildings. But at Langtry, Texas, Judge Roy Bean's "hall of justice"—the Jersey Lilly Saloon—still stands. He proclaimed himself the "Law West of the Pecos," fined culprits a round of drinks for the crowd, and pined for actress Lily Langtry. Lincoln, New Mexico, still echoes the Lincoln County War. In 1878

irons. In the 1870's, heyday of the open range, one roundup might cover 5,000 square miles. Each rancher cut out cows that bore his mark and burned his brand on their bleating calves.

505

B. ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER





MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

rival cattle barons ended it with a three-day gunfight in the streets. The long drive, the roaring six-shooter, and the Indian ambush are captured for visitors in art collections at Oklahoma's Gilcrease Institute in Tulsa and Woolaroc Museum near Bartlesville; at the Amon G. Carter Memorial Museum in Fort Worth, Texas, "Where the West Begins"; at the Whitney Gallery in Cody, Wyoming; at Montana's State Museum in Helena and C. M. Russell Gallery in Great Falls.

Indestructible are the legends of rip-roaring Kansas cowtowns. "At this writing," warned the *Topeka Commonwealth* in 1868, "Hell is now in session in Abilene." Such sessions erupted at Ellsworth, Newton, Wichita, Caldwell, and Dodge City as those towns grew along the westward-nosing railroad tracks.

Looking for a year's fun in a week, Texas drovers warmed their stomachs with whisky and their feet with dancing, shot at the stars when happy and to kill when angry. Lawmen like the Earps and Mastersons kept what little peace there was. Often the last word in an argument was an epitaph: "T. Brown Died 1875 of Lead Poisoning." Killers often went free. But not when "Hanging Judge" Parker presided. At Fort Smith, Arkansas, he hanged 88 badmen. Visitors shudder at his gallows, which accommodated a dozen at once.

When the last bawling longhorns trailed to Dodge City, acres of wheat ringed the city, and hogs were rooting up prairie sod. By 1888 the cowtown was so prudish that it fined a woman \$5 for "unlawfully, feloniously" wearing "male attire." The farmer—moral, marrying, and permanent—had taken over.

Dodge City, Queen of the Cowtowns, gloried as the "Beautiful Bibulous Babylon of the Frontier." It slaked the thirst of Indian fighters from nearby Fort Dodge and shipped hides during the Kansas buffalo slaughter. It boomed as the world's largest cattle market, 1875-84, when Texans trailed in more than a million head to its railyard. Cowboys stampeded to the Long Branch Saloon, and some stayed forever in Boot Hill. On a rebuilt section of Front Street (left) visitors see a replica of the beat patrolled by Wyatt Earp and Bat Masterson.

Below: Cowtown bullets find their mark, and gunmen die with their boots on. The commotion, caught on canvas by Charles M. Russell, who vividly chronicled the heyday of the Wild West, could have been over a girl, a poker hand, or a lingering Civil War grudge.

WHEN GUNS SPEAK DEATH SETTLES DISPUTES BY CHARLES M. RUSSELL, THOMAS GILCREASE INSTITUTE OF AMERICAN HISTORY AND ART, TULSA

REWARD

(\$5,000.00)

Reward for the capture, dead or alive,
of one Wm. Wright, better known as

"BILLY THE KID"

Age, 18. Height, 5 feet, 3 inches.
Weight, 125 lbs. Light hair, blue
eyes and even features. He is
the leader of the worst band of
desperadoes the Territory has
ever had to deal with. The above
reward will be paid for his capture
or positive proof of his death.

JIM DALTON, Sheriff.

DEAD OR ALIVE!
"BILLY THE KID"

"Hello, Bob," said Billy the Kid. He gave the jailer both barrels and leisurely left the Courthouse at Lincoln (below). Each August the New Mexico cowtown re-enacts the 1881 escape. They say William Bonney (not "Wm. Wright" as on the poster) had a notch on his gun for every year of his life when Sheriff Pat Garrett ended it at 21.



LINCOLN COUNTY COURTHOUSE STATE MONUMENT, NEW MEXICO STATE TOURIST BUREAU

SODBUSTER'S EMPIRE

BEGINNING IN THE 1860's, men edged, then cascaded onto the Great Plains, fired with the hope of a new start in life. Government grants, sales by railroads, squatting—all helped satisfy land hunger. Inexorably (and illogically to the cattleman) the sodbuster ploughed up grass that was right side up in the first place, strung barbed wire, and brought women to the Wild West.

He soon found reports of the good life exaggerated. Droughts withered crops; blizzards froze livestock; grasshoppers ate everything but the mortgage. Dust on the horizon could be a twister—or Indians. The drabness, the fear, the endless toil, the sod house dripping yesterday's rain exacted a toll from the farmer's wife.

Inventors supplied new plows and reapers, flour mills and windmills. The sodbuster learned to dry farm, to irrigate, to plant hardy wheat. He and his sturdy wife brought up children without doctors, taught them without schools. They meant to put down roots, and did, in the domain of the fierce, nomadic Plains Indian.

The Pioneer Woman (left) in Ponca City, Oklahoma, stands as a bronze memorial to the homesteader's partner. Cook, mother, midwife, she stood by him as he dented the wilderness with his corn patch. Acreage came easy. When Indian lands in Oklahoma were thrown open in 1889 (upper right), thousands staked claims in a day. But hard years followed in a "soddy" (lower). Today travelers near Beatrice, Nebraska, can see a frontier cabin and its furnishings at Homestead National Monument, site of one of the first claims under the 1862 act.





The battle was glory to the Plains Indian and had the ritual of a medieval joust. To touch the enemy—a coup—meant more than to scalp, though the Cheyenne settled for either when attacking a wagon train (left). Plains finery (above) symbolizes the Indian today.

feet until they died. Victorio fled army columns in grim chases that totaled 90,000 miles before he was shot down. Geronimo, raiding between drinking bouts, slaughtered scores before he led the last of the Apaches to the reservation in 1886.

Kiowa, Comanche, and Cheyenne rose against the reservation system in 1874 and launched the Red River War. They plundered Texas and Colorado, then fled to the searing Staked Plain. Pursuing soldiers became crazed with thirst; some opened their own veins in search of moisture. After 14 battles the repentant red men straggled back to Indian Territory. Relative calm came to the southern plains.

To the north the Sioux defended their land with a ferocity that checked the white tide. In 1866 Red Cloud led his warriors against soldiers in Wyoming, hunting ground of the Sioux. First he sniped, picking off woodcutters and sentries. When 81 men under Capt. William Fetterman sallied out to even the score, Red Cloud sprang an ambush that wiped them out. Then he hurled thousands of warriors against a handful of men commanded by Capt. James Powell. Wave after wave crumpled before the defenders. Red Cloud lost hundreds of braves learning of the

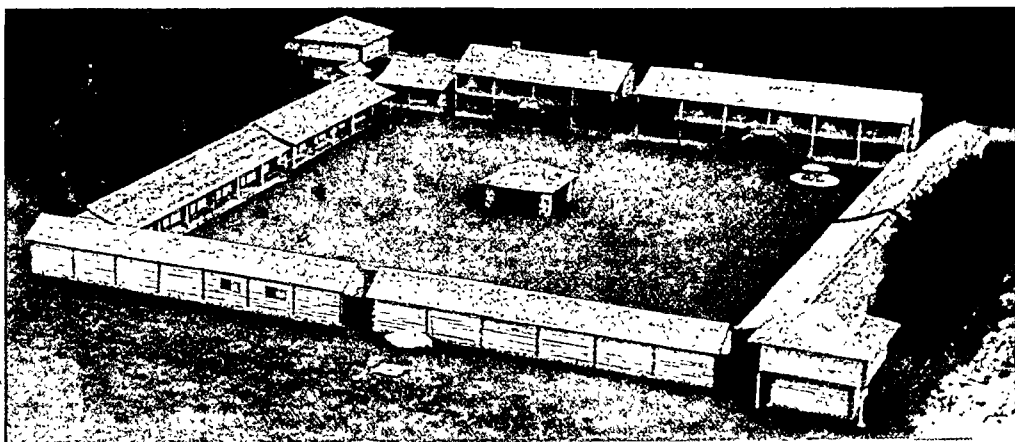


MERLE SEVERY NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF, AND (BOTTOM) OKLAHOMA PLANNING AND RESOURCES BOARD



Fort Larned, Kansas (left), rose in 1859 to guard the Santa Fe Trail. A fine example of a frontier post, it recalls when hundreds of wagons would head west in a day.

Fort Gibson, Oklahoma (below), helped tame the Osage Indians. Visitors to the state park see a replica of the 1824 stockade, once the westernmost U. S. army post.



The Growing Giant

LONG BEFORE the West was won, prophets hailed a new era, even gave it a name: The Age of Enterprise. Filled with the thunder and lightning of business and industry, 19th century America smelled of smoke, coke, coal, oil, dust, sage, and pine. What had happened? A rich continent, free of political shackles, had been thrown open for development. It seemed as if every one-man shop with power from river or brook had suddenly grown into a factory. And many were installing steam engines, to operate come high water or low.

Along with pioneer industrialists came inventors. One and all had something to ease the labor of the man who earned his keep by the sweat of his brow. Who could have guessed that an obscure kettlemaker in Eddyville, Kentucky, was to become the first man in the world to turn dull iron ore into bright steel in a matter of minutes by blowing cold air into the molten mass? William "Crazy" Kelly's invention of the mid-1800's, known later as the Bessemer process, revolutionized an industry. And what prophet could have foretold that a resident physician of the New York City Alms House was to perfect the common one-piece pin, and to design a machine for sticking pins into paper folds? Dr. John I. Howe's invention was a marvel of the 19th century. What seers could have guessed that in a hundred rising cities, in a thousand hamlets and crossroad villages, unknown tinkers

would devise plans or formulas for flying machines, digging machines, sewing machines, threshing machines; would figure out recipes to harden or soften materials, even to change the nature of a thing—as wood into paper. Many of these men were downright crackpots, fanatic about their visions. Yet an astonishing number of them had that divine spark of originality that made their creations work!

In 1790 the United States Patent Office opened for business. No fewer than a dozen inventors—"all from Connecticut," said one account—waited at the door. And as the years rolled by, urgent dreamers from every state, from every territory offered all manner of new things: posthole diggers, apple parers by the dozen, writing machines, a steam carriage, a combination churn-and-rocking chair. The man in the Patent Office might scratch his head in wonder, but he was polite. It seemed almost everybody got his patent.

U. S. Patent No. 1 went to Samuel Hopkins for an improved method of "making Pot ash and Pearl ash" from wood ashes. These were ingredients for glass making. Mr. Hopkins wasn't the first to profit from America's vast woodlands. Nor the last.

PRODUCTS OF THE FOREST had been among the first exports from the colonies. Not for nothing did the District of Maine put a pine tree emblem on its flag. At South Berwick in 1634 colonists built a dam and harnessed the Salmon Falls River so it swished an up-and-down saw—America's first sawmill. A son of Pilgrim John Alden ran a sawmill on Maine's Saco River. Another early timber baron, Sir William Pepperrell of Louisbourg fame, appeared at his log landings in a scarlet coat. I like to think that from this influence stemmed the loggers' liking for bright red sashes, shirts, Mackinaws, and stockings.

Colonists found the all-covering forest both friend and enemy. From it came wood for houses, ships, and fuel. Yet marauding Indians lurked in its sinister depths. Also it kept the soil dark and damp so grain couldn't grow. Thus for at least two centuries the man who erected a sawmill and cleared the ground was reckoned a public benefactor.

"Daylight in the swamp!"—classic morning cry of the logging boss—signaled the time to start chopping. And chop and saw they did, the generations of woodsmen, properly called loggers. In 300 years they hewed out what was called The Big Clearing from eastern Maine to western Oregon. Barring the plains, where trees were too sparse to count, they cut a swath 3,000 miles long.

Yet this mighty industry did not hit full stride until independence was won. England's monarchs forbade the cutting of pines and "okes" suitable for navy masts. Royal representatives branded these trees with a broad arrow. But the Revolution ended that practice. Ambitious men bought the former crown lands by the millions of acres. Ingenious men perfected—and patented—devices like circular saws, cant dogs, sleds, double-bitted axes, log turners, chain saws, and a thousand more items right down to the method of using gamma rays to determine the density of wood in a tree.

Perhaps the best known inventor in the lumber industry was Joe Peavey, a Maine blacksmith. He devised the improved cant dog, made a patent sketch of it, but got sidetracked in a Bangor saloon. When he revived, he found another

blacksmith had signed and entered his patent application. Nevertheless, "peavey" has long been generic for the riverman's logrolling tool.

Names of outstanding lumbermen rise from the forest of timber merchants. William Bingham was one. In 1793 he bought some two million acres of northeastern white pine and spruce. For more than a century woodsmen hacked away at it, driving logs from the "Penobscot Million" downriver to Bangor, Maine, and from the "Kennebec Million" down to Augusta.

In their urgency for timber Penobscot and Kennebec loggers sometimes crossed axes. Usually they fought for the sheer fun of it. Gouging and ear chewing were highly thought of.

But you couldn't kill a lumberjack with a poleax. Rough, tough, lusty, he lived in a tree and hung by his tail, it was said. He was immune to disease and slept soundly when the thermometer was "two feet below zero." He was a catfooted man with steel calks in his boots who chased logs downstream. Throw a bar of soap into the water and he would ride the bubbles to shore.

He was an exaggeration but no myth, a pioneer fit to follow in the tracks of the explorer and trapper. When a forest had been cut, he would shoulder his ax and hit out over the next hump.

The timber line moved steadily west and sawdust cities flourished as the forests fell. Glens Falls, New York, and Williamsport, Pennsylvania, were logging capitals in the 1860's. But within a decade Saginaw, Michigan, was the lumber colossus with 74 sawmills. Cutting in Wisconsin and Minnesota closed out what some call the golden age of lumberjacks. By 1900 loggers were leaping the bare Dakotas to harvest the heavily timbered Northwest. From Idaho into



LOGGING'S ROARING ERA
LIVES ON IN LEGENDARY PAUL BUNYAN;
PAUL R. HOFFMASTER

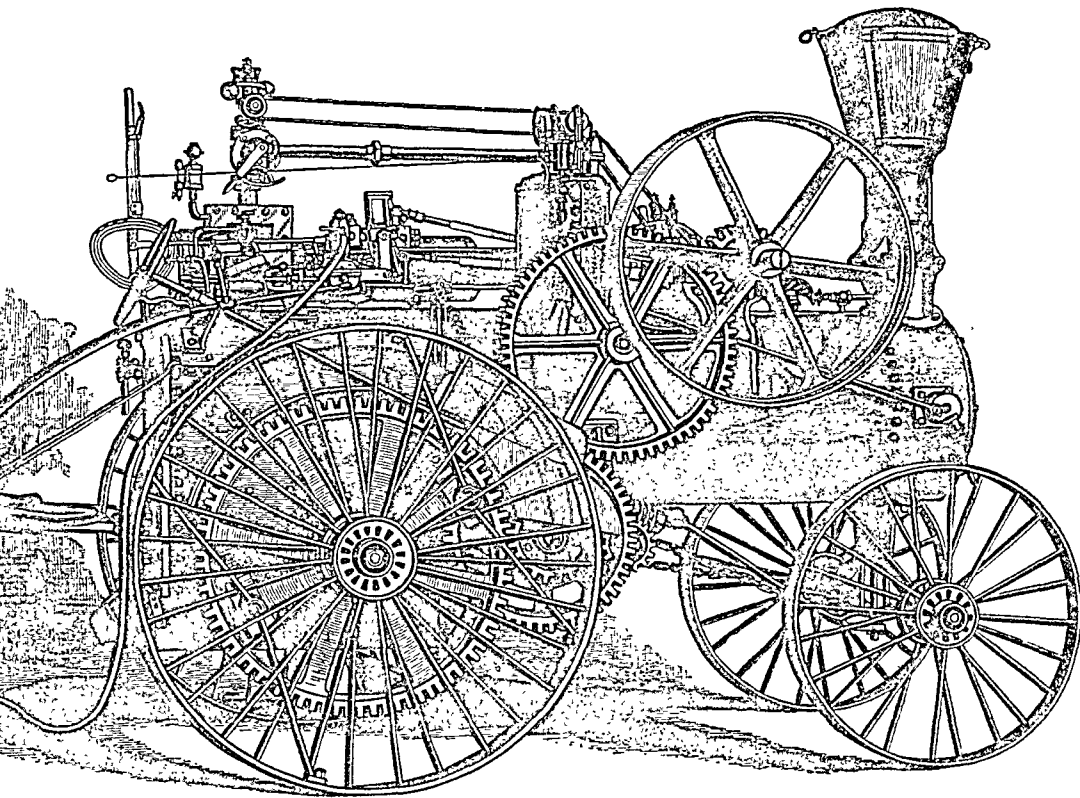
THE GROWING GIANT

the Sierras stretched a sea of pine. On the banks of the Columbia and around Puget Sound grew Douglas fir so thick a man could hardly swing an ax. Near Humboldt Bay in California towered monstrous redwoods. A logger wasn't likely to forget the first time he saw one fall. "Tim-berrr!" There is a dry tearing as though the clouds are being ripped apart, and the swishing undertone sounds like a hurricane being born. A long rumbling crash booms in your ears and shakes the ground.

You could tell a logging town by the mile upon mile of logs in lake or river waiting their turn at the murderous band saws. One of these glittering steel ribbons could and did make 500,000 feet of boards in a day. Summer or winter made little difference, for some thoughtful lumberman had pushed a pipe carrying live steam into a frozen log pond. Lo, the hot pond was born! Night or day it was pretty much the same, for refuse burners billowed fire and smoke for months on end, often for years. In the deepest woods, burners gleamed and winked like lost stars in the night, all because barns and houses had to be built and the northern plains fenced, and in a hurry too. All America was in a hurry.


In 1909 American sawmills made 44½ billion feet of lumber, an all-time peak. Then consumption started to fall. The cities that were first built of lumber had come to be built of almost everything else. Instead of public benefactor, the lumberman suddenly became a public enemy, accused of leaving nothing but stumps in his wake. It was a grossly unfair charge. Certainly the logger left stumps; he also left farms and ranches, towns and cities.

In logging's red-eyed heyday fortunes billowed and sometimes vanished within a decade: Poor boy today; tomorrow a plug hat, gold-headed cane, and a cellar of champagne. One lumber baron enclosed his estate near Waters, Michigan, with a



wall built of champagne empties. The house has gone but the wall still stands. Mark it well for it spells an era.

With the Growing Giant housed, lumbermen agreed they should not work the forest as a mine, then abandon it. The woodland was a farm which would yield crops again and again, so long as men protected it from decay, blowdown, and fire. Public indifference and carelessness had made fire prevention a gigantic task in the old days. Lumberjacks said the Peshtigo fire in Wisconsin, raging the same night that Chicago burned, bred a thousand moosebirds—dead loggers reincarnated as Canada jays. Happier landmarks of America's oldest industry are the millions of acres of registered tree farms on once-abandoned timber cuttings. Let the wide-ranging tourist go see for himself. New crops of timber supply an industry which technology has changed until lumber is merely one of a thousand items manufactured from cellulose and lignin, the components of wood.

EARLY ALL INNOVATIONS, it seems, must be preceded by prophets. One of the greatest, and most disregarded, was cantankerous Oliver Evans, born in Delaware in 1755. When he was 17 he learned about the steam engine that James Watt had perfected in England. Devising ways to use it engrossed Evans's genius the rest of his life.

Right after the Revolution he petitioned Pennsylvania and Maryland for exclusive rights on his "improvements in flour mills and steam carriages." As a prophet of steam railroads Evans went to the top of his class.

He envisioned a railway between New York City and Philadelphia "for the transportation of heavy produce, merchandise, and passengers on carriages drawn by steam engines." He suggested paths for the wheels to run on, "with a rail between them, set on posts, to guide the tongue of the carriage so that they might travel by night as well as by day." Critics yawned and snickered. Evans talked on and on of parallel logs on the ground, flattened on top and with a three-inch plank pinned to them. A wooden railway, he said, would require less upkeep than a turnpike. People could safely travel 15 miles an hour, 300 miles a day.

Poor old Evans, blower of bubbles, rider of rainbows. The good old stagecoach, Mr. Evans, will never be supplanted. Besides, if the Lord had intended us to ride in steam carriages, Sir, he would have invented them.

Evans never wavered in his belief that steam engines would pull carriages over rails. "But," he reflected, "one step in a generation is all we can hope for. If the present generation shall adopt canals, the next may try the railway with horses, and the third generation use the steam carriage."

The steam carriage would not have to wait nearly so long. In 1815, four years before Evans died, New Jersey granted John Stevens of Hoboken permission to build a railroad across that state. Failing to pry capital out of complacent men, he designed and built in 1825—at the age of 76!—a steam locomotive, then ran it on a circular track in the yard of his home.

The snorting toy worked. The dam of apathy and ignorance burst. In 1827 the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad was chartered. A year later old Charles Carroll, sole surviving signer of the Declaration of Independence, leaned on a spade and turned

a sod while a band played and cannon boomed. But the B & O fooled with sail cars and horsepower before it took the big step to steam.

Meanwhile the West Point Foundry in New York built the locomotive *Best Friend of Charleston* for the Charleston & Hamburg in South Carolina. Over its six miles of track in December, 1830, rolled the first train of cars ever moved by steam in the United States. This event truly fathered American railroading—not the much-heralded race several months earlier between Peter Cooper's *Tom Thumb* and a gray horse, the horse winning hands down.

Five years after the *Best Friend* made its epic run; there were 1,098 miles of steam railroad operating in the United States. It was the beginning of a nostalgic age. Locomotives had diamond stacks and conductors wore immense mustaches and fine cutaway coats. Horse-drawn omnibuses "met the train" at the depot, where brassy "news butchers" hawked tobacco, candy, and newspapers. Oliver Evans would have gloried in the spectacle.

"Nothing is invented and perfected at the same time," an old saying has it. This applies not only to Evans but to "Doc" Samuel M. Kier, something of a Barnum in Pennsylvania. Knowing that seepage oil had been used for years as a panacea for human ills, he began to bottle it. Kier's Rock Oil sold so well that he put 50 red and gilt wagons on the road, their sides ornamented with paintings of the Good Samaritan ministering to the afflicted.

Now he attempted to make an illuminant from his Rock Oil. In Pittsburgh he rigged a still—actually the first oil refinery in the United States—and succeeded in producing a wine-colored liquid he named carbon oil. Then he invented a lamp burner that would consume it and give a fairly good light. But it stank most horribly. Ten years were to elapse before the odor was removed. Kier neglected to patent his refining process and it was appropriated by later experimenters.

On August 27, 1859, the first drilled oil well in the world began spouting at the rate

of 25 barrels a day. Titusville, Pennsylvania, recalls the strike with the restored derrick and a museum in a state park. Driller Edwin L. Drake, who had been a conductor on the New York and New Haven Railroad, was to petroleum what James Marshall was to gold. But this event, in the long run, far surpassed the discovery of gold in California. Petroleum would change the lives of people the world over.

At first it simply changed western Pennsylvania from backwoods to an industrial jungle, reeking with the fumes from small refineries, spotted with derricks, laced with pipelines. On the banks of slimy creeks wild-eyed men built hideous

THE TYPE-WRITER.



WHAT "MARK TWAIN" SAYS ABOUT IT.

Hartford, March 19, 1875.

GENTLEMEN: Please do not use my name in any way. Please do not even divulge the fact that I own a machine. I have entirely stopped using the Type-Writer, for the reason that I never could write a letter with it to anybody without receiving a request by return mail that I would not only describe the machine, but state what progress I had made in the use of it, etc., etc. I don't like to write letters, and so I don't want people to know I own this curiosity-breeding little joker. Yours truly,

SAML. L. CLEMENS.

THE FIRST AUTHOR TO USE A TYPEWRITER WROTE THIS TESTIMONIAL FOR REMINGTON; LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



SCIENTIFIC AMERICAN, 1890, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

Traffic jams plagued New York even in the Gay Nineties. Visionaries urged elevated sidewalks over streets to train stations and ferry slips.

towns and named them Oil City, Pithole, and Petrolia. The scene was duplicated over and over in Ohio and West Virginia, in Texas, Oklahoma, and California.


Long before oil became something more than a patent medicine, imaginative men had kindled the fires of industry. One-man shops burgeoned into factories. Sons of farmers, and daughters too, flocked to them. Individual enterprises banded together, sold stock to the public, and borrowed from bankers.

As the machine industries boomed ahead, the sons of farmers became corporation presidents. Clerks became full-fledged merchants. Mill hands became technicians. Immigrants from the Old World marveled at the ease with which Americans changed not only their job and place of residence but their position in society. The fluidity of vertical movement was a startling sight for Europeans.

Among the welter of new industrialists emerged the Giants, Titans, or Moguls. That the terms of robber, pirate, and rascal were also applied to them alters nothing; what counted most was that they never were called feeble. Consider Daniel Drew and Jim Fisk. Both were country lads, but there any similarity ends. All his long life Drew dressed and played the part of a yokel in the big city, a sort of rustic fallen among thieves. "I got to be a millionaire," he liked to say, "afore I knowed it, hardly." Often he spent his evenings in a cheap hotel quietly chewing plug tobacco and reading the Bible. His Christian pose, however, never interfered with his cattle dealings. He had drovers salt his steers and let them drink their fill before weighing. "Watered stock" became a Wall Street term.

Jim Fisk milked millions from the Erie Railroad. He refurbished the New York

City Grand Opera House and leased it to the Erie for \$75,000 a month. Its carved oak doors, gilded balustrades, cut glass chandeliers, and ceilings with "Pompeian designs of intertwining vines and flowers hiding naked cupids and rosy nymphs" formed a fit setting for the Prince of the Erie. He ruled from a walnut desk on a dais and sat in a chair studded with gold-headed nails. "Nothing is lost save honor," he said of the conspiracy to corner the gold market in 1869 which resulted in the Black Friday Scandal, with a taint that spread even to Congress.

 LONG WITH GREAT WEALTH the moguls accumulated personal characteristics that became legendary. John Warne "Bet-a-million" Gates was a rollicking, Falstaffian soul who wore diamonds on his shirt and on each gallus buckle. In one evening he lost \$400,000 at cards. Cornelius Vanderbilt was playing whist when one of his railroads came under fire for allegedly violating New York law. "Whist is a game," he told his eager interrogator, "that requires one's undivided attention." Right down to his last illness in 1876 the Commodore was always good for a quote. When a doctor suggested champagne to the patient, the old man figured the cost, then replied: "I guess sody water will do."

John D. Rockefeller, who neither smoked nor drank liquor, got sustenance chiefly from milk and graham crackers. Andrew Carnegie enjoyed oatmeal. Philip D. Armour was a glutton for work. "I like to turn bristles, blood, bones, and the insides and outsides of pigs and bullocks into revenue," he said.

J. Pierpont Morgan's ruby nose added to his fame. It was "part of the American business structure," he once remarked; another time he quipped that it "would be impossible for me to appear on the streets without it." He sometimes commanded his chauffeur to drive on the sidewalk when bogged down in traffic.

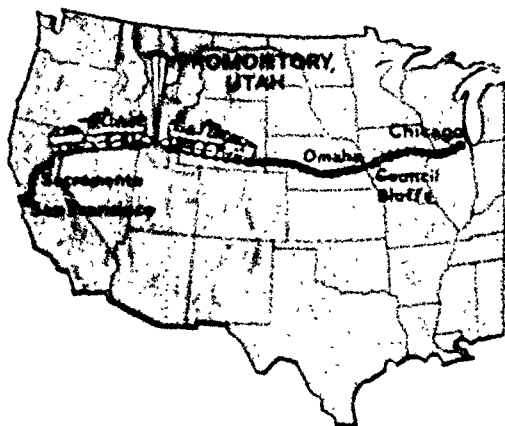
James Jerome Hill, who got his start in what had been the raw settlement of Pig's Eye (rechristened St. Paul), once fired an employee on discovering his name was Spittles. Again, when the mayor of a Minnesota town objected mildly to all-night switching, the irascible railroader swore its people should walk, then had the depot torn down and set up two miles away. On the other hand, when a section crew was trying to clear track for a train stalled in a Dakota blizzard, he sent workers into his private car for hot coffee while he shoveled snow.

Industrial America of Hill's time was a boisterous state where the effective way to remove weaklings was to set a pace which only the most rugged could survive. Horatio Alger said it again and again. You got to be railroad president by *working harder than the other fellow*.

Wherever railroads came, change was sure to follow. They created countless jobs and altered America's habits as nothing else. "They go and come," said Henry Thoreau of the trains that passed his pond, "with such regularity and precision, and their whistle can be heard so far, that the farmers set their clocks by them, and thus one well-conducted institution regulates a whole country. Have not men improved somewhat in punctuality since the railroad was invented? Do they not talk and think faster in the depot than they did in the stage-office?"

Yes, indeed they do.

"The Pacific Railroad is finished," the telegraph clacked. "San Francisco annexes the United States!" Californians boasted. Across the nation bells rang and cannon boomed with the wedding of rails at Promontory, Utah. The ceremonial golden-spike and silver maul, mementos of that May day in 1869, repose at Stanford University.



J. ANTHONY STEBBEY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER



A GOLDEN SPIKE JOINS THE NATION

IN SACRAMENTO STANDS a modest monument to an engineer and prophet—Theodore Dehone Judah, also known as Crazy Judah. A more fitting monument would be the long, long ribbons of steel that tie Pacific swells to rolling plains. Judah wasn't the first to dream of a transcontinental railroad. Men had talked of that almost from the birth of the iron horse. But when Judah spoke, enthusiasts heard their Moses. He made believers of editors and congressmen. He raised capital from California merchants—among them Leland Stanford, Charles Crocker, Mark Hopkins, and Collis P. Huntington. He created the Central Pacific.

On July 1, 1862, President Lincoln signed the act subsidizing that company and the Union Pacific to build a railroad from the Missouri River to the Pacific Ocean. "We have drawn the elephant," telegraphed the jubilant Judah. "Now let us see if we can harness him up." His partners, eager for government land and loans that accrued with each mile of track laid, wanted to build fast and cheap. Judah, in charge of construction, wanted nothing to do with a makeshift road. He sold out and sailed for New York. There, a week after landing, he died of fever.

But his idea lived, became a deed, finally became a legend. Eastward from Sacramento inched the Central Pacific. Bull-throated Charley Crocker, finding brawn scarce, hired Chinese to lay track. Averaging about 110 pounds soaking wet, the pig-tailed, basket-hatted coolies worked like devils, their picks beating a steady



tattoo on the Sierra granite. Through snow and avalanche they blasted and bored to the Nevada flats, leaving 15 tunnels in their wake.

Westward from Omaha thrust the Union Pacific. Its construction gangs of Civil War veterans, mountain men, mule skinner, and tough Paddies from Ireland toiled across Nebraska and Wyoming trailing a raft of gamblers and painted harpies. Often laborers had to help troops fight the Cheyenne, for as Gen. George Crook tartly remarked, it was difficult to surround three Indians with one soldier.

In Utah the subsidy-hungry companies built roadbeds feverishly—right on by each other! Rival crews traded pot shots and set off blasts to destroy opposing grades. Finally, after a nudge from Congress, the rails met at the shack and tent town of Promontory, about 40 miles northwest of Ogden. At noon on May 10, 1869, bearded officials hammered in the golden spike that joined East and West.

A trip to yesterday

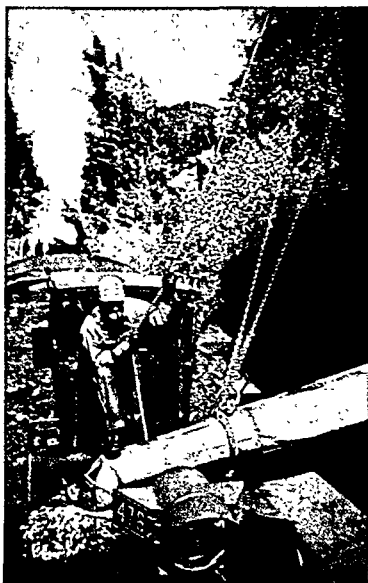
A WHISTLE SCREAMS, steam hisses, couplings clank. We chug out of Durango, Colorado, and clickety-clack into the San Juan Mountains. Yellow coaches with open platforms, hand brakes, and potbellied stoves bulge with tourists. Many, en route to Mesa Verde National Park, have stopped on U. S. 160 to make this all-day, 90-mile round trip to Silverton ("We have silver by the ton").

Why? For the thrill of riding one of America's last narrow-gauge steam railroads through immense scenery to a false-front mining town straight out of the gilded 1880's.

Black smoke billows; the diamond-stack engine pants along three-foot tracks that hairpin and S-curve where standard gauge (4'8½") could never go. Camera fans hang from windows as cracker-box cars squeal around a narrow shelf far above dizzying Animas Canyon. Threading the gorge, the little train climbs amid a jumble of 13,000-foot peaks. The conductor points. "See those switchbacks of the old stagecoach road? Only way to reach the mines before the rail route was blasted in 1881-82."

With bonanza days gone and the Million Dollar Highway, U. S. 550, sapping its business, the Silverton branch was dying when movies and tourists discovered it. Now the iron pony will go puffing on each summer day so long as enthusiasts keep it from the roundhouse of oblivion.

MERLE SEVERY



Iron pony drinks deep after cliff-hanging in Animas Canyon. At 9,300 feet tourists pile out to enjoy Silverton, old Colorado boom town.

MERLE SEVERY, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF. OPPOSITE, ELIOT ELISOFOF, COURTESY LIFE, © 1959 TIME INC.





UNVEILING THE STATUE OF LIBERTY BY EDWARD MORAN, 1889, COURTESY OF MRS. SETON HENRY

LIBERTY AND OPPORTUNITY BECKON

THE STATUE OF LIBERTY National Monument rises 300 feet above New York Harbor to lift her lamp "beside the golden door." Within her copper form, hued green by time's alchemy, visitors climb a spiral stairway to peer from windows in her massive crown. Masterpiece of Alsatian sculptor Frédéric Auguste Bartholdi, gift from France, this "Mother of Exiles" inspired poet Emma Lazarus, whose words adorn the pedestal. *Give me your tired, your poor, your huddled masses yearning to breathe free. . . .*

Standing in the center of old Fort Wood on Liberty (Bedloe's) Island, the 225-ton statue tends freedom's greatest portal. She has been strengthened, her



"IN THE LAND OF PROMISE: CASTLE GARDEN" BY CHARLES F. ULRICH, 1884. CORCORAN GALLERY OF ART

torch brightened since her unveiling in 1886 at the flood tide of immigration.

In the 19th century, famine and strife sent torrents of aliens to the United States. Let them come, exulted Emerson: "The energy of Irish, Germans, Swedes, Poles, and Cossacks, and all the European tribes,—and of the Africans, and of the Polynesians,—will construct a new race, a new religion, a new state, a new literature."

From 1855 to 1890 more than seven million streamed through Castle Garden, New York. Boston, Seattle, San Francisco, Honolulu established other depots. But Ellis Island, New York, outstripped them all. By the time it closed in 1954 after 62 years, 20 million immigrants had poured in. Before quotas checked the flow, men claimed that for every steamship arriving, teeming with passengers, a new steel plant rose in Pennsylvania, a new textile plant sprang up in Massachusetts, and 1,000 more pick-and-shovel men pushed railroads west from Chicago.



B. ANTHONY STEWART AND (BELOW) DATES LITTLEHALES, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHERS





ANDREW H. BROWN, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

Polyglot America! Not even Babel heard more tongues. Old World heritages, though largely fused with those of the New, can still be seen, heard, and tasted. Tulips and wooden shoes mark the May festival in Holland, Michigan; Scottish bagpipes skirl in Cleveland's Cultural Gardens, where nationality groups don native garb for "One World Day" in July; barbecued duck basted with honey tempts appetites any time in San Francisco's Chinatown restaurants.

IMMIGRANT MUSCLE YIELDS STRENGTH

190 Million
180 Million
170 Million
160 Million
150 Million
140 Million
130 Million

Tides of immigrants and a declining death rate explain why United States population has multiplied 46 times in 170 years despite a low birth rate. In the same period world population shows but a threefold increase.

870,000,000



WORLD

3,929,214

U.S.

1790

2,900,000,000

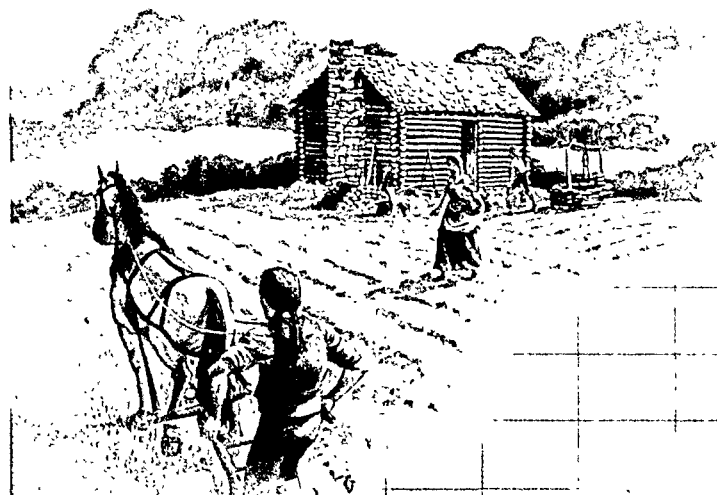


WORLD

180,000,000

U.S.

1960



1861 to 1890. High birth rate and increasing immigration vastly offset casualties in the Civil War.

1790 to 1830. Early marriages and a high birth rate swell the young Nation's population. Boundless soil averts famines. America's isolated homesteads limit spread of epidemic diseases.

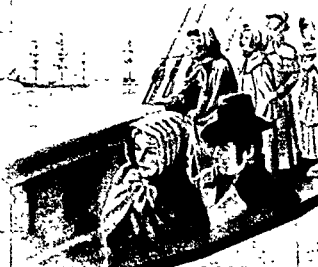
20 Million

10 Million

3,929,214

Americans

1790 1800 1810 1820 1830 1840 1850 1860 1870 1880

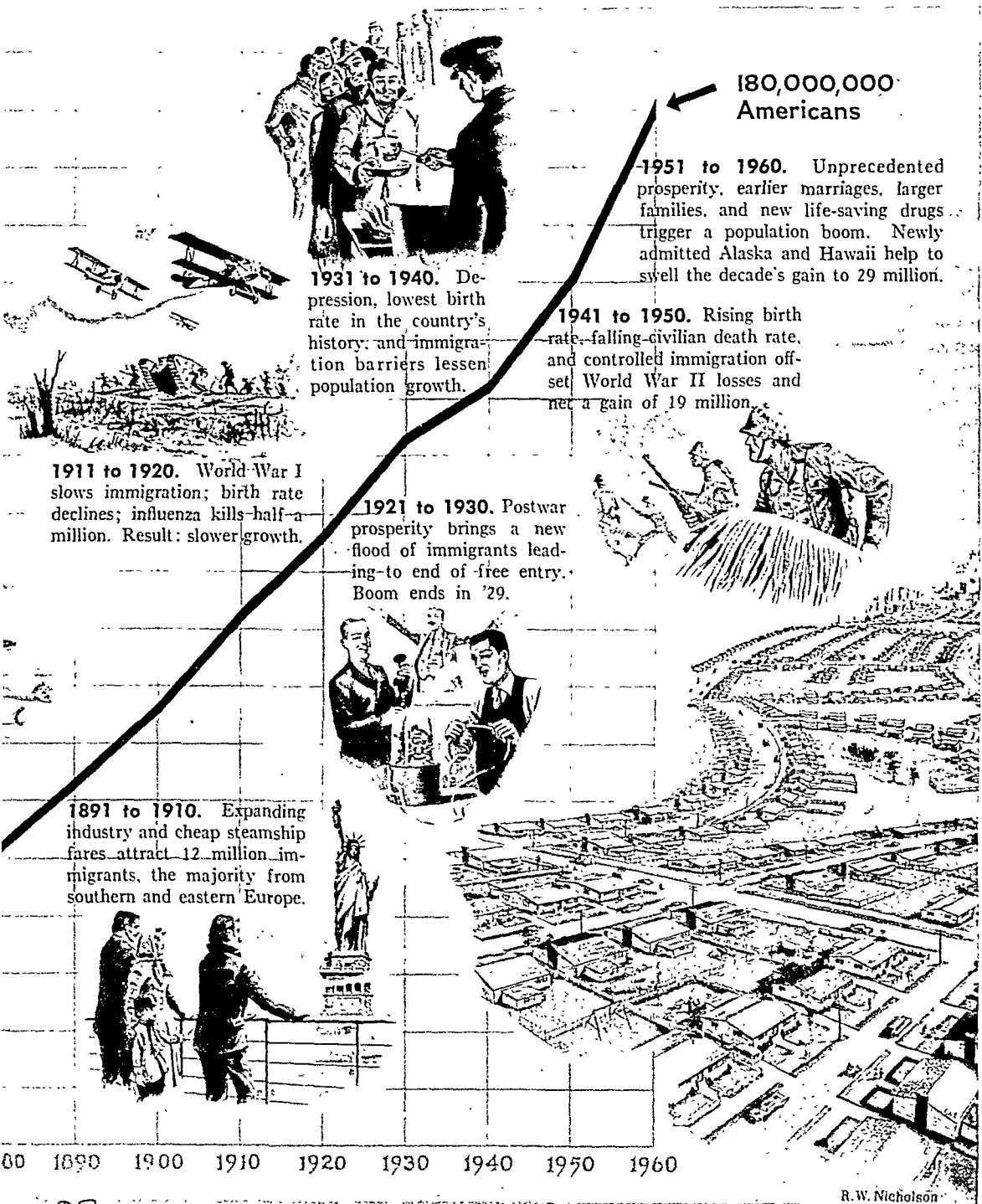


1831 to 1860. Famine in Ireland and unrest in Germany send 3½ million immigrants; other countries contribute 1½ million.

© NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC SOCIETY



FOR THE GROWING GIANT



R. W. Nicholson

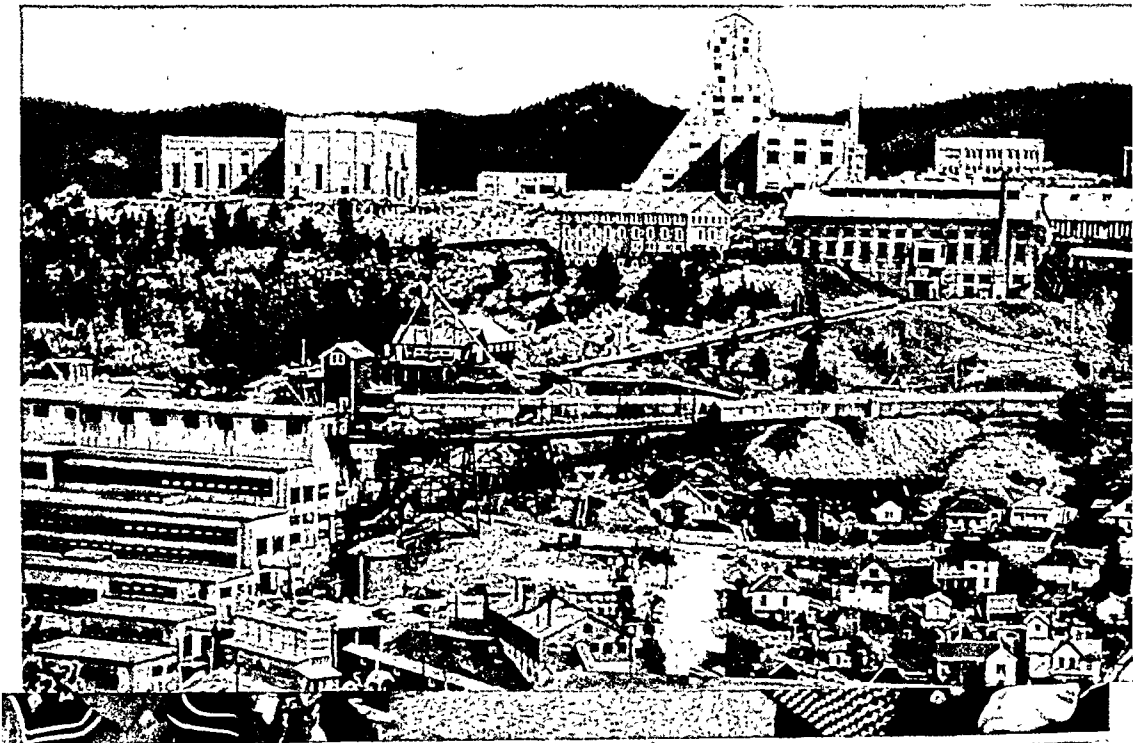
BLAST FURNACES IN BIRMINGHAM, ALABAMA, BY J. BAYLOR ROBERTS, AND (LEFT) WASHINGTON LUMBERJACK WALKING A SPAR TREE, BY B. ANTHONY STEWART, BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

Resources and industries build fabulous fortunes . . .

IN THE LATE 19th century America's smoldering industry burst into flame and spread like wildfire. Business became BIG business. "Poor boys," as Andrew Carnegie labeled them, "trained in that sternest but most efficient of all schools—poverty," became tycoons.

They built factories, railroads, skyscrapers; manufactured steel, explosives, gasoline. They sensationalized newspapers and capitalized on the nation's muscle. Tough-minded, encased in rhinoceros hides, these men in a hurry

HOMESTAKE MILLS AT LEAD, SOUTH DAKOTA, SIT ON AMERICA'S RICHEST GOLD LODE. BATES LITTLEHALES, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER



set the national style. America rewarded them handsomely. With their legendary wealth they bought everything but eternal life. They fashioned the Gilded Age.

Many of its monuments and memories endure. Monuments such as 2,509 Carnegie libraries; Vanderbilt University; the Guggenheim, Du Pont, Rockefeller, and Ford Foundations; the National Gallery of Art in Washington, gift from banker Andrew Mellon. Memories such as \$100,000 parties in Fifth Avenue



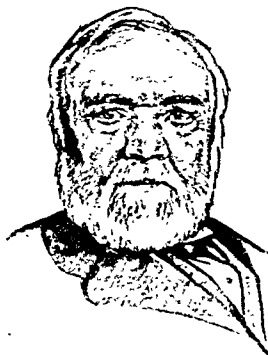
Cornelius Vanderbilt, first American mogul, sired a dynasty synonymous with wealth (grandson Cornelius reigned in the 1890's). The crusty Commodore wrote the book on railroad monopoly.

John D. Rockefeller amassed a huge fortune fueling the world's kerosene lamps and gasoline engines. His philanthropies, fortunes in themselves, inspired his son and grandsons.

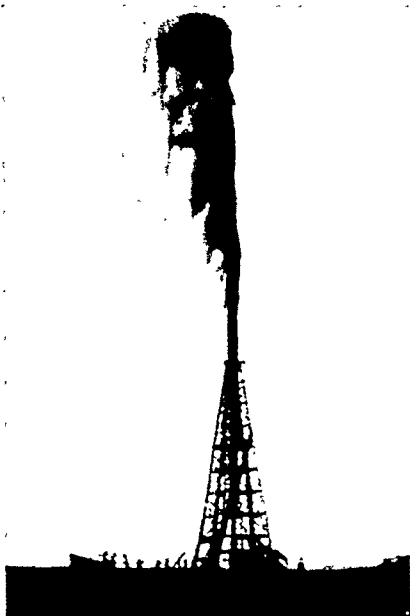


John Pierpont Morgan, financial wizard, architect of corporations, helped shape U. S. industry. "God made the world," steelworkers joked, "and it was reorganized in 1901 by J. P. Morgan."

James Jerome Hill laid rails and deposited immigrants from St. Paul to Puget Sound. The country bloomed; Hill reaped millions.



Andrew Carnegie, King of the Vulcans, giver of libraries, forged frail companies and dynamic men into an empire of steel.



LUCAS GUSHER OPENED TEXAS OIL ERA. REARUMONT CHAMBER OF COMMERCE. RIGHT PORTRAITS BY WAYNE BARRETT, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF

... and a gilded age

mansions; round-the-world voyages in Commodore Vanderbilt's *North Star*; the private Pullmans of Jay Gould and Leland Stanford. But the most opulent symbols of the Gilded Age were its castles and "cottages."

Millionaires spent kings' ransoms on retreats at Bar Harbor, Maine; in the Berkshires in Massachusetts, and on Long Island.

At Newport, Rhode Island, storied playground of New York's "400" in the Gay Nineties, sightseers now stare in wonder at a score of palaces, particularly The Breakers, the 70-room, multimillion-dollar cottage of Cornelius Vanderbilt. Come summer, station wagons crammed with kids and grandmas parade down Ocean Drive where liveried coachmen drove phaetons and broughams behind silver-harnessed horses. On broad Newport lawns Whitneys and Vanderbilts raced newfangled horseless carriages; and one cottager, John Jacob Astor, could remark that "a man with a million dollars is as well off as if he were rich."

Tourists can see what untaxed millions bought in William Rockefeller's 20-room cottage on Jekyll Island, Georgia, and George W. Vanderbilt's Biltmore estate in North Carolina. Nor did price deter James Deering, farm machinery magnate, who built the Italian villa Vizcaya near Miami. Visitors gaze at its art—bought by the shipload.

"The Blue Boy" by Gainsborough and "Pinkie" by Lawrence crown the collection of railroad titan Henry E. Huntington at his San Marino estate near Los Angeles. At San Simeon, on California's Highway No. 1, William Randolph Hearst had his own zoo!

Biltmore, George W. Vanderbilt's château near Asheville, North Carolina (above), covers four acres and is surrounded by 12,000 more. Touring the estate, visitors are wafted back to the Gilded Age of the coach-and-four, the private stable of thoroughbreds, the 300-foot yacht, when dowagers sported \$75,000 opera glasses and banqueted pet dogs on "fricassee of bones." The Gibson Girl (right) endures as a nostalgic symbol of high society of the 1890's.



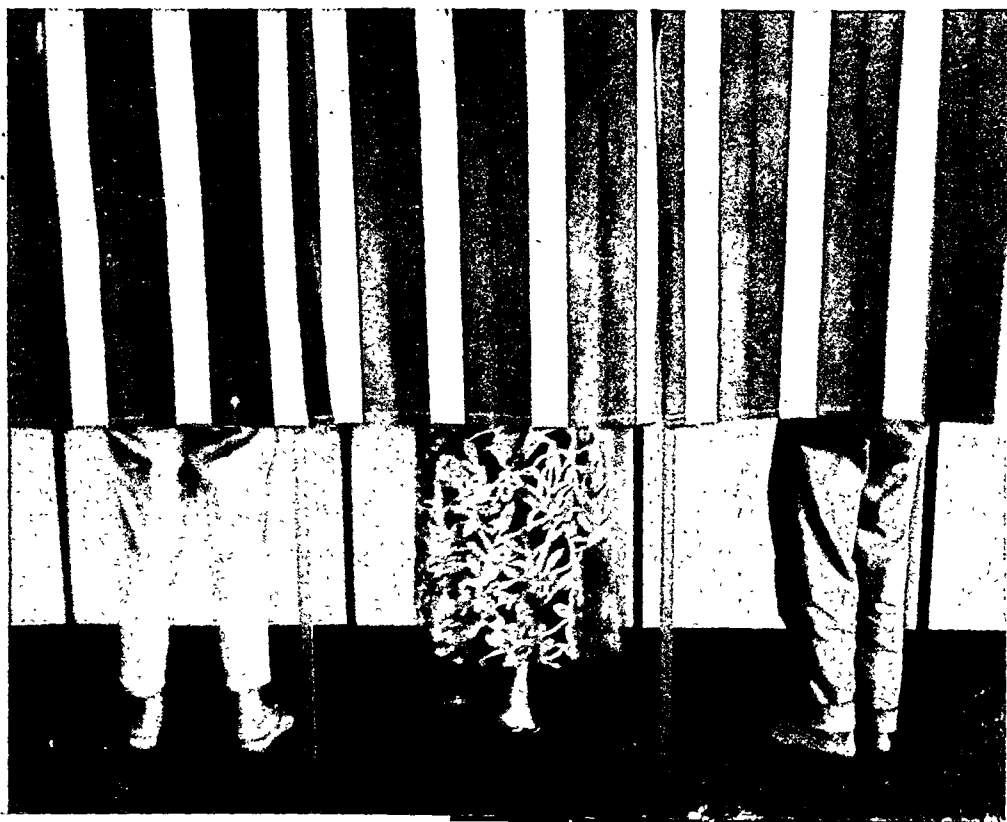
DRAWING BELOW BY CHARLES DANA GIBSON





THOMAS NEBBIA NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

Surf riding, sport of Hawaiian kings, thrills Mainlanders scudding toward Waikiki Beach in outrigger canoes and on dancing surfboards. Visitors who explore beyond the view of Diamond Head (above) find Oahu and the six other inhabited islands rich in cane sugar, pineapples, and scenic grandeur. Orientals and Occidentals have mingled successfully here in the 50th (Aloha) state, a harmonious melting pot. Now they vote together (below).

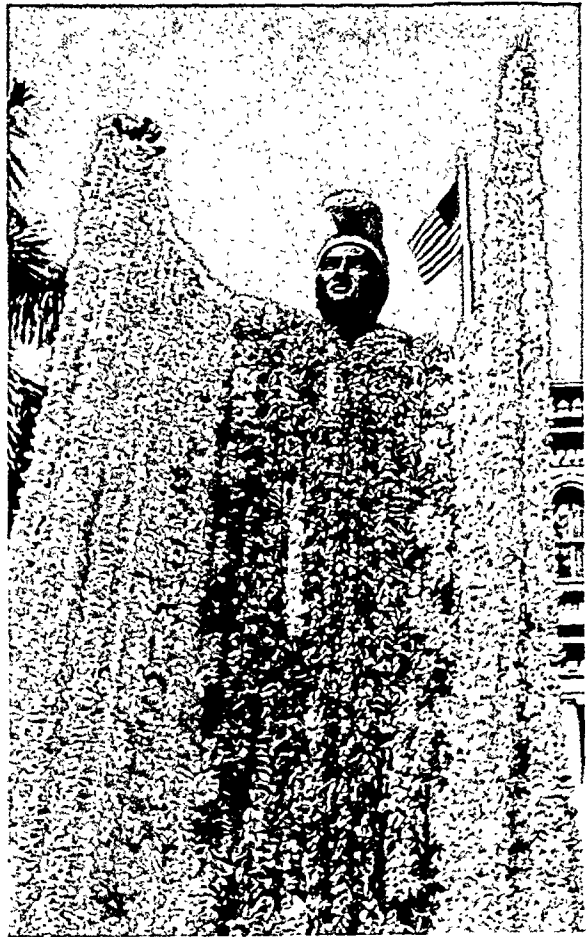
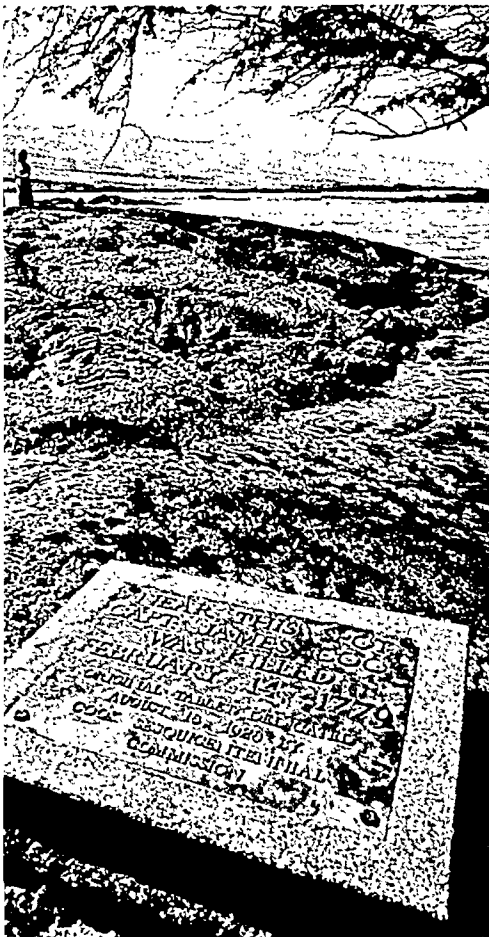


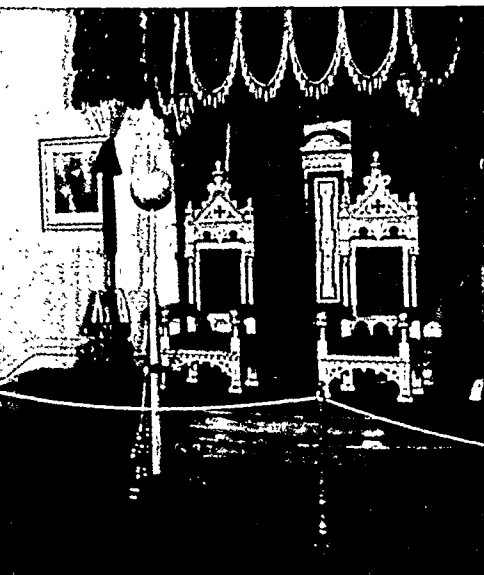
bought Hawaiian sandalwood for the China trade, whalers put in for provisions, and in 1820 a brig arrived with 19 New England missionaries.

Through schools and New England-style churches, many still standing, the missionary families significantly changed the Polynesian way of life. They even counseled Hawaiian kings. Abraham Lincoln wrote of Hawaii: "Its people are free, and its laws, language, and religion are largely the fruit of our own teaching and example." Hale Hoikeike, a museum on Maui, preserves a missionary's home and female seminary. Its plaster was strengthened with human hair donated by Hawaiian ladies.

Trouble erupted in paradise when Queen Liliuokalani, author of *Aloha Oe*, tried to restore royal power. She was deposed, to live out her life at Washington Place, now the governor's residence in Honolulu. During the Spanish-American War the United States annexed strategically important Hawaii, and in 1900 made it a territory.

On the infamous date, December 7, 1941, Japanese planes snarled over Diamond Head to devastate Pearl Harbor. Postwar appeals brought statehood in 1959. Today's state governor sits in Iolani Palace, home of kings.





Kamehameha I, his statue garlanded with 40-foot leis, consolidated the islands by conquest. Monarchs ruled from Iolani Palace (top); royal trappings (above) rest in Bishop Museum. Sunken *Arizona* (right) honors Pearl Harbor dead. A simple slab (far left) marks where Captain Cook fell.

THOMAS NEBBIA AND (FAR LEFT) WALTER MEYERS EDWARDS,
BOTH NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF
ABOVE ROBERT MOSIER

George Eastman made "snapshot" an everyday word

IN THE FALL of 1877 a serious-minded, industrious young Rochester bank clerk, George Eastman, decided to take up photography as a hobby. He purchased \$94.36 worth of equipment and made an unpleasant discovery.

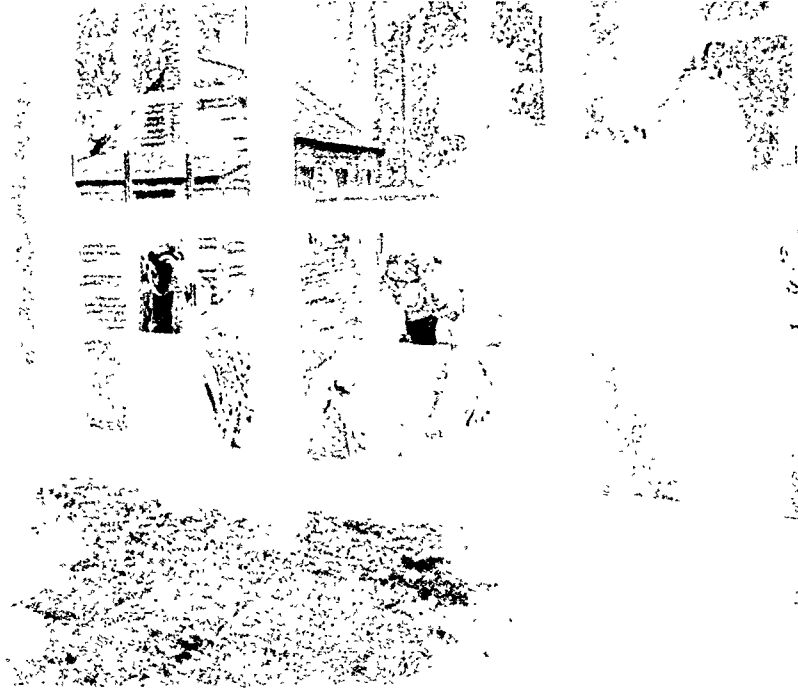
"I learned that it took not only a strong but also a dauntless man to be an outdoor photographer. My layout, which included only the essentials, had in it a camera about the size of a soap box, a tripod, which was strong and heavy enough to support a bungalow, a big plate-holder, a dark-tent, a nitrate bath, and a container for water. The glass plates were not, as now, in the holder ready for use: they were what is known as 'wet plates'—that is, glass which had to be coated with collodion and then sensitized with nitrate of silver in the field just before exposure.... Since I took my views mostly outdoors... the bulk of the paraphernalia worried me. It seemed that one ought to be able to carry less than a pack-horse load."

From Eastman's exasperation came a revolution in photography. He perfected and marketed glass plates that were already sensitized. Then in 1888 he put out

Eastman House, a museum presenting photography's past and its miracles today, offers training for Rochester Institute of Technology students and a quick initiation for visiting "shutterbugs." This young group learns the secrets of high-speed photography.

DAVID S. BOYER, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF. OPPOSITE: NEAL P. DAVIS AND (LOWER) EASTMAN HOUSE





the Kodak, using roll film. It was so easy to operate anyone could use it. "You press the button, we do the rest," said his slogan.

This box camera, loaded with a 100-exposure roll, cost \$25. When the film was exposed, you sent the camera to Rochester, New York, where technicians developed the round pictures, made a print of each one, and sent back your reloaded camera, all for \$10. As Eastman pointed out, this system enabled "the whole public to practice the art."

Eastman's nitrocellulose film, in Edison's motion-picture machine, gave birth to the movies. Photography came to serve science and industry many ways.

George Eastman, who had known poverty as a child, gave millions to education. His home is now a museum, a living memorial to "the man who brought photography to everyone."

Head in a vise, a victim poses rigidly for long seconds before the tintyper at Greenfield Village. "American Film," a gelatin-coated paper patented by Eastman in 1884, simplified photography and put it within reach of millions. He tested it on his portrait at 29 (below).





GILBERT M. GROSVENOR, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC STAFF SKETCHES OPPOSITE © BELL FAMILY

Bell Museum at Baddeck, Nova Scotia, preserves mementos of the wide-ranging inventor.

Alexander Graham Bell gave wings to man's voice

NO ONE could have been better prepared to invent the telephone than Alexander Graham Bell. He was the third generation in his family to be an expert on the human voice. In 1871 the Boston Board of Education invited the young Scottish-born scientist to lecture on his father's system of "visible speech" to teachers of the deaf. His success led him to open his own school of "vocal physiology," the anatomy of the vocal cords. His quest to develop a scientific device that would help teach the deaf to speak spurred him to investigate the anatomy of the human ear with its delicate vibrating membrane.

By setting an exhausting pace, Bell found time to work on this and other experiments. He was helped by an altruistic Boston lawyer, Gardiner Greene Hubbard, later first president of the National Geographic Society. Mr. Hubbard's daughter Mabel, deaf since childhood, became Bell's pupil and soon the couple fell in love. But marriage had to wait, for the scientist was still relatively poor.

Industry promised rich rewards for a device that would send several messages at once over the same telegraph wire. Bell, trained in acoustics, thought of sending the signals in different pitches. He experimented with reeds that acted like tuning forks, those at the receiver vibrating only when their own signals were transmitted.

While perfecting this multiple, or harmonic, telegraph with his assistant Thomas A. Watson, Bell found a way to make an electric current vary in intensity instead

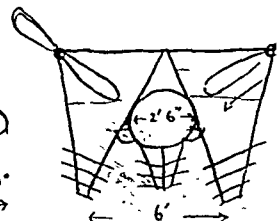
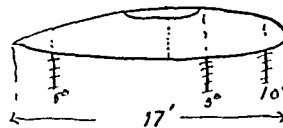
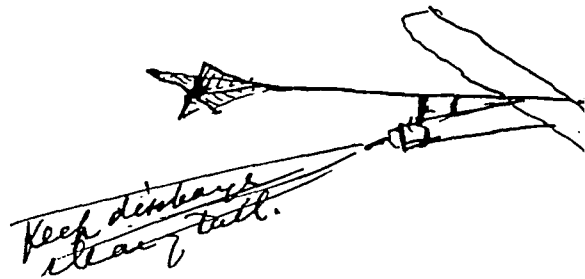
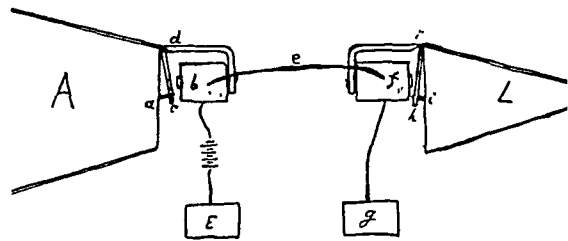
556 **Dr. Bell opened service between New York and Chicago in 1892, only 14 years after predicting long-distance voice communication. He sketched the telephone (upper) in 1875, the rocket plane in 1893. Hydrofoil boat (lower) appears in his 1917 notes.**

of simply pulsing when the tuned reeds vibrated. Bell recognized the key to transmitting not just signals but sounds. Immediately he set to building an apparatus with membranes and electromagnets. When it was completed, he spoke over it the simple words, "Mr. Watson, come here; I want you." Watson came.

Bell patented his telephone in 1876 and it soon became part of American life. He devoted himself to research in Washington, D. C., where he used an award to establish the Volta Bureau "for the increase and diffusion of knowledge relating to the deaf." While serving as president of the National Geographic Society, 1898-1903, he engaged Gilbert Grosvenor as editor and backed him in transforming its small technical journal into a profusely illustrated one written in terms the layman could understand. Membership in a nonprofit, educational society, not merely subscription to a magazine, was Bell's idea.

At his summer home on Cape Breton Island his researches took him into such fields as aeronautics, marine engineering, medicine, and genetics. Everything was grist for his mental mill. He tested rocket- and jet-powered rotor blades for his conception of a helicopter more than 40 years before one was perfected. His tetrahedral kite carried a man aloft. His hydrofoil speedboat, developed with F. W. Baldwin, set a world record—70.86 miles an hour—in 1919. He experimented with solar stills to convert sea water to fresh. He even bred a flock of twin-bearing sheep.

Much of his remarkable legacy to science is displayed at the Bell Museum, a Canadian government memorial to a great American who, if asked to state his profession, invariably replied, "I am a teacher of the deaf."





U. S. DEPARTMENT OF AGRICULTURE

*George Washington Carver
discovered secrets of
nature's alchemy*

SOME SCOFFED at the thin, bent old man. He was so frugal. He improvised most of his laboratory equipment from discarded junk. But George Washington Carver, applying his discoveries to the service of man, was making his life an inspiration to his fellow Negroes in the South.

Born of slave parents in Missouri, hungry for knowledge, he worked his way through school, finally abandoning art and music and turning to botany and agriculture. He wanted most to make things grow. On graduation from Iowa State College he was appointed to the faculty.

In 1896 Booker T. Washington, head of Tuskegee Institute in Alabama, asked him to join the staff, and the chance to serve his people sent Carver south to stay 47 years. He showed the impoverished farmers how to use what was around them: compost and cowpeas to enrich fields, garden vegetables to improve their diets, hillside clays to whitewash cabins. Grow less cotton, he taught, and more sweet potatoes and peanuts—and in his laboratory he derived more than 300 products from peanuts.

Tuskegee honors him with a museum. A national monument marks his birthplace.

STATE AFFAIRS OFFICE AT GEORGE WASHINGTON CARVER NATIONAL MONUMENT,
NEAR DARDEN, MISSOURI. JACK E. TOLCHER, NATIONAL PARK SERVICE



NEW FRONTIERS

and ran on bicycle wheels powered by a two-cylinder engine. He finished it before dawn one rainy June morning in 1896 and had to hack away part of the wall with an ax to get it out. Then he cranked the engine and off he went.

Ford's was not the first car built in Detroit, and European manufacturers were turning out large models for wealthy customers. Competition was sharp, as Ford discovered when he formed a company in 1899. He had at least 57 rivals! By building racing cars the lanky mechanic got publicity. His racers set spectacular records: the first hit 72 miles per hour in road trials. Organizing a new company in 1903, Ford now tackled the problem of building a car so cheap the farmer could afford it.

His first Model A cost \$800. Several models that followed were higher priced. Then in 1907, while manufacturing his Model S, he planned for mass production a durable machine capable of jouncing over the rocky, rutty, muddy roads. He tooled up to produce it and in October, 1908, unveiled the Model T. In 1910 he shifted production to his big new factory in Highland Park, Michigan.

To cut production costs Ford standardized the Model T, making no basic changes from year to year. But he constantly improved his methods of manufacture. He introduced continuously moving assembly lines in 1913 and slashed the time required to put together a Ford chassis from 12½ hours to 1½. He cut the car's base price from \$950 in 1909 to \$440 in 1914, then made an announcement, incredible for that time: he would pay no worker less than five dollars a day.

Ultimately Ford lowered the price of the Model T to \$290. By 1927, when he discontinued production, he had sold more than 15,000,000 of them. The stubby, high-riding, wheezy Tin Lizzie, beloved butt of innumerable insults ("Danger! 100,000 jolts!"), had literally put the nation on wheels. And it had made Henry Ford one of the most famous and widely quoted men in the 20th century world.

HISTORY IS BUNK," was one of Ford's often quoted remarks. By that he could have meant no more than that he disapproved of senseless clinging to out-moded methods. As he grew older and richer he collected and preserved countless mementos of the simpler past that mass production and the automobile age were leaving behind. At South Sudbury, Massachusetts, he restored the Wayside Inn that Henry Wadsworth Longfellow had made famous, and surrounded it with buildings illustrating the old handicrafts. Still that did not go far enough.

The idea grew on him of assembling an entire community in which to display his treasures, to give future generations a vivid picture of the life their ancestors led, especially the men of America's industrial revolution. Hence Greenfield Village.

Here history comes alive, as at Williamsburg. Mills and machine shops hum, children recite from McGuffey readers, the potter twirls his wheel, the glass blower bends before his torch like a votary before the sacred fire, the tintyper poses his subjects, and a stern-wheeler chunks down the man-made Suwannee River past Stephen Foster Memorial House while a minstrel sings the composer's songs. Covering 14 acres nearby is the Henry Ford Museum, its entrance modeled after Independence Hall. Here are gathered "every household article, every kind of vehicle, every sort of tool" people used in past generations. Students visit to learn mechanical theory, tourists just to savor. All leave knowing their country better.

Tin Lizzie's earliest ancestor sits in the doorway of the shed where Henry Ford built it in 1896 from old carriage parts and bits of pipe. Steered with a tiller, this first Ford could hit 20 miles an hour. The shed was moved to Greenfield Village from Detroit.

Greenfield Village brings to life horseless carriage days

ON SOME 200 ACRES in Dearborn, Michigan, time takes a vacation. Here stand a 1634 Cape Cod windmill and an 1886 Detroit power plant. Among the 100-odd buildings visitors find a slave cabin based on George Washington Carver's memories of his birthplace, a courthouse where young Abraham Lincoln practiced law, and Thomas Edison's Menlo Park laboratory, transported board by board with seven carloads of New Jersey soil thrown in to give the old building a familiar foundation.

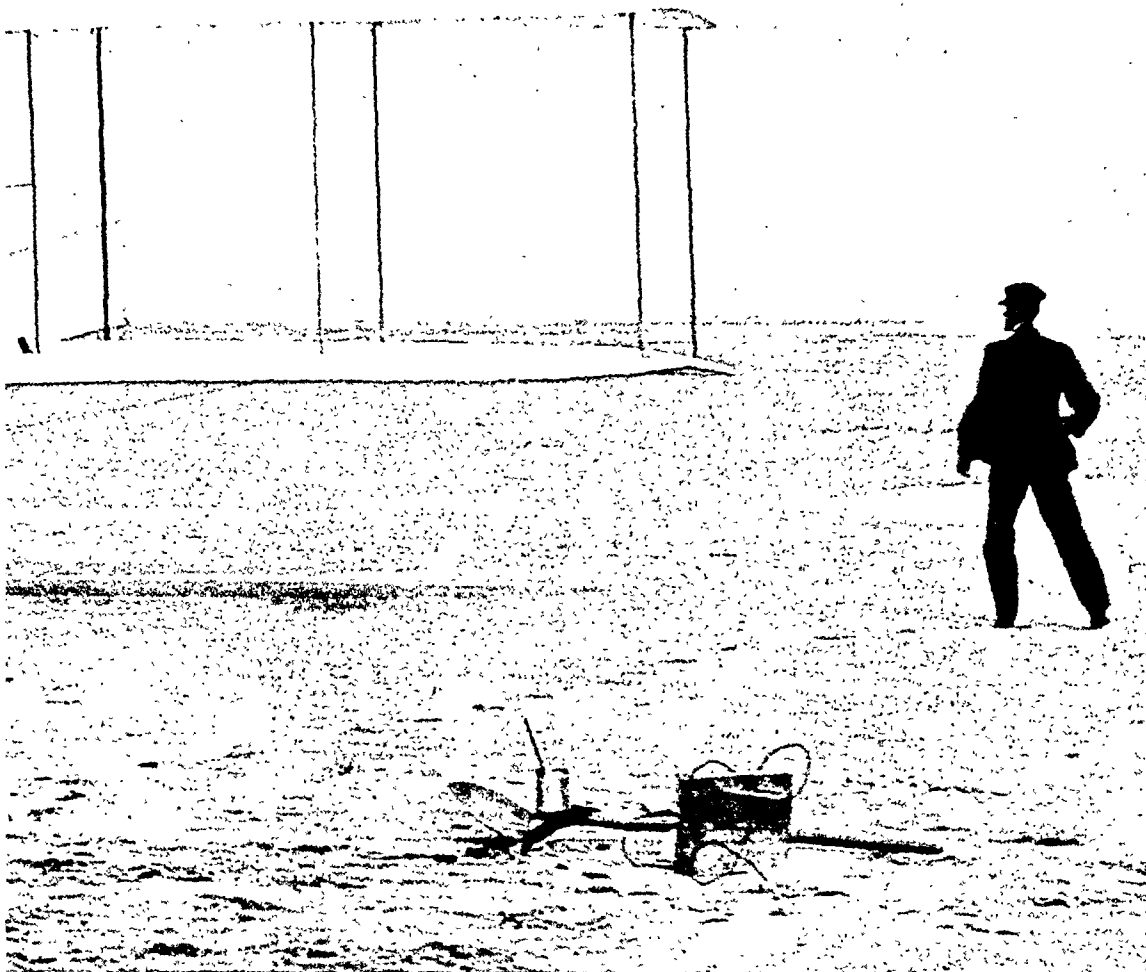
This is Greenfield Village, repository of Americana, conceived and built by Henry Ford, the millionaire automobile manufacturer who never forgot his humble background as a Michigan farm boy.

Born in 1863, Ford grew up with no taste for farming but a love for machinery. He repaired his father's plows and fixed neighbors' watches for the fun of it. From his 12th year, when he thrilled to the sight of a steam thresher lumbering down the road under its own power, he dreamed of making a machine that would run along a road.

Many others shared that dream. Inventors built vehicles powered by steam or gasoline engines; most were elaborate and expensive. Ford wanted something cheaper, "to lift farm drudgery off flesh and blood and lay it on steel and motors."

Laboring long hours after his day's work, he assembled his first automobile in a brick workshop behind his Detroit home. It weighed less than 500 pounds

Horseless carriages meet annually at the Village. This Stanley Steamer shows off before Martha-Mary Chapel on the green.



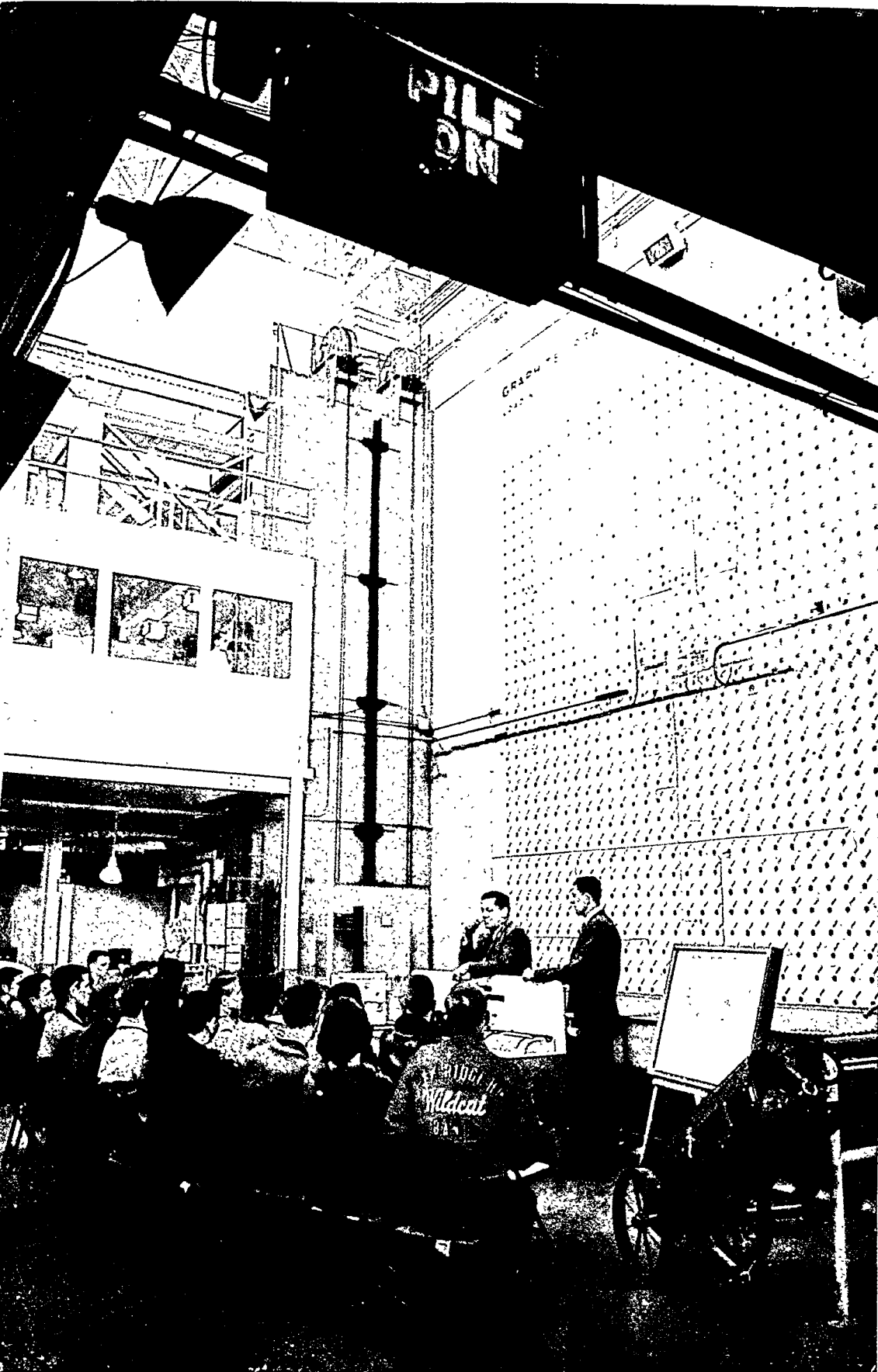
LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

North Carolina. Wright Brothers National Memorial preserves this birthplace of powered flight.

reaction in an age of exuberance and confidence. For this was the bright new 20th century, and this was the gay and lusty United States of America where dreams *could* come true and where new frontiers were much in demand.

Theodore Roosevelt, in the White House, personified these vigorous, buoyant times. He was bulling the Panama Canal across the Isthmus—and through Congress. He was waving his “big stick” at foreign powers and using it to break up big business monopolies at home. He delighted in books, children, the sheer joy of life at Sagamore, his home in Oyster Bay, Long Island. Visitors to this well-preserved mansion and to his brownstone birthplace in New York can capture the essence of T. R. and the brave world around him.

Roosevelt himself “discovered” flight in 1910, when he flew for 3½ minutes. By then the Wrights’ accomplishment had triggered a surge into the frontier of the air. Soon Eddie Rickenbacker was dueling in the skies over France; Charles A. Lindbergh soloed across the Atlantic; Richard E. Byrd flew over the North and South Poles. The speed of air progress can be gauged by the fact that within 60





B ANTHONY STEWART, NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC PHOTOGRAPHER

Wizardry at Oak Ridge, Tennessee, points the way to the future. Ultraviolet light bathes a scientist (above) studying the model of a salt crystal. Red circles represent sodium atoms, yellow are chlorine.

Oak Ridge, a child of World War II, came of age in 1959, when the United States government turned it over to its citizens to run as a municipality. Here high school students visit the city's most historic site, the oldest working atomic reactor in the world (left). Holes in the gray wall contain uranium fuel for this atomic pile, started up in 1943, a year after physicist Enrico Fermi built the first atomic pile (since dismantled) in Chicago. More than a million persons have toured Oak Ridge's American Museum of Atomic Energy, which tells the entire story of man's study of the atom and its many services to mankind.

years the wingspan of a large airliner was greater than the 120-foot distance of the Wrights' first flight, and experimental planes were bettering 4,000 miles per hour.

In the same breath-taking fashion the United States shot into the nuclear age in the summer of 1945. During World War II thousands of workers in huge plants at Oak Ridge, Tennessee, Hanford, Washington, and Los Alamos, New Mexico, labored on materials for a secret weapon. Man had learned how to unlock the power of the atom, and its mighty force helped end that war though not the threat of a holocaust that might destroy mankind.

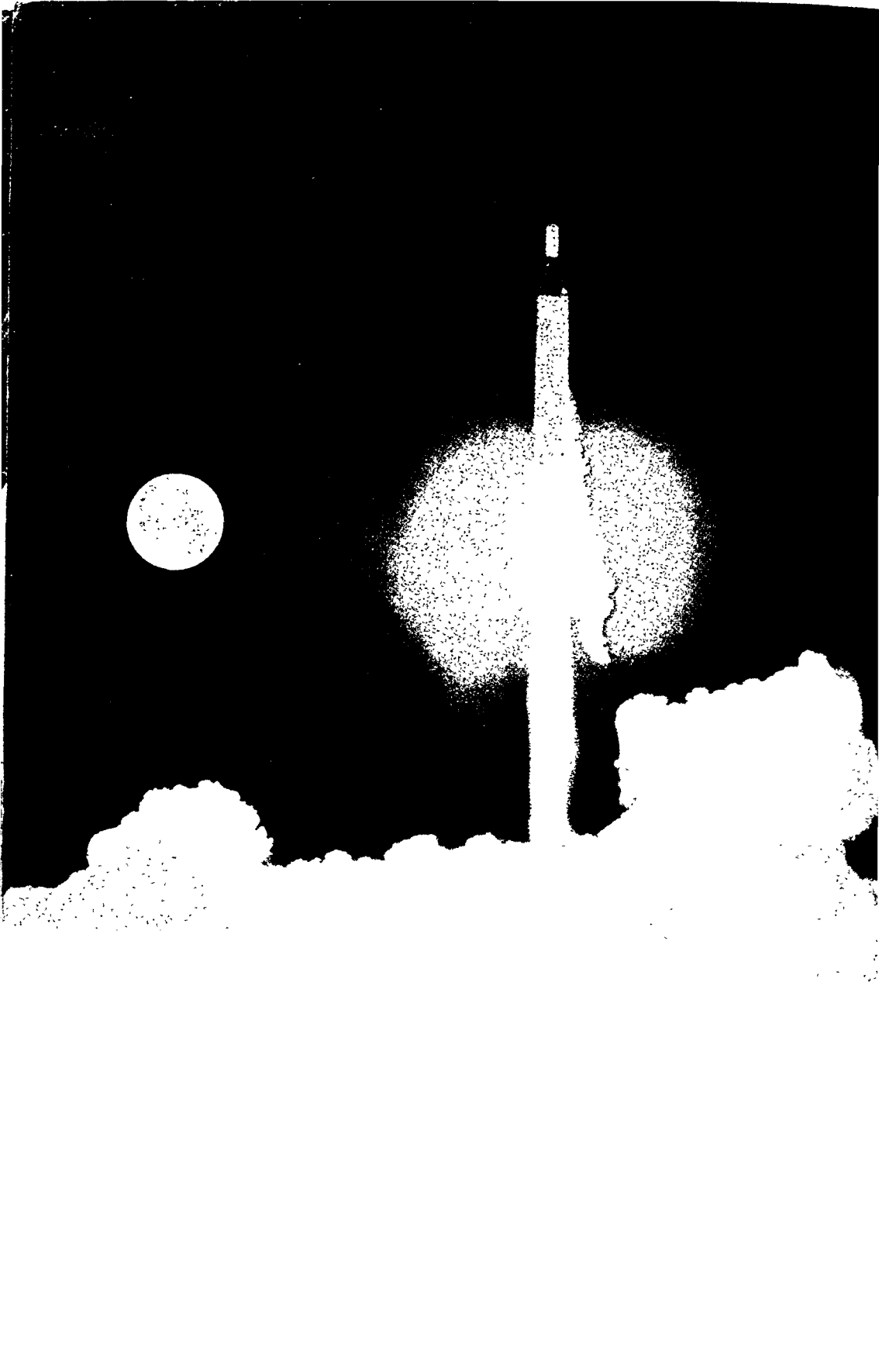
Happily, nuclear fission also opened the door to endless benefits. Scientists set to work on peaceful uses for atomic energy: radioactive isotopes ("tracer atoms") that serve agriculture, industry, and medicine; nuclear power plants to generate electricity and to propel ships and aircraft. Atomic power may hold the key to interplanetary travel.

Less than six decades after the Wright brothers' first flights, astronauts rode flaming missiles to probe that farthest frontier, of all—space.

On January 31, 1958, the United States sent a satellite into orbit around the earth from a site that is already historic: Cape Canaveral, Florida. On May 5, 1961, Commander Alan B. Shepard, Jr., rocketed into space for a 15-minute ride 115 miles above the earth.

Scientists worked feverishly to develop engines with greater thrust for Canaveral's next big mission: manned flights to the moon.

Today at this landmark of the Space Age the future seems very near.



INDEX

How to use the index to plan your vacation trip to America's Historylands
Specific historic sites as well as towns, cities, people, and events have been included. Look up the places you would like to visit; the text will tell you what sites are important, and why. Consult one of the special maps (see p. 571) or the big historical pocket map of the United States for ideas on interesting side trips. Illustrations and illustrated text references are indicated in boldface type.

- A**
Abilene, Kans. 482, 502, 503, 506
Abraham, Plains of, Quebec 175
Acadian House, St. Martinville, La. 328, 329
Acadians 174, 328, 329
Acoma, N. Mex. 344, 378-379
Adams: John 209, 210, 214, 216, 220, 399; John Quincy 283; Samuel 183, 185, 186, 188, 189
Adams National Historic Site, Quincy, Mass. 399
Adena, house, Chillicothe, Ohio 285, 287
Airplane 564-565, 567
Alamance, battle, N. C. 158, 166
Alamo, San Antonio, Tex. 346, 386-388, 389
Alaska 542-545
Albany, N. Y. 97
Alcott, Louisa May 192
Alden, John 69, 518; house 70
Aleutian Islands, Alaska 346, 347
Alexandria, Va. 248, 249, 318
Allen, Ethan 196-197
America, discovery of 29, 30, 31
American Fur Company 289, 346
American Museum of Atomic Energy, Oak Ridge, Tenn. 567
Amish 108, 109
Anahuac, Tex. 386
Anchorage, Alaska 544
Andalusia, house, near Phila. 213, 310
Anderson, Robert 417, 419
André, John 216
Andrews' Raiders 456
Anian, Strait of 345
Animas Canyon, Colo. 528-529
Annapolis, Md. 120, 148, 149, 150, 253
Antietam, Md., battle 436, 438, 471, 475
Apache Pass, Ariz. 494-495
Appomattox Court House, Va. 463, 466
Arizona, U.S.S. 549
Ark and Dove 148, 153
Arlington, house: E. Shore, Va. 139, 143; Lee Mansion, Va. 420, 421
Arlington National Cemetery, Va. 24-25
Armour, Philip D. 493, 524
Army: of Northern Virginia 437, 462, 464; of the Cumberland 450, 453, 454, 457; of the Potomac 426, 429, 434, 438, 441, 442, 444, 457, 462, 464; of Tennessee 457
Arnold, Benedict 196-197, 216, 226, 227, 228, 229; monument to 229
Ash Lawn, house, Va. 254
Ashland, house, Lexington, Ky. 393
Ashley House, Deerfield, Mass. 95
Astor, John Jacob 290, 348, 538
Astoria, Fort, Columbia River 348
Atlanta, Ga. 449, 458, 459
Atomic research 566, 567
Audubon, John James 407; home 212, 219
Augusta, Ga. 158
Austin, Stephen F. 388, 502
Automobile 560-561, 562, 563
Baker, Jim 358, 359
Balboa, Vasco Nuñez de 28
Balloons, observation 434, 441
Baltimore, Md. 253, 311, 312, 313, 316, 318, 516, 527
Baltimore and Ohio Railroad 283, 521-522, 527
Bangor, Maine 519
Bar Harbor, Maine 538
Barbed wire 486-487
Barker, John 189, 192
Barrett, James 191; farm, Concord, Mass. 188, 190
Bartholdi, Frédéric Auguste 530
Bartlesville, Okla. 506
Bartram, John 219; house, Phila., Pa. 212, 219
Bath, N. C. 158
Baton Rouge, La. 328, 329
Battery Wagner, S. C., assault on 430
Battle Road, Mass. 188, 192
Bayou region, La. 328-329
Bayou, Roy 505
Beatrice, Nebr. 481, 508
Beaufort, S. C. 158, 163, 164
Beauregard, P.G.T. 418, 419, 427, 428
Beauvoir, house, Miss. 420
Beaver 341, 343, 348; trap 342
Bell, Alexander Graham 556, 557; Museum, Baddeck, N. S. 556, 557
Beloit, Wis. 470
Bemis Heights, N. Y. 228, 229
Bennington, battle, Vt. 227, 228
Bent, William 359
Bent's Fort, Colo. 359, 363
Bering, Vitus 346, 347
Berkeley, John, Lord 115-116
Berkeley, house, Va. 138, 139
Best Friend of Charleston 552
Biddle, Nicholas, house 213, 310
Bienville, Sieur de 406
Big Bone Lick, Ky. 34, 267
"Big Knives" 268, 271
Bill of Rights 18
Billy the Kid 482; poster 507
Biltmore, estate, N. C. 538-539
Bird Cage Theater, Tombstone 497
Birmingham, Ala. 536-537
Bishop Museum, Honolulu 549
Bismarck, N. Dak. 355
Black Bart 494
Black Hawk War 470
Black Hills, S. Dak. 497, 500, 514
Blackbeard 116, 117, 135
Blackfish, chief 268, 269
Bladensburg, Md. 318
Blair, Rev. James 118
Blakiston Island, Md. 148
Blockhouse 175, 286, 346, 367
Bloody Marsh, battle, Ga. 138
Bocage, plantation, La. 328, 332
Bonnet, Maj. Stede 117
Boone, Daniel 264, 265-269
Boonesboro, Ky. 268, 269
Boot Hill: Dodge City 507; Tombstone 497; Virginia City 500
Booth, John Wilkes 413, 476
Bordentown, N. J. 202, 204, 205
Boston, Mass. 306-307, 317, 397, 398; colonial 114, 117, 119; founding 70-71, 72; Revolution 179-187, 188, 189, 194-195
Boston Latin School 117, 398
Bowie, Jim 359
Boyle, Thomas 318
Bradford, William 68, 70
Brandon, house, Va. 138, 139
Brandywine, battle, Pa. 212, 214, 239
Brant, Joseph 174, 227
Breakers, The, Newport, R. I. 538
Bremo, house, Va. 254
Bridger, Jim 358, 366
Brisbois House, Prairie du Chien, Wis. 286
British Navigation Acts 114
Brooklyn Heights, battle, N. Y. 199
Brown, John 411, 413, 414, 415
Bruton Parish Church, Williamsburg, Va. 132
Buchanan, James 372, 418
Buckingham Meeting House, Pa. 107
Buckman Tavern, Lexington, Mass. 188, 190
Buffalo 34, 267, 341, 342, 344, 345, 361, 481, 485, 487, 488
Bulfinch, Charles 307
Bull Run, Va.: first battle 427-429; second battle 437
Bulfinch Hole House, Concord, Mass. 188, 192
Bunker Hill, Charlestown, Mass. 188, 194-195
Bunyan, Paul 519
Burbank, Luther 559
Burgoyne, John 226, 227, 228, 229
Burnside, Ambrose 440, 441, 442
Burr, Aaron 407
Bushy Run Battlefield, Pa. 170
Butterfield Overland Mail 484, 494
Buttrick, John 191; farm, Concord, Mass. 188, 191
Byrd, William II 115, 138, 140, 144
C
Cabeza de Vaca, Alvar Nuñez 41, 342
Cabot: John 28, 31, 63; Sebastian 28, 31
Cabrillo, Juan Rodríguez 345, 384
Cahokia, Ill. 271, 256, 290
Cairo, Ill. 449, 450-451
Cajun country 328-329
Calamity Jane 482, 500
Calhoun, John C. 314, 392, 393
California Trail 362
Calvert: Cecilius 148, 153; George 148
Cambridge, Mass. 118, 119, 188, 189, 195
Camino del Diablo 345
Camino Real, El 380, 384
Campus Martius Museum, Marietta 285
Canaveral, Cape, Fla. 567, 568
Cardmaking 114, 300
Cape Fear River, N. C. 116, 117, 165
Capitals, U. S. 253; *see also* Wash., D. C.
Capitol: Old State; Corydon, Ind. 286; Richmond, Va. 286; Territorial, Vincennes, Ind. 286; 289; U. S., Wash., D. C. 14-17, 253; Williamsburg, Va. 121-125, 134-135, 137; *see also* State House

Carmel Mission, Calif. 382-383, 384
 Carnegie, Andrew 524, 536, 537
 Caroline, Fort, Fla. 38, 40-41
 Carroll, Charles 154, 521
 Carson, Kit 359
 Carson City, Nev. 498
 Carter: John 254; Robert "King" 143
 Carteret, Sir George 115-116
 Carter's Grove, house, Va. 139, 143
 Cartier, Jacques 28, 32
 Carver, George Washington 558, 561
 Casimir, Fort, Del. 102
 Castillo de San Marcos, St. Augustine 38, 42, 43
 Castle, The, near Phila. 213
 Castle Garden, N. Y. City 531
 Catskill Turnpike, N. Y. 273, 275
 Cattlemen 480, 485-486, 502-507
 Celilo Falls, Columbia River 356-357
 Central City, Colo. 499
 Central Pacific Railroad 525, 526-527
 Chadds Ford, Pa. 106, 212
 Chalmette Nat. Hist. Park, La. 319, 320
 Champlain, Samuel de 32, 33
 Champlain, Lake 172-173, 226, 315, 318
 Chancellorsville, battle, Va. 442, 462
 Charleston, S. C. 115, 116, 120, 158, 160-161, 164, 230, 231, 416-419
 Charlestown, Mass. 70, 184, 188, 193, 194
 Charles Town, W. Va. 413, 415
 Charlottesville, Va. 254, 262, 263
 Chartres, Fort, Ill. 286, 290
 Chattanooga, Tenn. 449, 453, 454, 456-457
 Chelsea, house, Va. 138, 143
 Chesapeake 314
 Chesapeake and Ohio Canal 274, 275, 278-283
 Cheyenne, Wyo. 527
 Chicago, Ill. 286, 290-291, 470, 567
 Chickamauga, battle, Ga. 449, 454-455, 459
 Chickasaw Bluffs, battle, Miss. 452
 Chilkoot Pass, Alaska-Can. 542-543
 Chillihothe, Ohio 285, 287
 Chimney Rock, Nebr. 363, 366
 Chisholm Trail 503
 Chowan County Courthouse, N. C. 158
 Chowning's Tavern, Williamsburg, Va. 121, 122
 Christ Church, Philadelphia 207, 209
 Christina, Fort, Del. 102
 Cibola, Seven Cities of 31, 343
 Cincinnati, Ohio 286, 471
 Civil War 424-467: Jug Handle campaign 462-466; Peninsula campaign 434, 435, 437, 439; Rivers campaign 448-457; Shenandoah Valley campaign 434-435; Sherman's drive 458-459; South, blockaded 439, 460-461; *see also* place names of battles
 Clark: George Rogers 268, 270-272, 286; William 34, 348, 349-357
 Clay, Henry 19, 392, 393; home 393
 Clemence House, Providence, R. I. 88
 Clemens, Samuel 337, 338, 339, 493, 495, 522, 546; home 338, 339
 Cleveland, Ohio 287, 532
 Clinton: De Witt 274; Sir Henry 193, 194, 224, 227, 229, 231, 232
 Clipper ships 311, 396, 397
 Cliveden, house, Germantown, Pa. 213, 218-219
 Cochine 510
 Cod 80, 81
 Cody, "Buffalo Bill" 484
 Cody, Wyo. 506
 Cold Harbor, battle, Va. 463, 464
 Coloma, Calif. 490, 493

Colonial Inn, Concord, Mass. 188, 192
 Colonial Nat. Hist. Park, Va. 235
 Colonization: Delaware Valley 102; French 40-41, 160, 285, 287, 321, 329; Hudson Valley 96-100; New England 62-73, 86-91; Pennsylvania 104-108, 110; South 40-41, 42, 43-59, 115-116, 148, 150, 152-153, 166, 169; Southwest 345, 346, 375-383
 Colt, Samuel 550
 Columbia, Calif. 491, 494
 Columbia 306, 307, 348
 Columbia River 348, 350, 356, 357, 366
 Columbia University, N. Y. C. 118, 199
 Columbus, Christopher 28, 29, 30, 31, 38
 Columbus, Ohio 287, 471
 Compromise of 1850 393
 Comstock Lode 495, 498
 Concord, Mass. 188, 190, 191-193, 401
 Concord coach 274
 Conestoga wagon 274-275
 Confederacy 418, 420-421; *see also* Civil War
 Congress, U. S. 16-17, 392
 Congress Hall, Philadelphia 210
 Connecticut Rangers 200, 201
 Connelly's Tavern, Natchez 406, 407
 Conquistadores 32, 41, 343
 Constellation 316
 Constitution 316, 317
 Constitution of the United States 18
 Continental Congress 19, 148, 182, 205, 207-214
 Continental Divide 349, 354
 Cook, James 306, 347, 348, 546, 548
 Cooper: James Fenimore 296; Peter 522, 551
 Cooperstown, N. Y. 296-297, 298
 Corn 52, 80, 81
 Cornstalk, chief 270
 Cornwallis, Lord, Charles 163, 205, 230, 231, 232, 233, 235
 Cornwallis House, Wilmington, N. C. 158
 Coronado, Francisco Vázquez de 31, 343, 344
 Corte Real, Gaspar 28, 31
 Cortés, Hernando 28, 31
 Corydon, Ind. 286
 Cotton 396, 402-403, 404
 Council Bluffs, Iowa 363, 470
 Cowpens, S. C. 230, 231
 Craig, John, house 213, 310
 Crailo, Fort, N. Y. 98, 100, 170
 Creoles 323, 329
 Crocker, Charles 525
 Crockett, Davy 386, 389
 Croghan, George 315
 Crook, George 488, 514, 526
 Cross Manor, Md. 152, 154
 Croton-on-Hudson, N. Y. 98
 Crown Point, Fort, N. Y. 170, 175, 239
 Culpeper, Va. 443, 463
 Cultural Gardens, Cleveland, Ohio 532
 Cumberland, Md. 273, 281, 283; Fort 239
 Cumberland Gap, Tenn. 265, 267, 273, 275
 Custer, George Armstrong 514-515; Battlefield, memorial, Mont. 515; State Park, S. Dak. 496
 Cypress Gardens, Charleston, S. C. 162

Dare, Virginia 44
 Davis, Jefferson 391, 407, 418, 420, 428, 466; home 420
 Dawes, William 188
 Dayton, Ohio 286, 287
 Deadwood, S. Dak. 482, 500

Dearborn, Fort, Ill. 286, 290, 315
 Declaration of Independence 18, 186, 206, 208-209, 210-211, 214, 254
 Declaration of Rights, Virginia 147
 Deerfield, Mass. 92-95
 Defiance, Fort, Ohio 286, 288
 Delaware River 202, 203, 213
 Delaware Valley 102, 105
 Denver, Colo. 499, 503
 Derby House, Salem, Mass. 304
 De Soto, Hernando 28, 31, 32, 335
 Destréhan, house, La. 329, 332
 Detroit, Mich. 271, 272, 287, 290, 314, 315, 316, 467, 562
 D'Evereux, house, Natchez 404, 408
 Devil's Den, Gettysburg, Pa. 443, 446
 Dickinson, John 208, 210, 211
 Discovery 47, 49
 Dodge City, Kans. 503, 504, 506
 Dolores, Mission, San Francisco 383, 384, 385
 Donelson, Fort, Tenn. 448, 449
 Donner Party 368
 Donner Pass, Calif.-Nev. 362, 369
 Doubleday, Abner 419, 442
 Douglas, Stephen A. 472, 475
 Drake: Edwin L. 522; Sir Francis 28, 40, 42, 345
 Drayton Hall, S. C. 163, 164
 Dunster, Henry 118
 Du Pont powder mills 303
 Duquesne, Fort, Pa. 170, 172, 175, 239
 Durango, Colo. 529
 Duxbury, Mass. 68, 69

Eagle 10
 Early, Jubal 464, 466
 Earp, Wyatt 482, 506, 507
 East Corinth, Vt. 395
 Eastern Shore: Md. 150, 153, 154; Va. 139, 143
 Eastman, George 554, 555; house 554
 Economy, Pa. 289
 Edenton, N. C. 158
 Edgewood, house, Natchez 409
 Edison, Thomas Alva 552, 553, 555, 561
 Electricity 207, 550, 552, 553, 556
 Ellis Island, N. Y. 531
 El Morro Castle, P. R. 38, 39, 40, 41
 El Morro National Monument, N. Mex. 379
 Emancipation Proclamation 429, 475
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo 192, 531; home 401
 Endecott, John 72
 Ephrata Cloister, Pa. 108
 Ericsson, John 439, 551
 Erie, Lake, battle 315, 316
 Erie Canal, N. Y. 274, 275, 276-277
 Esopus (Kingston, N. Y.) 99
 Espiritu Santo, Mission, Tex. 391
 Eutaw Springs, battle, S. C. 230, 231
 Evangeline 174, 328
 Evans, Oliver 521
 Evelynton, house, Va. 138
 Ewell, Richard 446
 Exploration: early 28, 29, 30-37, 38, 41, 63-65, 97, 342-346; French 32, 33, 34, 289-290; Lewis and Clark 34, 348, 349-357; over the mountains 265-272, 335, 358-359; Pacific Northwest 346-348; Spanish, Southwest 342-346, 378, 379
 Eyre Hall, Va. 139, 143

Fairbanks, Alaska 543, 544
 Fairfax House, Alexandria, Va. 249
 Fallen Timbers, battle, Ohio 286, 288

INDEX TO MAPS

- Boston, Mass. (1693) 70
 California: "a goodly llande" (1625) 344;
 missions 384-385
 Cattle trails 503
 Civil War
 Battlefields (pocket map)
 Gettysburg 443
 Grant's Jug Handle campaign 463
 Rivers campaign 449
 Deerfield, Old, Mass. 95
 Emigrant trails 362-363
 French and Indian War 170
 Hawaii 546
 Hudson Valley, N. Y. 98
 Lewis and Clark Expedition 349
 Lincoln, Abraham, travels 470-471
 Louisiana, Cajun country 328-329
 Maryland, plantation houses 152-153
 New Castle, Del. 106-107
 New England and New York (17th C.) 87
 New World, footholds 38
 North America, discovery 28, 344
 Northwest Territory 286-287
 Ohio country, routes to 275
 Philadelphia, Pa., area, old homes 212-213
 Plymouth, Mass., landing of the Pilgrims 65
 Railroads: Promontory, Utah 525
 Revolutionary War
 "Midnight ride of Paul Revere" 188
 New York campaign 199
 Saratoga 227
 Trenton and Princeton 204
 Valley Forge 222
 War in the South 230
 Southland, colonial 158
 United States, historical (pocket map)
 Virginia: John Smith's map 52-53; tidewater
 plantations 138-139
 Washington, George, travels 239
 Washington, D. C., L'Enfant's plan 252-253

Falls of the Ohio 265, 272
 Falmouth, Mass. 309
 Faneuil Hall, Boston 179, 185, 186
 Farming: frontier 20, 271, 272;
 plains 481, 486-487, 506, 508-509;
 South 408-409; Yankee, colonial 80, 81
 Farragut, David Glasgow 449, 460, 461
 Ferguson, Patrick 231
 Fetterman, William 511
 "Fifty-four forty or fight" 367
 Fishing 32, 62-63, 80, 81, 307
 Fisk, Jim 523-524
 Five Forks, battle, Va., 463, 466
 Flag: California Bear 391; Confederate
 144-145; U. S. 121, 230, 312, 313,
 321, 416
 Flag House, Baltimore 313
 Flatboats 335
 Ford, Henry 553, 561-562
 Ford Mansion, Morristown, N. J. 225
 Ford's Theater, Wash., D. C. 476, 477
 Fort Hill, house, S. C. 393
 Fort Niobrara Game Reserve, Nebr. 505
 Fort Smith, Ark. 503, 506
 Fort Worth, Tex. 503, 506
 Forty-niners 482, 490-491, 493
 Foster, Stephen, Memorial Home 562
 Franklin, Benjamin 118, 119, 120, 207,
 208, 209, 211
 Franklin, State of 269, 275
 Franklinton (Columbus), Ohio 287
 Frary House, Deerfield, Mass. 95
 Frances Tavern, N. Y. City 238
 Frederica, Fort, Ga. 158
 Frederick, Md. 437, 443, 471; Fort 170
 Fredericksburg, Va. 248, 440-441, 443,
 463, 471
 Freeman, Daniel 481
 Freeman's Farm, battle, N. Y. 228
 Frémont, John C. 359, 391, 492
 French and Indian War 170-175
 Frey, Fort, N. Y. 170
 Friends Meeting House, Newport,
 R. I. 91
 Fritchie, Barbara 437
 Frontenac, Fort, Ont. 170, 175
 Frontier Museum, Custer State Park,
 S. Dak. 496
 Fugitive Slave Law 393, 398
 Fundamental Constitutions 116

Fur trade 33, 120, 289, 290, 306-307,
 336, 341, 342, 343, 346-347, 348
 359, 543

Gage, Thomas 189, 192, 193, 194
 Galesburg, Ill. 470, 472, 475
 Gallipolis, Ohio 285, 287
 Garrison, William Lloyd 398, 401
 Gates, Horatio 228, 229
 Gentryville, Ind. 470
 George, Fort, N. Y. 170
 George, Lake, battles, N. Y., 170, 171,
 172, 174
 Georgetown, D. C. 250, 251, 278-281
 Georgetown, S. C. 158, 164
 Germantown, Pa.: battle 213, 214, 218-
 219, 239; founding 106
 Geronimo 488, 511
 Gettysburg, Pa. 27, 424, 443-447;
 Address 13-14, 432, 475, 479
 Ghent, Treaty of 319
 "Ghost Dance" 514
 Gibson, Fort, Okla. 503, 512
 Gibson Girl 538
 Gilpin, Gideon, farmhouse, Chadds
 Ford, Pa. 106, 212
 Gist, Christopher 265
 Glassmaking 54, 300
 Glens Falls, N. Y. 519
 Gloria Dei Church, Philadelphia 103
 Gloucester, Mass. 81, 307
 Glover, John 199, 203
 Gnadenhütten, Ohio 285, 287
Godspeed 47, 48-49
 Gold Rush 482-483, 489-493, 494-495,
 498-500, 542-543, 544
 Golden Spike National Historic Site,
 Utah 527
 Goodnight-Loving Trail 503
 Goodyear, Charles 550, 551
 Goose Creek Church, S. C. 164
 Goshen, house, Va. 139, 143, 144-145
 Gould, Jay 538
 Graeme Park, house, Pa. 107, 213
 Gran Quivira National Monument,
 N. Mex. 380
 Grand Canyon, Ariz. 344
 Grand Portage, Minn. 286, 288-289
 Grant, Ulysses S. 391, 432, 448, 449,

 450, 451, 452, 453, 456, 457, 462-467
 Grasse, Count de 230, 232
 Gray, Robert 306, 348
 Great Falls, Mont. 506
 Great Falls Tavern, Md. 282
 Great Plains 20, 481, 482, 486-487,
 488, 503, 508
 Greeley, Horace 425, 486
 Green Bay, Wis. 33, 286, 289, 290
 Green Mountain Boys 196-197
 Green Ville, Fort, Ohio 288
 Greene, Nathanael 230, 231
 Greenfield Village, Dearborn, Mich.
 area 552, 553, 555, 559, 560-563
 Greenville, Ohio 284-285, 286, 288
 Grenville, Sir Richard 42
 Grouseland, house, Ind. 289
 Guilford Courthouse, battle, N. C.
 230, 231
 Gunston Hall, Va. 146

Hagerstown, Md. 437, 443
 Hagley Museum, Del. 302, 303
 Hale, Nathan 200, 201
 Hamilton: Alexander 205, 233, 407;
 Henry 271, 272
 Hammond-Harwood House, Annapolis,
 Md. 150-152, 154
 Hampden, house, Md. 153, 154
 Hampton, house: S. C. 158, 162;
 Towson, Md. 310, 311
 Hancock, John 188, 189, 208, 209
 Hannibal, Mo. 338-339
 Hard Bargain, house, Md. 152, 154
 Harlem Heights, battle, N. Y. 199, 200,
 201, 239
 Harmony, Pa. 289
 Harpers Ferry, W. Va. 283, 410-415,
 426, 437, 443, 471
 Harrison, William Henry 289, 315
 Harrodsburg, Ky. 268, 271
 Harte, Bret 494
 Harvard University, Cambridge, Mass.
 117-118, 119, 398
 Hasbrouck, Abraham, house, N. Y.
 98, 100
 Hawaii 546-549
 Hawikuh, pueblo 343
 Hawthorne, Nathaniel 192, 398

Hearst, William Randolph, estate 538, 540-541
 Helena, Mont. 506
 Henderson, Richard 267, 269, 270
 Henry: Andrew 348; Patrick 135, 183, 271
 Henry, Fort, Tenn. 448, 449
 Herkimer, Nicholas 226, 227
 Herkimer, Fort, N. Y. 170
 Hermitage, Nashville, Tenn. 320
 Hickok, Wild Bill 482
 Hill: A. P. 446; James Jerome 524, 537
 Hobkirk's Hill, battle, S. C. 230, 231
 Hodgenville, Ky. 471
 Holland, Mich. 553
 Holly Springs, Miss. 449
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell 316
 Home Moravian Church, Old Salem, N. C. 167
 Homesteaders 481, 486-487, 508-509
 Honolulu, Hawaii 546, 548, 549
 Hood, John B. 455, 459
 Hood, Mount, Oreg. 356
 Hooker: Joseph 442, 457; Thomas 86
 Hope Lodge, Whitemarsh, Pa. 213, 217
 Hopewell Village, Pa. 303
 Hopkins: Mark 493, 525; Samuel 518
 Houmas House, La. 328, 332
 House of Seven Gables, Salem, Mass. 74, 75
 Houston, Sam 389, 390, 391
 Howe: Elias 551; John I. 517; Sir William 193-195, 198, 199, 201, 202, 214, 216, 220, 224, 226, 227, 229
 Hubbard, Gardiner Greene 556
 Hudson, Henry 97, 100
 Hudson River, N. Y. 97-98, 100; Revolution 198, 199, 200, 201
 Hudson Valley, N. Y.: Revolution 226-229; settlements 98, 99, 100, 101
 Hudson's Bay Company 347, 348, 366, 367
 Huguenots 41, 100, 115, 116, 120, 160, 269
 Huntington: Collis P. 525; Henry E. 538
 Huntsville, Tex. 391
 Hyde Park, N. Y. 98

Ide, William B. 391
 Illinois country 290
 Immigration 269, 396, 530-535
 Independence, Mo. 361, 363, 377, 482
 Independence Hall, Philadelphia 4, 6, 208, 210-211, 213
 Independence Rock, Wyo. 363, 366
 Indiana Territory 288-289
 Indians: Deerfield massacre 92-94; French and Indian War 170-175; Jamestown, Va. 47, 50, 53, 55-56, 57, 59, 61; Lewis and Clark Expedition 351, 352-357; New World 30-31, 35, 36, 45, 47, 65; Northwest Territory 268-272, 285, 287-289; Pacific Northwest 347, 356-357, 365; Plains 346-347, 487, 488, 494-495, 500, 508, 510-515; at Shackamaxon 104-105; and Spanish conquest 342-346, 376-379, 380, 383
 Industry: beginnings 82-85, 114, 120, 294, 300-303; expansion 394, 396-397, 516, 517-524, 536-537; *see also* individual industries
 Ingram, David 34
 Inscription Rock, N. Mex. 379
 International Frog Olympics, Angels Camp, Calif. 493
 Intolerable Acts 182, 183
 Inventions 517-518, 550-551, 552-557, 560-565, 568

Iolani Palace, Honolulu 546, 548, 549
 Iron industry 82-85, 303, 396-397
 Ironclads 432, 439, 451, 461, 551
 Irving, Washington 99, 100; home 101
Jackson: Andrew 319, 320, 407; home 320; Thomas J. (Stonewall) 391, 428, 433, 435, 437, 442
 Jackson, Miss. 452
 Jackson Square, New Orleans 321, 322
 James: George S. 417, 419; Jesse 482
 James Fort, Va. 38, 46, 47
 James River plantations, Va. 138, 139-143
 Jamestown, Va. 38, 46-59
 Janesville, Wis. 470
 Jefferson, Thomas 254-263; Declaration of Independence 209, 214; home 254, 255-259; President 265, 314, 349, 350; quoted 265, 349, 411-412
 Jefferson Memorial, Wash., D. C. 23
 Jefferson National Expansion Memorial, St. Louis 336
 Jenkins' Ear, War of 158, 169
 Johnny Applesseed 272
 Johnson, William 172; home 174-175
 Johnson, Fort, N. Y. 170; S. C. 417, 419
 Johnson Hall, Johnstown, N. Y. 174-175
 Johnston, Joseph E. 426, 427, 428, 435, 458, 467
 Joliet, Louis 290, 334, 335
 Jones: John Paul 316; Thomas ap Catesby 391
 Joseph, chief 488
 Judah, Theodore Dehone 525
 Jumel Mansion, N. Y. 199, 201
 Jumonville Glen, Pa. 172
 Juneau, Joe 544

Kalamazoo, Mich. 471
 Kamehameha I 546, 548
 Kansas Pacific Railroad 502, 503
 Kaskaskia, Ill. 271, 286
 Kearney, Fort, Nebr. 363
 Kearny, Stephen W. 390
 Keelboat 335, 350-351, 353
 Kennesaw Mountain, Ga. 458, 459
 Kentucky rifle 266-267, 320
 Key, Francis Scott 313
 King Philip's War 94
 King Ranch, Tex. 504
 Kings Mountain, battle, S. C. 230, 231, 269
 Kingston, N. Y. 98, 99, 100
 Kino, Eusebio Francisco 345, 380
 Kip's Bay, N. Y. 199, 201
 Kitty Hawk, N. C. 564-565
 Klondike River, Alaska 543
 Knob Creek Farm, Ky. 469, 471
 Knowlton's Rangers 200, 201
 Knox, Henry 203
 Knox College, Galesburg, Ill. 472, 475
 Koskhonong, Lake, Wis. 470
 Kutztown, Pa., folk festival 111

Lafayette, Marquis de 212, 213, 232, 233, 243
 LaFitte, Jean 320
 Lancaster, Pa. 108, 214, 253, 266
 Lancaster Pike 273, 275
 Langtry, Tex. 505
 La Purísima Concepción, mission, Calif. 384
 Laramie, Fort, Wyo. 346-347, 362, 363, 366
 Larned, Fort, Kans. 363, 512
 La Salle, René Robert Cavalier,

Sieur de 171, 290, 335
 Lawrence, James 316
 Lead, S. Dak., mine 536
 Leavenworth, Fort, Kans. 363
 Le Boeuf, Fort, Pa. 170, 172, 239
 Lee, Robert E. 391, 414, 421; Civil War 432, 434-438, 440-447, 462, 464, 466; home 420
 Lee, Fort, N. J. 198, 199, 201
 Lee, Thomas, House, Conn. 89
 L'Enfant, Pierre Charles 252-253
 Lewis, Meriwether 34, 348, 349-357
 Lewis and Clark Expedition 34, 348, 349-357
 Lexington, Ky. 393, 471
 Lexington, Mass. 188-190, 192
 Liberty, Statue of, N. Y. Harbor 3, 530, 531
 Liberty Bell, Independence Hall, Philadelphia 4, 212
 Ligonier, Fort, Pa. 170
 Lincoln: Abraham 17, 19, 20, 24-25, 394, 396, 468-479, 548; Civil War 418, 425, 428-429, 438, 449, 464, 465; Douglas debates 470, 472, 475; Emancipation Proclamation 429, 475; Gettysburg Address 13-14, 432, 475, 479; home 473; travels 335, 469, map 470-471; Nancy Hanks 469
 Lincoln, Fort Abraham, State Park, N. Dak. 351
 Lincoln, N. Mex. 505, 507
 Lincoln County War 505-506
 Lincoln Memorial, Wash., D. C. 12-13, 478-479
 Little Bighorn, battle, Mont. 514-515
 Livingston, Robert 209
 Locomotive, steam 521, 522; chase, Civil War 456
 Log cabins 102, 271, 287, 469, 497, 558
 Logan, chief 270
 Loma, Point, Calif. 384
 Long Island, N. Y. 298, 308, 538, 565; battle 198, 199, 200, 203, 239
 Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth 328, 329, 398, 400, 562
 Longfellow's Wayside Inn, South Sudbury, Mass. 398, 400, 562
 Longstreet, James 441, 446
 Longwood, house, Natchez, Miss. 407
 Lookout Mountain, battle, Tenn. 456, 457
 Lord Dunmore's War 270
 Los Angeles, Calif. 346, 384
 Lost Colony, Roanoke Island 44-45
 Louisiana Purchase 348, map 349
 Louisiana Territory 321, 323, 350
 Louisville: Ga. 158; Ky. 265, 471
 Lovejoy, Elijah 401
 Lumbering 120, 518-521, 536

McClellan, George B. 391, 429, 434, 435, 437, 438, 440
 McClellanville, S. C. 158
 McCormick, Cyrus Hall 550
 McCoy, Joseph G. 502
 Macdonough, Thomas 319
 McDowell, Irvin 426, 427, 428
 McHenry, Fort, Baltimore 152, 312, 313
 McIntire, Samuel 305, 306
 Mackenzie, Alexander 347
 Mackinac Island, Mich., fort 286, 290
 McKonkey Ferry House, N. J. 203, 204
 McLoughlin, John 366; home 366
 Madison: Dolley 260, 314, 318; James 261, 314
 Magnolia Gardens, S. C. 164
 Manassas, Va. 426, 427, 463; National Battlefield Park 433

Mandan, Fort, N. Dak. 353
 Mandan Indians 351, 352
 Manhattan Island, N. Y. 96-97, 98-100, 199, 200
 Mansion House, Nauvoo, Ill. 372
 Marblehead, Mass. 307
 Marcos de Niza, Fray 343
 Marietta, Ohio 285, 287
 Marion, Francis (Swamp Fox) 231
 Marquette, Jacques 33, 290, 334, 335
 Marshall, James 489, 493
 Martha's Vineyard, Mass. 311
 Mason, George 146, 147
 Massasoit 65, 94
 Masterson, Bat 506, 507
 Mather: Cotton 72, 77; Richard 77
Mayflower 63, 65; replica 8, 64, 67
Mayflower Compact 65
 Meade, George G. 444, 446, 447, 462
 Medway, house, S. C. 159, 164
 Meigs, Fort, Ohio 315
 Mellon, Andrew 537
 Melrose, house, Natchez, Miss. 405, 406
 Melville, Herman 307, 398
 Menéndez de Avilés, Don Pedro 41
 Menlo Park, N. J., Edison's lab 552, 553, 561
 Mennonites 108, 110
Merrimac 432, 439
 Mexican War 390-391, 550
 Miami and Erie Canal, Ohio 275
 Michigan Road 274, 275
 Middle Plantation, Va. 118, 134
 Middleton Place, house, S. C. 164
 Miles, Nelson 514
 Mill Grove, house, Pa. 212, 219
 Milwaukee, Wis. 470
 Mining *see* Gold Rush, Silver mining
 Missionaries 365; French 33, 290;
 Hawaii 548; Moravian 285; Spanish 344, 345-346, 377, 378, 380, 382, 383
 Missionary Ridge, battle, Tenn. 457
 Missions: California 346, 380, 382-385;
 Southwest 345, 346, 377, 378,
 380-381; Whitman, Marcus 362, 365
 Mississippi River 334-339; Civil War 449, 451, 453; discovery 334, 335;
 plantation houses 328-333, 404, 405-409
 Missouri River 348, 349-353, 354
 Mobile, Ala. 449, 461
 Mobile Bay, battle, Ala. 460-461
Moby Dick 307
 Mohave Desert 359
 Mohawk Valley 276-277
Monitor 432, 439, 551
 Monmouth, battle, N. J. 224, 239
 Monroe, James 254, 260; home 260
 Montcalm, Louis Joseph de 174, 175
 Montaigne, house, Natchez, Miss. 408
 Monterey, Calif. 346, 384, 385, 391
 Montgomery, Ala. 418, 420, 421
 Monticello, Charlottesville, Va. 254-260
 Montpelier, house, Va. 261
 Moore, "King" Roger, house 163
 Moore House, Yorktown, Va. 233
 Moores Creek, battle, N. C. 230, 231
 Moravians 108, 166, 167, 285, 287
 Morgan: Daniel 228, 231; J. Pierpont 524, 537
 Morgan, Fort, Ala. 461
 Mormon Tabernacle, Salt Lake City 372, 373
 Mormon Temple, Salt Lake City 372, 373
 Mormons 363, 370-372
 Morristown, N. J. 224, 225
 Morse, Samuel F. B. 550, 551
 Morton Homestead, Pa. 102
 Motion pictures 552, 555

Moultrie, Fort, S. C. 417, 418
 Mount Pleasant, house, Philadelphia 212, 213, 215, 216
 Mount Vernon, Va. 236, 238, 240-247
 Mulberry, house, S. C. 162
 Murfreesboro, battle, Tenn. 450, 453
 Myrtle Grove, house: E. Shore, Md. 153, 154; Natchez 408
 Mystic Seaport, Conn. 306-307, 311

Nantucket Island, Mass. 81, 307, 309
 Narváez, Panfilo de 28, 41
 Nashville, Tenn. 269, 449, 459
 Nassau Hall, Princeton 205
 Natchez, Miss. 404, 405-409
 Natchez Trace 274, 275, 335, 407
 National Archives, Wash., D. C., 18
 National Geographic Society 556, 557
 National Road 273, 275
 Naumkeag, Mass. 72, 73
 Nauvoo, Ill. 370, 372
 Nebo, Mount, Utah 371
 Nebraska Territory 481
 Necessity, Fort, Pa. 170, 172, 173, 239
 Nelson House, Yorktown, Va. 234, 235
 Nevada State Museum, Carson City 498
 New Amsterdam 96, 97-100
 New Bedford, Mass. 309
 New Bern, N. C. 158, 164-165
 New Castle, Del. 102, 105; map 106-107
 New England: 292-301, 303, 394-401;
 colonial 62-95; maritime 304-309,
 311; Revolution 177-195, 198
 New Harmony, Ind. 286, 289
 New Hope, Pa. 107
 New Orleans, La. 318-327, 329, 449, 469, 470
 New Paltz, N. Y. 98, 100
 New Salem, Ill. 468, 469, 470
 New Sweden (Delaware) 102
 New York City 96-97, 115, 238, 253, 394, 471, 523, 530, 531; founding 96, 97-100; Revolution 198-201
 New York Thruway 98, 276-277
 Newport, Christopher 47, 48, 50, 55
 Newport, R. I. 90-91, 538
 Niagara, Fort, N. Y. 170, 175, 315
 Niagara Falls, N. Y.-Can. 33, 471
 Nicolet, Father 33
 Norfolk, Va. 439, 471
 North Anna, battle, Va., 463
 North Bridge, Concord, Mass. 188, 190, 191-193
 North West Company 347; stockade, restored 286, 288-289
 Northwest Passage 30, 32, 33, 50, 97, 345, 346, 347
 Northwest Territory 270, 272, 273, 284-290
 Nuestra Señora de la Soledad, mission, Calif. 384
 Number One House, Zoar, Ohio 287
 Nurse, Rebecca 74

Oak Alley, house, La. 328, 330-331
 Oak Hill, house, Va. 260
 Oak Ridge, Tenn. 566, 567
 Oglethorpe, James 158, 166, 169
 Ohio and Erie Canal, Ohio 275
 Ohio country 146, 270, 271, 272, 284-287, 288; routes to 273-274, 275-277
 Ohio River 451
 Oil industry 522-523, 537
 Oklahoma Territory, opened 508, 509
 Old Barracks, Trenton, N. J. 204
 Old Colony House, Newport, R. I. 91
 Old Dutch Church, N. Y. 98, 99

Old North Church, Boston 179, 185, 188
 Old Ship Church, Hingham, Mass. 76
 Old Slave Market, Savannah 158
 Old State House, Boston, Mass. 179, 187
 Oñate, Juan de 345, 378
 Ontario, Fort, N. Y. 170, 174
 Oregon City, Ore. 366
 Oregon Territory 348
 Oregon Trail 362-363, 364, 366, 481, 488
 Oriskany, battle, N. Y. 226-227
 Orton, house, N. C. 158, 163
 Ottawa, Ill. 470, 475
 Otwell, house, Md. 154-155
 Our House, Gallipolis, Ohio 285, 287

Pacific Northwest 343, 347, 348, 367; Lewis and Clark 354-357; timber 519-520, 536
 Pakenham, Sir Edward 319, 320
 Palo Alto, Tex., battlefield 391
 Panama Canal 565
 Paoli, battle, Pa., 212
 Paris, Treaty of 272
 Parker: "Hanging Judge" 506; John 189, 190
 Pawtucket, R. I. 303
 Pearl Harbor, Hawaii 548, 549
 Pelham Bay Park, N. Y. 199
 Penn, William 104, 105, 110, 117
 Penn Treaty Park, Pa. 213
 Pennsbury Manor, Pa. 105, 110
 Pennsylvania Canal, Pa. 274, 275
 Pennsylvania Dutch 108-111
 Pennsylvania rifle 266-267, 320
 Pennsylvania Road 273, 275
 Pepperrell, Lady, House, Kittery Point 88
 Pepperrell, William 171, 518
 Perry, Oliver Hazard 315, 316, 317
 Petersburg, battle, Va. 463, 464, 465, 466
 Philadelphia, Pa. 103, 106, 115, 117, 118, 206-219; houses, of area 212-219, 310
 Philipsburg Manor, N. Y. 98, 100
 Philipse Manor, N. Y. 98, 100
 Phonograph 552, 553
 Photography 554-555
 Pickett, George 367, 424, 431, 443, 447
 Pierce-Nichols House, Salem, Mass. 306
 Pig War 367
 Pike, Zebulon 359
Pilgrims 62-69, 80, 518
 Pioneer Village, Salem, Mass. 72, 73
 Pioneer Woman, statue, Ponca City, Okla. 508
 Pipe Spring Nat. Mon., Ariz. 372
 Pitcher, Molly 224
 Pitt, Fort, Pa. 170, 172, 175, 239
 Pittsburgh, Pa. 170, 175, 522
 Placerville, Calif. 493
 Plain, Fort, N. Y. 170
 Platte River 363, 364, 365
 Plattsburg, N. Y. 319
 Plimoth Plantation 68
 Plymouth, Mass. 65, 66-67, 68
 Pocahontas 50, 53
 Pohick Church, Va. 247
 Polk, James K. 367, 390, 482
 Pollard, Ann 70, 71
 Ponca City, Okla. 508
 Ponce de León, Juan 28, 38, 41
 Pontiac, chief 290
 Pony Express 20, 484-485
 Pope, John 437
 Population 120, 534-535
 Port Hudson, La. 449

Porter, David Dixon 452, 465
 Potomac River 410-411, 442
 Powell House, Pa. 212, 213, 214, 216
 Powhatan 50, 52, 53, 55
 Prairie du Chien, Wis. 256, 289, 290
 Prescott: Samuel 188; William 195
 Preston, house, Md. 152, 154
 Prince George Episcopal Church,
 Georgetown, S. C. 155, 164
 Princeton, N. J. 253; battle 203, 205, 239
 Princeton University, N. J. 118
 Printing press 301
 Printz, Johan 102
 Promontory, Utah 525, 526-527
 Prospect Park, Pa. 102
 Providence, R. I. 86, 88, 114
 Provincetown, Mass. 65
 Puritans 70-79, 80, 86, 87, 114, 115, 118
 Pulton, house, Va. 139, 143, 145
 Put-in-Bay, Ohio 287, 315, 317
 Putnam: Israel 178, 184, 195; Rufus 285

Quakers 90, 91, 104, 106, 107, 115, 116
 Quebec (city), battle, Canada 175
 Queen Anne's War 94, 171
 Quincy, Mass., Adams' home 399

Railroads 274, 396, 487, 502, 506,
 521-522, 523, 524, 525-529

Raleigh, Sir Walter 42, 44, 47
 Raleigh, Fort, N. C. 38, 44
 Raleigh Tavern, Williamsburg, Va.
 123, 135, 136

Rall, Johann Gottlieb 203, 205
 Ranchos de Taos, mission, N. Mex. 377
 Readbourne, house, Md. 150, 153
 Recovery, Fort, Ohio 256, 288
 Red Cloud, chief 511
 Red River, house, Va. 511
 Redlands, house, Va. 254
 Rensselaer, N. Y. 98
 Resaca de la Palma, Tex. 391
 Resurrection Manor, Md. 152, 154
 Reverse, Paul 120, 156, 185, 186, 188
 Revolutionary War 176-235; on the
 frontier 271-272; *see also* place
 names of battles

Revolver, Colt 486, 488, 550
 Reynolds Tavern, Annapolis, Md. 148
 Richmond, Va. 263, 421, 434, 437,
 462, 463, 464, 466, 469, 471
 Ringgold House, Md. 150, 152
 Rip Van Winkle 100, 101
 Roanoke Island, N. C. 38, 42, 44, 45
 Rochambeau, Count de 232
 Rochester, N. Y. 555
 Rockefeller: John D. 524, 537; John
 D., Jr. 122, 136; William 538
 Rodriguez Canal, La. 318-319
 Rogers' Rangers 170-171
 Rolfe: John 53, 57; Thomas, house 60
 Roosevelt: Franklin D., Nat. Hist. Site,
 N. Y. 98; Theodore 288, 487, 565
 Rosalie, house, Natchez, Miss. 406
 Rose Hill, house, Md. 152, 154
 Rosewell, house, Va. 139, 143
 Ross, Fort, Calif. 347, 490
 Russell, Charles M. 486, 506, 507

Sacagawea 351, 353, 354, 355, 357
 Sackett's Harbor, N. Y. 315
 Sacramento, Calif. 484, 525
 Sag Harbor, Long Island, museum 305
 Sagamore, house, Oyster Bay, N. Y. 565
 Saginaw, Mich. 519
 St. Augustine, Fla. 41, 42, 43, 158
 St. Francis of Assisi Church, N. M. 377

St. Frederic, Fort, N. Y. 170
 St. Ignace, Mich. 286, 290
 St. Joseph, Mo. 361, 482, 484
 St. Leger, Barry 226, 227
 St. Louis, Mo. 286, 336-337
 St. Louis Cathedral, New Orleans
 322, 323
 St. Luke's Church, Va. 60, 139
 St. Marys City, Md. 148
 St. Mary's-in-the-Mountains,
 Virginia City, Nev. 499
 St. Michael, Cathedral of, Sitka,
 Alaska 544, 545
 St. Paul, Minn. 524
 Salem, Mass.: colonial 70, 72, 74, 114;
 seafaring 304-305, 306; witchcraft
 72, 74-75
 Salem, Old, N. C. 155, 166, 167
 Salt Lake City, Utah 362, 371, 372, 373
 Samoset 65
 San Antonio, Tex. 346, 380, 386-388,
 389, 391
 San Antonio de Padua, mission,
 Calif. 384
 San Buenaventura, mission, Calif. 384
 San Diego de Alcalá, mission, Calif.
 346, 383, 384
 San Fernando Rey de España, mission,
 Calif. 384
 San Francisco, Calif. 346, 355, 490,
 492-493, 532
 San Francisco, house, La. 328, 333
 San Francisco de Asís (Mission
 Dolores) Calif. 383, 384, 355
 San Francisco Solano, mission,
 Calif. 384
 San Gabriel Arcángel, mission,
 Calif. 384
 San Jacinto, battle, Tex. 389, 390
 San José, mission, San Antonio 380
 San José de Guadalupe, mission,
 Calif. 384
 San José de Tumacacori, mission,
 Ariz. 380
 San Juan Bautista, mission, Calif.
 383, 384
 San Juan Capistrano, mission, Calif.
 383, 384, 385
 San Juan Islands, Wash. 367
 San Juan National Historic Site, P. R. 41
 San Luis Obispo de Tolosa, mission,
 Calif. 384
 San Luis Rey de Francia, mission,
 Calif. 383, 384, 355
 San Marino, Calif. 538
 San Miguel Arcángel, mission, Calif. 384
 San Miguel Church, Santa Fe 378
 San Rafael Arcángel, mission, Calif. 384
 San Simeon State Historical
 Monument, Calif. 538, 540-541
 San Xavier del Bac, mission, Ariz.
 350, 351
 Santa Anna, Antonio López de 386,
 389, 390, 391
 Santa Barbara, mission, Calif. 383, 394
 Santa Clara de Asís, mission, Calif. 384
 Santa Cruz, mission, Calif. 384
 Santa Fe, N. M. 345, 362, 374-377, 378
 Santa Fe Trail 363, 374-375, 377,
 512, 513
 Santa Rosa, Calif. 559
 Santa Inés, mission, Calif. 384
 Saratoga, battle, N. Y. 226-229
 Saratoga Springs, Utah 370
 Saugus, Mass., ironworks 82-85
 Sault Ste. Marie, Mich. 257, 290
 Savannah, Ga. 155, 169, 230, 231, 459
 Schoenbrunn, Ohio 285, 287
 Scott, Winfield 390, 425
 Scotts Bluff, Nebr. 363, 364, 366

Seagull Monument, Salt Lake City 371
 Seamen's Bethel, New Bedford,
 Mass. 309
 Sears House, Boston 307
 Senate House, Kingston, N. Y. 98, 100
 Serra, Father Junipero 382, 383
 Seven Gables, house, E. Shore, Va. 143
 Sevier, "Nolichucky Jack" 269-270
 Seward, William H. 543
 Sharpsburg, Md. 438
 Shawnee Trail 503
 Shelburne Museum, Vt. 298, 299, 301
 Sheldon, John 92
 Sheldon-Hawks House, Deerfield,
 Mass. 94-95
 Sheldon Church, S. C. 163, 165
 Sheldon's Tavern, Litchfield, Conn. 59
 Shenandoah River 410
 Shepard, Alan B., Jr. 567
 Sheridan, Philip H. 466
 Sherman: Roger 209; William Tecumseh
 391, 427, 428, 432, 449, 452, 457,
 458, 459, 465, 467
 Sherwood Forest, house, Va. 138, 143
 Shiloh, battle, Tenn. 449, 450
 Shirley, house, Va. 138, 142
 Sickles, Daniel 446
 Silver mining 495, 498, 499, 529
 Silverton, Colo. 529
 Sioux City, Iowa 350
 Sitka, Alaska 543, 544-545
 Sitting Bull 515
 Slater, Samuel 303
 Slater Mill, Pawtucket, R. I. 303
 Slave Market, Savannah, Ga. 158
 Slavery 57, 158, 164, 214, 393, 396,
 398, 400, 401, 403, 413-415, 429, 475
 Smith: Jedediah 358, 359; John 49-50,
 51, 52-53, 55, 65; Joseph 370, 372
 Smith's Castle, R. I. 88
 Smithsonian Institution, Wash. D. C.
 22, 313, 491, 551
 Snelling, Fort, Minn. 513
 Sodbusters 486-487, 508-509
 Sonoma, Calif. 384, 391
 Sotterley, house, Md. 154
 South Mountain, Md. 438
 South Sudbury, Mass. 398, 400, 562
 Space probes 567, 568
 Spanish-American War 548
 Spinning 78, 127; mill 303
 Spotsylvania, battle, Va. 463
 Springfield, Ill. 470, 472, 473, 475
 Stagecoach 274, 483, 484, 494, 495, 496
 Stamp Act 178, 180
 Standish, Myles 69
 Stanford, Leland 525, 538
 Stanton Hall, Natchez, Miss. 404
 Stanwix, Fort, N. Y. 170, 227
 Stark, John 195, 227
 Starved Rock, Ill., fort 286, 290
 State House: Annapolis, Md. 149;
 Montgomery, Ala. 418, 420, 421;
 New Bern, N. C. 158, 161-165, 166;
 Old: Boston, Mass. 179, 187;
 St. Marys City, Md. 148, 152 *see*
also Capitol; Independence Hall
 Staten Island; N. Y. 198, 199
 Steam engine 517, 520, 521, 551
 Steamboat 334-336, 337, 338, 339
 Steel industry 516, 517, 536-537
 Stenton, house, Germantown, Pa. 107,
 213, 219
 Stephenson, Fort, Ohio 315
 Stevens, John 521
 Stevens, Fort, Wash., D. C. 464
 Stirling, Lord, William Alexander
 201; headquarters 213
 Stones River, battle, Tenn. 450
 Stony Brook, Long Island 295

Stony Point, N. Y. 288
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher 398, 401
 Stratford, house, Va. 421
 Strawberry Mansion, Pa. 213
 Stuart, J.E.B. 414, 444
 Sturbridge, Mass. 294-295, 297
 Stuyvesant, Peter 98, 97, 99
 Sumter, Fort, S. C. 416-419
 Sunnyside, house, N. Y. 98, 100, 101
 Supreme Court, U. S. 23
Susan Constant 47, 48
 Sutter, John A. 489, 490, 491
 Sutter's Fort, Calif. 362, 491
 Sycamore Shoals, Treaty of 267

Tacoma, Wash. 367
 Tank Cottage, Green Bay, Wis. 286, 289
 Taos, pueblo, N. Mex. 376, 378
 Tarleton, Banastre 231, 262
 Tarrytown, N. Y. 98, 100
 Taylor, Zachary 390
 Tecumseh 315
 Telegraph 390, 485, 550-551;
 multiple 556-557
 Telephone 556, 557
 Territorial Capitol, Vincennes, Ind.
 286, 289
Texas, U.S.S. 390
 Thomas, George H. 454, 457
 Thompson House, Setauket, Long
 Island 89
 Thompson-Neely House, Pa. 202,
 204, 213
 Thoreau, Henry David 192, 398,
 401, 524
 Thoroughgood, Adam, house, Va.
 61, 139
 Three Forks, Mont. 352, 353, 354
 Ticonderoga, Fort, N. Y. 170, 174, 175
 196-197, 227, 239; stockade near
 172-173
 Tinicum Island, Pa. 102
 Tippecanoe, battle, Ind. 286, 289
 Titusville, Pa. 522
 Tobacco 52, 53, 57, 155
 Toddsbury, house, Va. 139, 143
Tom Thumb, locomotive 522, 551
Tom Sawyer 338, 339
 Tombstone, Ariz. 481-482, 497
 Touro Synagogue, Newport, R. I. 90
 Trails, western: cattle 502-503, 506;
 emigrant 273-277, 348, 360-366,
 368-375, 481, 482, 486-488
 Transylvania Company 267, 270
 Travis, William Barret 386
 Trent House, Trenton, N. J. 204
 Trenton, N. J. 253; battle 202, 204-205,
 213, 214, 239
 Tryon, William 165-166
 Tryon Palace, New Bern, N. C. 158,
 164-165, 166
 Tuckahoe, house, Va. 138, 143
 Tulsa, Okla. 506
 Twain, Mark *see* Clemens, Samuel

Uncle Tom's Cabin 398, 401
 Union, Fort, N. Mex. 363, 375, 512
 Union Pacific Railroad 488, 525,
 526-527
 Utah Lake, Utah 370

Vallejo, Mariano 391
 Valley Forge, Pa. 212, 220-224, 225
 Valley Road 275
 Van Cortlandt Manor, N. Y. 98, 100
 Vancouver, Fort, Wash. 348, 362, 366
 Vandalia, Ill. 270, 274

Vanderbilt: Cornelius 524, 537, 538;
 George W., chateau 538-539
 Vanderbilt Mansion, N. Y. 98
 Verrazano, Giovanni da 28, 31
 Vespucci, Amerigo 28, 31
 Vicksburg, battle, Miss. 449, 450,
 451-453
 Victorio 511
 Vigilantes 483, 484
 Vincennes, Ind. 286, 289; battle 268,
 271-272
 Virginia, University of 262-263
 Virginia City, Mont. 500, 501
 Virginia City, Nev. 498-499
 Virginia Declaration of Rights 147
 Vizcaya, villa, Fla. 538
 Vizetelly, Frank 431
 Von Steuben, Baron 222, 223, 225
 Voting, 293, 547
 Voyageurs, French 289, 290

Wabash and Erie Canal 274, 275
 Waggoner Ranch, Tex. 504-505
 Wagons, covered 20, 274, 360-364, 365,
 366, 371, 374-375, 481, 482, 510, 512
 Wakefield, Va. 236, 238
 Walden Pond, Concord, Mass. 401
 Walker, Thomas 262, 265
 Wall Street, N. Y. City 100, 394
 War of 1812 312-320
 Washington: Booker T. 558; George
 25, 236-253, 344; birthplace 236,
 238; canal, engineered 274, 280-281;
 estate 236, 238, 240-247; French and
 Indian War 171, 172, 173; Revolution
 198, 199, 201, 202, 203, 204, 213,
 220-225, 232, 233, 235; travels 162,
 165, map 239; Martha 224, 225, 238,
 253; Mary 236, 248
 Washington, D. C. 12-27, 250, 251,
 477-479; canal 278-281; Civil War
 464, 467; plan, L'Enfant's 252-253;
 War of 1812 318
 Washington, Fort, N. Y. 198, 199, 201;
 Ohio 286
 Washington Crossing State Park, Pa.
 202
 Washington Monument, Wash., D. C.
 14, 26-27
 Wataugans 269, 270
 Wattle-and-daub houses 46, 56-57
 Wayne, "Mad Anthony" 212, 213,
 287-288
 Wayne, Fort, Ind. 286
 Waynesborough, house, Pa. 212, 216
 Weaving 78, 297
 Webster, Daniel 392, 393, 401
 Wells Fargo 491, 494, 500
 West 480-515; exploration 342-348,
 349-357; fur trappers 340, 341-342,
 347, 348, 358-359; homesteaders 481,
 486-487, 508-509; Indian wars 510-
 515; migration 360-364, 365, 366,
 368, 371, 372, 374-375, 481, 482,
 486-488; mining 482-484, 489-500
 West Orange, N. J., Edison lab 552, 553
 West Point, N. Y. 200
 Westover, house, Va. 138, 140-141
 Whaling 307, 309, 311; museum 308
 Whipple House, Ipswich, Mass. 78, 79
 White House: Augusta, Ga. 138;
 Richmond, Va. 421; Wash., D. C.
 20-22, 252, 318
 White Plains, battle, N. Y. 199, 239
 Whitfield, Henry, house, Conn. 89
 Whitman: Marcus, and Narcissa 359,
 362, 365; Walt 398
 Whitney, Eli 396, 403
 Wichita Mts. Wildlife Refuge, Okla. 505

Wilderness, battle, Va. 462, 463
 Wilderness Road 19, 267, 269, 273, 275
 William and Mary College, Williams-
 burg, Va. 118-119, 122, 136
 William Henry, Fort, N. Y. 170, 174
 Williams, Roger 16, 72, 86
 Williamsburg, Va. 118, 120, 121-137
 Williamsport, Pa. 519
 Wills, David, home, Pa. 474
 Wilmington, Del. 102, 303
 Wilmington, N. C. 158
 Wilton, house, Va. 139, 143
 Winchester, Va. 435, 443
 Wingfield, Edward Maria 47-49
 Winston-Salem, N. C. 158, 166, 167
 Winter Quarters, Nebr. 363, 371
 Winthrop, John 70, 81, 117
 Witch House, Salem, Mass. 74
 Witchcraft, Salem, Mass. 72, 74-75
 Wolfe, James 175
 Woodlawn Plantation, Va. 246, 248
 Wormsloe, house, Ga. 168, 169
 Wounded Knee, battle, S. Dak. 514
 Wright, Orville, and Wilbur 564-565,
 567
 Wright's Tavern, Concord, Mass. 188,
 190, 192
 Wyck, house, Germantown, Pa. 213,
 219
 Wye Plantation, E. Shore, Md. 150, 153

Yadkin Valley, N. C. 266, 269
 Yale University, Conn. 118, 201
 Yamasee War 162
 Yellow Tavern, Georgetown, D. C. 251
 Yonkers, N. Y. 98, 100
 York, Pa. 214, 253
 Yorktown, battle, Va. 230, 232-235, 239
 Young, Brigham 370, 371, 372, 373
 Yukon country 543

Zoar, Ohio 287
 Zouaves 423, 427
 Zuni pueblo 343

FOR REFERENCE

The more than 800 issues of the *National Geographic Magazine* contain a wealth of information on America's historic landmarks. Check the Cumulative Index.

These National Geographic books will add meaning to your vacation trips:

AMERICA'S WONDERLANDS, The National Parks. 512 pages; 466 illustrations, 390 in full color. \$9.95 postpaid.

INDIANS OF THE AMERICAS. 432 pages; 392 illustrations, 262 in full color. \$7.50 postpaid.

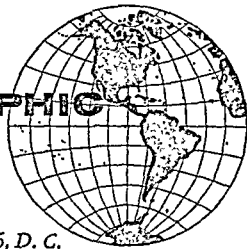
WILD ANIMALS OF NORTH AMERICA. 400 pages; 409 illustrations, 258 in full color. \$7.75 postpaid.

Order from National Geographic Society, Washington 6, D. C. Brochure on request.

NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC Society

16th & M Streets N.W.

Washington 6, D. C.



National
Geographic
Magazine

ORGANIZED IN 1893 FOR THE INCREASE AND DIFFUSION OF GEOGRAPHIC KNOWLEDGE

The National Geographic Society is chartered in Washington, D. C., in accordance with the laws of the United States, as a nonprofit scientific and educational organization for increasing and diffusing geographic knowledge and promoting research and exploration.

The Society has conducted more than 160 major expeditions and scientific projects. It disseminates knowledge to millions through its world-famous National Geographic Magazine, its 19 million color maps a year, its books, monographs, bulletins for schools, its information service for press, radio, and television.

MELVILLE BELL GROSVENOR, President and Editor
THOMAS W. MCKNEW, Executive Vice President and Secretary
ROBERT V. FLEMING, Vice President and Treasurer
MELVIN M. PAYNE, Vice President and Associate Secretary
FREDERICK G. VOSBURGH, Vice President
ROBERT E. DOYLE, Vice President and Associate Secretary
THOMAS M. BEERS, Associate Secretary

Committee for Research and Exploration

LEONARD CARMICHAEL, Chairman
LYMAN J. BRIGGS, Chairman Emeritus
Rear Adm. L. O. COLBERT
HUGH L. DRYDEN
A. REMINGTON KELLOGG
Director, U. S. National Museum
ALEXANDER WETMORE, Vice Chairman
Vice Adm. EMORY S. LAND
MATTHEW W. STIRLING, Research Associate
Smithsonian Institution
WILLIAM E. WRATHER, and the Senior Officers of the Society

Board of Trustees

GILBERT GROSVENOR, Chairman of the Board, formerly President, National Geographic Society, and Editor of its magazine (1899-1954)

ROBERT B. ANDERSON, Secretary of the Treasury, 1957-61

LYMAN J. BRIGGS, Director Emeritus, National Bureau of Standards

LEONARD CARMICHAEL, Secretary, Smithsonian Institution

L. O. COLBERT, Rear Admiral, U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, Retired

HUGH L. DRYDEN, Deputy Administrator, National Aeronautics & Space Administration

ROBERT V. FLEMING, Chairman of the Board, Riggs National Bank

CRAWFORD H. GREENEWALT, President, E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company

MELVILLE BELL GROSVENOR, Editor, National Geographic

ELISHA HANSON, General Counsel, National Geographic Society

EMORY S. LAND, Vice Admiral, U. S. Navy, Retired, formerly President, Air Transport Association

CURTIS E. LEMAY, Chief of Staff, U. S. Air Force

H. RANDOLPH MADDOX, Vice President, American Telephone & Telegraph Company (Ret.)

BENJAMIN M. MCKELWAY, Editor, the Washington Star President, Associated Press

THOMAS W. MCKNEW, Executive Vice President, National Geographic Society

WALTER K. MYERS, M.D., Physician

MELVIN M. PAYNE, Vice President, National Geographic Society

LAURANCE S. ROCKEFELLER, Chairman of the Board, Rockefeller Brothers, Inc., and President, Jackson Hole Preserve

JUAN T. TRIPPE, President, Pan American World Airways

EARL WARREN, Chief Justice of the United States

ALEXANDER WETMORE, Research Associate, Smithsonian Institution

LLOYD B. WILSON, Honorary Board Chairman, Chesapeake & Potomac Telephone Co.

CONRAD L. WIRTH, Director, National Park Service, U. S. Department of the Interior

WILLIAM E. WRATHER, Director, U. S. Geological Survey, Retired

Asst. Secretaries: VERNON H. BREWSTER, WM. T. BELL, HERBERT T. HENDERSON, C. VERNON SANDERS, CHARLES P. BIXEL, OWEN R. ANDERSON. Asst. Treasurers: HILLEARY F. HOSKINSON, WM. H. MCCAULEY. Assoc. Counsel: ARTHUR B. HANSON

Herman J. A. C. Arens, Executive Assistant, Leonard J. Grant, Editorial Assistant, and Gail H. Carroll, Secretary to the President and Editor; Lenore Williams, Secretary to the Executive Vice President; Sibyl Peck, Assistant to the Chairman of the Board.

MELVILLE BELL GROSVENOR, Editor

THOMAS W. MCKNEW, Executive Vice President

FREDERICK G. VOSBURGH, Associate Editor

EDITORIAL STAFF

Senior Assistant Editor: Franc Short
Assistant Editors: Robert L. Conly, Allan C. Fisher, Jr., John Scofield, Mason Sutherland
Senior Staff: Andrew H. Brown, Nathaniel T. Kenner, Luis Marden, Samuel W. Matthews, Kenneth F. Weaver, Paul A. Zahl (Natural Sciences)
Foreign Staff: W. Robert Moore (Chief); Thomas J. Abercrombie, David S. Boyer, Walter Meyers Edwards, Kip Ross, Howell Walker, Volkmar Wentzel
Editorial Staff: Jules B. Billard, Rowe Findley, William P. E. Graves, Gilbert M. Grosvenor, John R. Hoopes, Jay Johnston, Stuart E. Jones, Howard La Fay, Edward J. Linehan, Robert M. McClung, Bart McDowell, Carolyn Bennett Patterson, James A. Reynolds, Peter T. White, Rose T. MacBryde, Winifred M. Myers (Asst.); Dorothy M. Corson (Indexer); Rosalie K. Muller (Central Files)
Editorial Layout: Howard E. Paine
Book Service: Merle Severy (Chief); Wayne Barrett, Edwards Park
School Service: Ralph Gray (Chief); Liva Baker, Arthur P. Miller, Jr., Frank Sartwell
News Service: Windsor P. Booth (Chief); Lonnette Aikman, Edward Cornish, Matt C. McDade, Paul G. Sampson
Photography: Robert C. Ellis, Jr.
Editorial Research: Margaret G. Bledsoe (Chief); Ann Wendt (Asst.); Werner Janney, Levenia Loder, Patricia Middlemas, Patricia Rosenberg
Geographic Research: George Crossette (Chief); Newton V. Blakeslee (Asst.); Leon J. Canova, Joan C. Wells
Library: Esther Ann Manion (Librarian); Virginia Carter Hills (Asst.); Katharine P. O'Donnell

ILLUSTRATIONS STAFF

Illustrations Editor: Herbert S. Wilburn, Jr.
Art Editor: Andrew Poggenpohl
Ass. Illus. Editor: Robert L. Breeden, W. E. Garrett, Robert E. Gilka, Mary S. Griswold, Thomas R. Smith, Charles Allmon (Incoming Photographs)
Illustrations Staff: Lee E. Battaglia, Charlene L. Murphy, James R. Root, Arthur A. Tetry, Pictorial Research: Geraldine Linder, Caro Sillwell (Librarian)
Artists: Walter A. Weber (Naturalist), Peter V. Bianchi
Director of Photography: James M. Godbold; Joseph Baylor Roberts (Asst.)
Photographers: B. Anthony Stewart (Chief); Dean Conger, John E. Fletcher, Bates Littlehales, Thomas Nebbia, Robert F. Sisson
Photo Lab: Edwin L. Wisherd (Chief); Richard H. Stewart (Asst.); Milton A. Ford, Donald McBain, Carl M. Shrader, Guy W. Statling
Engraving & Printing: Dee J. Andella, Joe M. Bartlett, Frank S. Oliviero, William W. Smith

CARTOGRAPHIC STAFF

Chief Cartographer: James M. Darley. Assistant Chief Cartographers: Newman Bumstead, Ralph E. McAleer. Cartographers: John J. Brehm, Wellman Chamberlin, Richard Darley, Auhos D. Grazzini, Apphia Holdstock, Donald A. Jaeger, Victor J. Keller, William T. Peck, Charles L. Stern, Douglas A. Strobel, Catherine Hart (Asst.). Cartographic Artists: Irvin E. Allemen, Gilbert H. Emerson, John W. Lothers, Robert W. Nicholson, William Palmstrom

SECRETARY'S STAFF

Administrative: Thomas L. Hartman, M.D., Raymond T. McGilligott, Jr. Accounting: F. Charles Brown, George F. Fogle, Martha K. Allen. Cashier: Frank S. Delk. Statistician: Everett C. Brown. Costs: Sargent C. Elliott. Procurement: John P. M. Johnston. Payroll: Esther M. Lohrer, Marie S. Edwards. Membership Fulfillment: Roy J. Klockenbrink. Promotion: Stan Jennings, E. M. Pusey, Jr., Gordon Young. Accounts Records: Della M. Hurt

EUROPEAN OFFICE

W. E. Roscher (Director)
161-166 Fleet Street, London E.C.4, England

ADVERTISING

Director: John F. Connery; Regional Offices—New York: Harley L. McDevitt; Chicago: William Turgeon; San Francisco: Donald F. Mikkelsen; Los Angeles: Jack V. C.